John Adams Library,

IN THE CUSTODY OF THE
BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY.

SHELF Nº
ADAMS
250.4
V.4

Adams 250.7 v.7

The WORLD DISPLAYED;

OR, A

Curious Collection,

OF

Voyages AND Travels.

Selected and compiled from the

WRITERS of all NATIONS:

BY

Smart, Goldsmith, & Johnson.

FIRST AMERICAN EDITION,

Corrected & Enlarged,

IN EIGHT VOLUMES.

VOL. VII.

Philadelphia.

Published by Dobelbower, Key, and Simpson. 1796.

W. Harrison sen.r sculp.

ADAMS

THE

TRAVELS

OF

MR. MAXIMILIAN MISSON,

THROUGH

GERMANY AND ITALY.

Containing an account of the different cities at which he touched; with a deſcription of whatever was ſeen remarkable or curious, in thoſe countries.

HOLLAND being a low, flat country, like one continued meadow, we ſaw as we approached the ſhore, the pinnacles of the ſteeples, and the trees, which appeared as if riſing out of the water. The whole country is cut into canals and ditches, with incredible labour, without which the grounds would be ſo ſoaked with water as to render the country uninhabitable; but now, by the induſtry of its inhabitants, conſidering its extent, it is the richeſt and beſt peopled place in the world; ſome making the number of the inhabitants in the ſingle province of Holland amount to two millions five hundred thouſand, though others indeed reckon only two millions in all the ſeven provinces.

The cities of Holland are in general very neat and beautiful, their inhabitants ſparing no pains or coſt for that purpoſe, as appears by their conſtantly waſhing them, and having the inſides of their houſes curiouſly painted; their cleanlineſs extends even to their ſhops and ſtables, which are here kept neater than the beſt apartments in ſome countries; and their ſtreets are ſo clean, that the women are ſeen almoſt conſtantly waſhing them in their ſlippers, while the canals being on both ſides planted with trees, afford a delightful ſhady paſſage through all the chief ſtreets of the cities, and of ſome of the towns and villages *. [In the United Provinces, they reckon one city of the firſt rank, which is Amſterdam: about 20 of the ſecond, upwards of 30 of the third, and 800 villages.]

Their canals are very convenient for traveling, which is generally performed here in large boats, covered ſo as to afford ſhelter from all the injuries of the weather, and drawn by horſes, which ſet off and reach their journey's end exactly at certain hours.

Notwithſtanding all theſe advantages, their wines, and the greateſt part of their corn, are brought from foreign countries; and though they have always taken all poſſible precautions in repairing and ſtrengthening their dams, yet the impetuoſity of the ſea has formerly broke them down, and at different times coſt the lives of ſome millions of people; there were on the 17th of April 1429, a hundred thouſand perſons drowned near Dort; and in 1446, fifteen pariſhes in the village of Scheveling were overflowed; and ſo dreadful was the inundation, that the church, which is now cloſe by the ſea ſide, then ſtood in the middle of the place.

We were not a little ſurprized with the firſt view of Rotterdam, which affords the moſt agreeable proſ-

* Thoſe ſentences incloſed thus, are obſervations of Mr. Keyſler.

pect, from a mixture of trees, masts, and lofty houses, which at a distance, appear surprisingly beautiful. This city now challenges a place among those of the second rank, its port being large and commodious: the city itself is rich, populous, and pleasant; the store-houses for the navy, the town-house, and the bank, are beautiful structures, and the glass-house is famous for making abundance of little enamelled bowls, which are sold to prodigious profit to the savages in the Indies.

In this city, a brazen statue of Erasmus is fixed on a marble pedestal, surrounded with iron rails, in the place called the Great Bridge, and near it is a little house, where he was born on the 27th of October 1467, over the door of which is a latin distich. It is remarkable, that the first statue of Erasmus was made of wood, and erected in 1540, four years after his death; that this was changed in 1657, for one of stone, and this last afterwards changed for another of brass.

The ordinary passage-boat carried us in two hours to Delft, a city that holds the third rank in the assembly of the States of Holland. One of the principal curiosities shewn in this city, is the tomb of William prince of Orange, who was assassinated here by Balthazar Gerard in 1584. The arsenal, the town house, and the great hospital, with its gardens, are well worth being seen by a traveller.

The canal between this city and the Hague, is not above a league in length, and passes in sight of Reswick and Voerburgh, two pleasant villages, and is on both sides adorned with most delightful summer villas, fine walks and noble gardens.

The Hague, being without walls or gates, is reckoned among the villages, notwithstanding which as it enjoys the privilege of a city, so its grandeur and beauty seem to entitle it to that name. It is, besides, the residence of the stadholder, and of all the foreign ministers, and the place of the assembly

of the ſtates general. The great concourſe of foreigners of all ſorts renders the people here more obliging than in any other part of Holland. The air is very good; the wood near the town is extremely delightful, and there is a very fine walk from thence to the village of Scheveling near the ſea-ſide. This town, indeed, enjoys the moſt pleaſant ſituation of any place in Holland; for beſides the above wood which lies to the north, it has very fertile meadows to the ſouth, good arable lands to the eaſt, and the ſea to the weſt. The houſes of pleaſure about this place are alſo very beautiful. There is here ſhewn a chariot, furniſhed both with wheels and ſails, which is carried along by the wind upon the ſea-ſhore, which is both hard and level.

We here took a view, among other things, of the church of the village of Loſdun, famous for the baſons preſerved there in memory of the 365 children of the counteſs of Hennebergh, daughter of Florent IV. earl of Holland, who were ſaid to have been baptized in them. The ſtory told on this occaſion is, that the counteſs having reproached a beggar woman with having too many children, the poor wretch wiſhed her as many as there were days in the year, and this imprecation being fulfilled, the boys were all chriſtened by the name of John, and the girls by that of Elizabeth, and interred in the church of Loſdun, in which the whole hiſtory is painted at large, and the baſons fixed at each end of the picture. The truth of this ſtory, notwithſtanding its great improbability, is atteſted by Eraſmus, Vives, Guicciardine, and others*.

* It muſt here be conſidered, that they wrote in times of almoſt univerſal ignorance, when the credulity of the people knew no bounds, and abſurdity itſelf was a motive to inſpire belief. Truth began indeed to dawn; but its influence was too faint to baniſh prejudice entirely from the minds of even the learned.

From the Hague we proceeded to Leyden, a place not ſo much frequented by courtiers and officers, nor ſo much diſturbed with buſineſs and traffic, as the Hague and Rotterdam, but very delightful on account of the beauty and ſtillneſs of the place, where the people ſeem to enjoy one of the principal advantages of a country life in the midſt of a great city. Its chief trade conſiſts in the woollen manufactory; which together with the univerſity, that commonly contains about 1500 ſtudents, makes it one of the moſt conſiderable cities in Holland. In the anatomy hall are ſhewn many ſkeletons both of men and beaſts, abundance of plants, fruits, animals mummies, ancient arms, habits, coins, images, and pictures. In the gallery of the phyſic garden, and the adjoining cabinet we ſaw many natural curioſities, and a great number of animals, and inſects preſerved in phials with ſpirits of wine.

Before I take leave of Leyden, it is proper to obſerve that the Rhine is here loſt near its mouth, where moſt other rivers are the largeſt; for this river dividing itſelf into two branches, near Schenkerſchontz, one of them takes the name of Wakli, the other, a little above Arnheim, that of Yeſſel, and continuing its courſe about ſeven or eight leagues below that city as far as Duerſtadt, is there again ſubdivided into two other ſmall channels, the chief of which takes the name of the Leck, and the other rivulet turning more to the right, retains the name of the Rhine, till coming to Utrecht, it emits another branch, which, taking its courſe to the north, is known by the name of the Vecht; while the other, continuing its courſe by the name of the Rhine to Worden, at laſt loſes itſelf in two or three canals at Leyden. The cauſe of this ſingular circumſtance with reſpect to the Rhine is attributed to an earthquake, which throwing part of the downs into the mouth of the river, it has ever ſince been ſhut, and

the waters being driven back enlarged and deepened the channel of the Leck.

From hence to Harlem is five hours travelling by the paſſage boat, and the canal is all along lined with a great number of country ſeats and ſummer houſes.

Harlem is a large and pleaſant city, and from its agreeable ſituation by the ſide of a wood may challenge the preference to Leyden. Moſt of its canals are mixed with the little river Sparn. The city is chiefly famous for the linen manufacture, and that of tape, and for making conſiderable quantities of ſilk ſtuffs.

The great church which is the largeſt in all the ſeven provinces, and the town-houſe, are ſtately ſtructures.

This city claims the honour of giving birth to Lawrence Coſtar, ſaid to be the firſt inventor of printing, though Straſburgh and Mentz claim the ſame glory; the former for giving birth to John Guttenbergh, and the latter to Conrade and Arnold, two brothers, who are ſaid to have diſcovered that noble art, before Coſtar. The people of Harlem, however, keep in their town-houſe a book, which they ſay was the firſt ever printed, in a ſilver caſe, wrapped in ſilk; the keeping of which is committed to the care of ſeveral of the magiſtrates; the ſtatue of Lawrence Coſtar is erected in the ſame place, and over the door of the houſe where Coſtar lived is a Latin inſcription in gold letters.

Amſterdam is remarkable for its being built upon piles, and for its great trade. Its principal buildings are the town-houſe, and the exchange.*

We paſſed ſeven hours very pleaſantly upon the canal between Amſterdam and Utrecht; but no ſooner reached this laſt city, than we found it fell ſhort of

* See a particular deſcription of this city, and of the manners of the Dutch, in Mr. Hanway's travels.

that extreme neatneſs obſervable in the province of Holland, and yet it retains a ſufficient ſhare of it too.

This city is famous for its antiquity, its univerſity, and the union of the Seven Provinces concluded there in 1579, which was the foundation of the whole republic. The ſteeple of the cathedral is very high, and the church contains many relics much valued by the Roman Catholics. The mall and the walks about it without the gates of the city, are extremely pleaſant.

I was told by a gentleman of Utrecht, that there were no leſs than forty-eight towns within a day's journey of this city, and among them thirty three to which a perſon might go and come back the ſame day. The adjacent country make a quite different appearance from that of Holland, the fields being for the moſt part ploughed lands, incloſed with hedges.

Having proceeded two hours from Utrecht, we paſſed in ſight of Zeiſt, and of the caſtle, which we left on our right hand. It is a very fine ſtructure built by one of the richeſt noblemen of this country. It is incloſed with a ditch full of running water, and adorned with gardens, in which are ſtatues, fountains, labyrinths, and other ornaments. The fields between Rhenen and Arnheim are for the moſt part planted with tobacco, which is propped up by ſtakes; and at Rhincom, a village three hours on this ſide Rhenen, is a ſtone which is the boundary between the lordſhip of Utrecht and the province of Guelders.

Proceeding two hours and a half beyond Arnheim, which has nothing remarkable but its fortifications, we paſſed the Yſſel, and afterwards continuing our journey through Doeſburgh, a ſmall city on that river, in the province of Zutphen, we dined in a poor village on milk and biſcuit; but the worſt was, that our feaſt was no better at night, when

we lodged at Yſſelburgh, a ſmall diſmantled town upon the borders of Cleves.

Between this laſt place and Weſel, the country is ſandy and full of woods. The fortifications of this laſt city are but indifferent, but the inhabitants were then employed in erecting a citadel, upon the bank of the Rhine. The Calviniſts have here two churches the Lutherans and the Roman Catholics have each of them one, and the Jews have alſo a ſynagogue.

At a ſmall diſtance from Weſel, we paſſed the river Lippe, which here runs into the Rhine, and before night we arrived at Duiſburgh, a city of about the ſame bigneſs as Weſel, but without any fortifications. It has, however, an univerſity, but no great concourſe of ſcholars. Though the great church belongs to the Proteſtants, the Roman Catholics enjoy the free exerciſe of their religion, and have even the liberty of carrying the hoſt in public proceſſions, but they avoid doing it for fear of making any diſturbance. Not above half a league from Duiſburgh we entered the country of Berg, and two hours after paſſed through the little city of Keyſerwaert, which is well fortified and ſeated upon the Rhine. Hence we continued our journey to Duſſeldorp, the reſidence of the electoral prince Palatine, which is much larger and better peopled than Duiſburgh; its fortifications are in a very good ſtate.

The city of Cologne affords a very agreeable proſpect at a diſtance, and being ſituated in a plain and level country, the vaſt number of its ſteeples make a fine appearance. Though it is of a prodigious extent, it is ſurrounded with a wall, towers baſtions, and a dry ditch. It has twenty-four gates, eleven to the land and eleven on the Rhine. It is an imperial city governed by its own magiſtrates, though the archbiſhop, who is elector of Cologne, has ſome ſhare both in the civil and criminal juriſdiction, and the prerogative of pardoning criminals. The Chapter

of Cologne is compoſed of ſixty canons, who muſt be princes or counts, and twenty-four of the eldeſt of theſe are ſtiled capitularies. According to the golden bull, the electors of Cologne ought to crown the emperor, but theſe archbiſhops not being always prieſts, thoſe of Mentz performed this office in their ſtead, and have ever ſince claimed it as their right.

In this city there are a conſiderable number of Proteſtants, who have a church at no great diſtance, in the territories of the duke of Newburgh.

The town-houſe is a vaſt Gothic edifice, in which are ſhewn entire rooms filled with bows, arrows, croſs-bows, bucklers, and other antique arms. One of theſe croſs-bows is made of whale-bone, and is 12 feet long, 8 inches broad, and 4 inches thick. From the tower of this building there is a very fine proſpect of the whole city and the adjacent country. That part of the town which lies oppoſite the city on the other ſide of the Rhine is inhabited by the Jews, and belongs to the territories of Newburgh.

Part of the cathedral is ſo fine, that it is a thouſand pities it is not finiſhed in the ſame taſte. Here lies intombed, as is pretended, the three kings of the Eaſt who came to worſhip our Saviour, their remains being removed hither from Milan in 1162, when Frederic Barbaroſſa laid waſte that city. They here report abundance of miracles wrought by them, and amongſt the reſt, that there being a great drought in Hungary, many people came from thence to implore the aſſiſtance of theſe three kings, who are ſaid to have promiſed them rain; which following ſoon after in great plenty, a body of the Hungarians, in remembrance of this miracle, come every ſeven years in pilgrimage to Cologne, where they are entertained by the magiſtrates for a fortnight, in a handſome houſe built for that purpoſe.

In the church of St. Urſula are ſhewn the tombs of the 11,000 virgins* maſſacred by the Huns at

* This idol ſtory of St. Urſula and 11,000 virgins has been fully refuted by the Archbiſhop Uſher, and even by learned men of the

Cologne, in the year 238, with that of the ſaint to whoſe memory the church is dedicated. It is here pretended that the earth will not receive any other corpſe, as a confirmation of which they ſhew the tomb of the daughter of a certain duke of Brabant, who being interred there, raiſed herſelf up, and remained ſuſpended in the air, which obliged them to put her into this tomb, which is fixed upon iron ſupporters, two or three feet from the ground againſt one of the pillars of the church. In a large chapel on one ſide of the ſame church are to be ſeen the bones of theſe 11,000 ſaints hung up in as decent a manner, as the ſwords and piſtols are ranged in the guard-chamber at St. James's, or in any other armoury. None of theſe bones have any ornaments except the heads, ſome of which have ſilver caſes, others are covered with ſtuffs of gold, and ſome have bonnets or caſes of cloth of gold, velvet, rich ſilks, &c. Hence the city of Cologne aſſumes the title of Cologne the holy.

In the church of the Maccabees is a crucifix which is ſuppoſed to have a miraculous periwig, for though each of the Hungarian pilgrims at their coming to Cologne cut off a lock of hair, it is ſtill undiminiſhed.

The entrance of the church of the twelve Apoſtles is chiefly remarkable for the ſtory it repreſents: they here relate that a burgomaſter's wife of this city, being buried in this church in 1571 with a ring of great

church of Rome, who all agree, that it is founded on a miſtake with relation to the ancient manner of ſetting down the names and titles of theſe ſaints, which are ſometimes expreſſed in Roman capitals, in this manner, XI. M. V. which are explained by ſome eleven Virgin Martyrs, inſtead of eleven thouſand Virgins. Others, among whom is the learned Archbiſhop Uſher, believe that St. Urſula's companion was named Undecimilla, and that her name was miſtaken for Undecim Millia or eleven thouſand, a conjecture which is ſupported by an ancient miſſal in the Sorbonne, where the feaſts of St. Urſula, patronneſs of the Sorbonne, is expreſſed in this manner, Feſtum S.S. Urſula Undecimillæ & ſociarum Virginum & Martyrum.

value on her finger, the ſexton, reſolving to ſteal the ring, paid a viſit to the grave, but was ſo greatly frightened when he found the ſuppoſed deceaſed lady graſp him by the hand, that he made a precipitate retreat. The lady however, got out of the ſepulchre, and returning home, knocked at the door, and calling to a ſervant, told him the whole adventure; but the fellow taking her for a ghoſt, ran in a great fright to his maſter, and informed him of what had happened. When the gentleman immediately cried, that he would as ſoon believe his horſes were in the garret. Theſe words were no ſooner uttered but a great noiſe being heard in the garret, the ſervant ran up, and to his great amazement found ſix coach-horſes there. By this time the lady had made a ſhift to get in, and by the care of her ſervants was ſoon ſo well recovered, that there was no great appearance of her returning to the grave for that time, and the next day the horſes were let down out of the garret by certain machines prepared for that purpoſe. To this day there are ſhewn in the ſame garret, ſeveral wooden horſes, ſaid to be covered with the ſkins of thoſe that were ſeen there; and in the church of the twelve Apoſtles, is a large piece of linen cloth ſpun by the lady after her being releaſed from the grave, which ſhe ſurvived ſeven years. We find ſome authentic teſtimonies of the truth of this memorable ſtory; but in theſe no notice is taken of the horſes, as being an evident, and very abſurd fiction, invited to heighten the wonder.

The roads between Cologne and Mentz being extremely bad, we choſe to embark upon the Rhine, when the firſt town we came to was Bonn, where the elector of Cologne has a palace. From thence we proceeded to Coblentz, which is agreeably ſituated upon a neck of land made by the Moſelle, where it joins its current with the Rhine. The caſtle of Ebrenbreitſtein, that is, the rock of honour, is built over againſt it upon a riſing ground on the other ſide

of a river, and is very ſtrong both by art and nature. The palace where the elector of Cologne commonly reſides is at the foot of the hill, upon the very bank of the Rhine, juſt under the caſtle.

Soon after, we were obliged by a furious tempeſt to ſeek for ſhelter on ſhore. In our way we paſſed by an old ruined caſtle, or ſquare tower, ſituated on a little iſland on the Rhine, and known by the name of the Tower of Rats; whither it is pretended, that a certain archbiſhop of Mentz made his retreat to avoid thoſe vermin, which followed him thither, and at laſt devoured him; but the old chronicles mention different names and times when this event happened. The ſtory is generally believed by the inhabitants of the adjacent countries, who alledge, in behalf of their opinion, ſeveral hiſtories of the like nature.

From Bonn as far as Binghen, the Rhine runs through the mountains. At the foot of which we ſaw the country on both ſides covered with vineyards, interſperſed with a great number of ſmall towns, large villages, and caſtles, of the laſt of which I counted 40 ſince my leaving Cologne, moſtly built upon the aſcents of the mountains, and ſome on the very points of the rocks. The country people in theſe parts, particularly the women, appear in a very odd dreſs, wearing on their heads little caps of coloured ſtuff, bordered with an edging of a different colour, their hair hanging in treſſes quite down their backs; their waiſts appear very ſhort; half a foot below which they gird themſelves with a broad leather girdle, and underneath is a thick roll, which bears up the petticoats, almoſt as high as the knees.

From Binghen to Mentz the Rhine is very broad. Here we went over a bridge of boats, and as ſoon as we entered the city, the electoral palace preſented itſelf to our view. This fabric is of a reddiſh ſtone, embelliſhed with ſeveral ornaments, and though it is built after the Gothic taſte, it wants neither re-

gularity nor magnificence. We were told that in the middle of the citadel were to be ſeen the ruins of a tower, commonly called, the Tomb of Druſus. It is true, Druſus Germanicus, the brother of Tiberius, died in Germany, but not near the Rhine, and he was buried in the Campo Martio at Rome; ſo that in all likelihood this was one of the ſtatues or triumphal arches erected to his memory near the banks of the Rhine, after the ſenate had beſtowed on him the ſurname of Germanicus.

The church ornaments in which the elector ſays maſs are remarkable for their grandeur; and the canopy under which the hoſt is carried in proceſſion upon certain feſtivals, is covered with pearls. All the electors of Mentz bear the arms of their own family, but quarter gules a wheel argent, which are the arms of the electorate. The original of which they deduce from the firſt elector's being the ſon of a wheelwright. In the cathedral there are many magnificent tombs of the electors who have been interred there. The chapter conſiſts of 42 gentlemen, 24 of which are capitularies. The elector of Mentz is the firſt among the eccleſiaſtical electors; he is alſo chancellor of the empire, and dean of the electoral college, in right of which he preſides in the diets, and at imperial elections. The proteſtants are allowed to dwell at Mentz; but are not permitted the exerciſe of their religion. The city is ſufficiently large, but indifferently peopled, and the univerſity is at preſent in no great eſteem. The city is however, ſituated in a very pleaſant country.

After having croſſed the Rhine at Mentz, we embarked in the ordinary paſſage-boat on the river Maine, which carried us in one day to Francfort, a city that greatly exceeds Mentz in its ſize, beauty, riches, number of its inhabitants, and ſtrength; it being fortified with eleven baſtions, which, though they have ſome defects, yet theſe are compenſated by its ſituation in a flat country. The houſes are gene-

rally built of red ſtone, or elſe of wood and plaſter covered with ſlates. The Maine a conſiderable large river, leaves it on the right, and a ſtone bridge of 400 paces in length joins it to Sakerhauſen. The territories of this city are of no great extent. The ſenate as well as moſt of the inhabitants, are Lutherans; and yet the Roman Catholics poſſeſs the cathedral, where the ceremony of anointing the emperor is performed. They are, however, not allowed to make any public proceſſion. The Calviniſts, who live in the city have a church at Bochenheim, a ſmall hour's walk from thence in the country of Hanaw. But they are obliged to marry and chriſten their children in the Lutheran churches.

In the town houſe is the apartment where the ſolemnity of the election is performed, and where is preſerved one of the originals of the Golden Bull. This apartment is hung with tapeſtry, but furniſhed with only ſome elbow chairs of black velvet, and a large table covered with a green carpet. On one ſide of it is a hall, in which certain ceremonies are performed immediately after the election, which being over the emperor proceeds from thence to the church where he is crowned. The Golden Bull is a thin quarto volume of 24 leaves of parchment ſtitched together, and covered with a piece of vellum, without any other ornament. The ſeal which is about two inches and a half broad, and covered with gold, is faſtened to it by a ſtring of twiſted ſilk of ſeveral colours; and upon this ſeal are the effigies of the emperor Charles IV. ſeated and crowned with a ſceptre in his right hand, and a globe in his left, having the ſhield of the empire on his right, and that of Bohemia on his left; and on the reverſe, Rome is repreſented by the gate of a caſtle between two towers.

At Francfort there are abundance of Jews, who are not ſo rich as thoſe of Amſterdam: their chief employment is to go from one end to the other, to

ſell their commodities to foreigners: and when a fire happens to break out in the city, they are obliged to fetch water to extinguiſh it. The three annual fairs of Francfort contribute not a little to its fame and riches. As we were taking coach to leave that city, we obſerved the coachman put ſome ſalt upon each of his horſes, which he gravely told us was an infallible preſervative againſt witchcraft, and other unlucky accidents. Having paſſed the Rhine at Gernſheim, we entered a wood, where the roads proved very bad; but afterwards, for two leagues, they were extremely good till we came to Worms.

The city of Worms is ſeated about three or four hundred paces from the Rhine in a moſt fruitful country; but has no other fortifications than a double wall. It is not inferior in bigneſs to Francfort, but is poor and ill peopled. It was formerly an arch-biſhoprick, till the ſee was removed by pope Zachary; but it ſtill remains a biſhop's ſee, and its prelate has great authority there, notwithſtanding its being an Imperial city. There are ſo many void ſpaces within the compaſs of the place, that the vines planted there are computed to produce annually 1500 fuders of wine; a fuder being a caſk that holds no leſs than 250 Engliſh gallons. This wine is ſo highly eſteemed in theſe parts, that they ſay it is ſweeter than the virgin's milk, and it is cuſtomary to preſent it to perſons of diſtinction who travel that way, together with ſome fiſh, &c.

The Lutherans have here one church for their own uſe, and they preach by turns with the Romaniſts in the Dominican church: but all the reſt are in the poſſeſſion of the Roman Catholics, who do not here carry the hoſt in public, nor make any proceſſion, except on the day after Eaſter. The Calviniſts have a church at Newhauſel in the Palatinate, which is about half a league from Worms,

where the Lutherans ſometimes chriſten their children.

St. Paul's church, as well as that of St. John, are very ancient ſtructures, the beſt of the two being built of vaſt ſquare ſtones in a very irregular manner, with narrow windows, and galleries all round the outſide juſt under the roof. The walls are twelve feet thick, and ſeem as if they were originally deſigned for a fortreſs.

The cathedral, which is both very long and lofty, has a tower at each of the four corners. It is a very ſtrong edifice, built in the Gothic taſte. Over one of theſe doors is ſhewn the figure of a ſtrange animal, of the bigneſs of an aſs, with four heads; one the head of a man, the ſecond of an ox, the third of an eagle, and the fourth of a lion: the right foot is alſo that of a man, the left that of an ox, and the two hinder feet reſemble thoſe of an eagle and a lion: upon the back of this figure ſits a woman. The people here tell very odd ſtories relating to it; but we may ſuppoſe it to be an hieroglyphic compoſed of the four beaſts in the viſion of Ezekiel, and the woman deſigned to repreſent the goſpel. Over the altar of one of the chapels of the ſame church, is a picture in which the virgin receives Chriſt as he is deſcending from the croſs, while the angels carry the inſtruments of his crucifixion to Heaven.

At the entrance of St. Martin's church, juſt over a moveable altar, is a picture, which, from the oddneſs of the conceit, deſerves the notice of a traveller. It is above five feet ſquare, and at one of the corners on the top, is repreſented God the father, who ſeems to addreſs himſelf to the Virgin Mary, who is placed on her knees in the midſt of the picture, holding the infant Jeſus by the feet, and putting his head into the hopper of a mill, which is turned by the twelve apoſtles by the help of a wheel, aſſiſted by the four beaſts of Ezekiel, who give a helping hand

on the other ſide: hard by, the pope is painted upon his knees: receiving the hoſts which fall ready made from the mill into a golden chalice, one of which he preſents to a cardinal, who gives it to a biſhop, the biſhop to the prieſt, and the prieſt to a layman.

There are in this city two public edifices, one intended for the ſenate, where they meet twice a week upon matters of ſtate, and the other for the courts of juſtice. In the firſt of theſe Luther made his ſolemn appeal, in relation to which the people here ſay, that the doctor being much heated with the eagerneſs of the diſpute, and alſo by a fire that was near him, he deſired a glaſs of wine, which being brought, he forgot to drink it; but being ſtill eager in purſuing his diſcourſe, ſet it down upon a bench, when it ſoon after broke without being touched by any body, whence it currently paſſed, that ſome poiſon was mixed with the wine, of which the Lutherans were ſo fully perſuaded, that they broke the bench on which the glaſs ſtood into ſhivers, and kept ſome pieces of it, which are ſtill preſerved in memory of Luther's deliverance.

Proceeding on our journey, we arrived at Manheim, which is ſubject to the elector palatine, and enjoys conſiderable advantages from its ſituation in a flat country, and its being almoſt incloſed by the Neckar and the Rhine. The moſt remarkable place in this city is the temple of Concord, founded by the elector Charles Lewis, who being a perſon of great candour and moderation in matters of religion, ordered that the Lutherans and Calviniſts ſhould, by turns, exerciſe divine worſhip in this church; and the preſent elector palatine, being a Roman Catholic, has thought fit to join the Romaniſts with the others, whence the miniſters of the three different religions perform each in their turn divine ſervice in the ſame church; and every third Sunday, each of the three miniſters has the privilege of be-

ginning firſt. The Roman Catholics, after they have ſaid maſs, draw a curtain before the altar, by which means it is concealed from the view of the Proteſtants. The church, though not very large, is exceeding neat. The ſtreets are very ſtraight and regular, and ſome of them planted with trees, as in Holland.

After having paſſed the Neckar at Manheim, over a bridge of boats, we travelled for three hours, in a fertile plain extending to the foot of the mountains of Heidelburg, which, by a continued ridge, ſeemed to intercept our paſſage; but the Neckar, paſſing through an opening, ſhewed us the direct way to Heidelburg, by a covered bridge, which brought us to the other ſide, where that city is pleaſantly ſituated among the trees and rocks; but the city is neither fine nor well built, moſt of the houſes being of wood. The electoral palace is, however, formed of hewn ſtone, and there are ſeveral fine gardens among the rocks. One of the moſt ſingular things to be ſeen in this city is the famous tun or Heidelburg, which is thirty-one feet long, and twenty one high to the top, to which there is an aſcent by a pair of ſtairs of fifty ſteps, to a kind of platform or balcony of twenty feet long, incloſed with rails. The elector's arms are placed on the front of the tun, with ſatyrs and drunkards; vines, grapes, glaſſes, and leathern jacks in baſſo relievo.

The great church of this city contains many magnificent tombs of the counts palatine, and among the reſt that of Robert, king of the Romans, the founder of the univerſity of Heidelburg.

On our leaving Heidelburg, we met with nothing but foreſts of fir-trees; the country was, however, ſo fertile, and money ſo ſcarce, that about Wiſeloth and Sirtzheim, a wheaten loaf of eight pounds might be bought for two pence; but in a journey of four days we did not ſee any conſiderable towns; the beſt of them were Winſheim, an imperial city, and

Wimphen, both of which are inhabited by Lutherans. It is not ſurprizing, that drinking ſhould be ſo common in this country, conſidering the temptations they lie under from the exceſſive cheapneſs of wine; for four large pots of wine may be bought for a penny; and if a paſſenger aſks for a cup of this liquor, they bring a large jack, ſcarce knowing what a ſmall meaſure is.

In travelling from the mountainous country into the plains that lead to Nuremburg, tobacco and hops by degrees ſucceed the vineyards. We had a fine proſpect of this beautiful city a conſiderable diſtance, while we were travelling along the banks of the river Pegnitz, which runs from it; but only ſerves to turn ſome mills, though it might be made navigable, and conſequently greatly increaſe the grandeur of this city.

Nuremburg, a place of conſiderable trade, is well peopled, and is laid to be twice as large as Francfort upon the Maine. It contains under its juriſdiction four other cities, and 480 boroughs and villages. It has ſix gates, 128 large ſtreets, [400 lanes, and is adorned with twelve large and 133 ſmaller fountains. In this city are alſo ſixteen churches, 44 religious houſes, twelve bridges, ten market places, 365 towers on the city walls, and about 21,000 houſes.] It is, indeed, a very handſome city, its houſes being generally very lofty, built of hewn ſtone, and adorned with pictures on the outſide. It has, beſides, many fine braſs fountains, one of which we ſaw at the artificer's houſe, the ſtatues of which alone coſt 70,000 crowns. The ſtreets are broad, clean and well paved, but not ſtraight. The caſtle is ſeated on a high rock, though all the reſt of the city is on a flat. In one of the halls of this caſtle are to be ſeen four Corinthian pillars forty-five feet high, which it is pretended were brought from Rome by the devil, upon a challenge made him by a monk.

The ornaments uſed at the anointing of the emperors are preſerved in the church of the hoſpital, among which is the diadem of Charlemagne, termed the inſula, which is of pure gold, weighing fourteen pounds, and is covered with precious ſtones. It is not cloſed on the top, as the imperial crowns are generally repreſented. The ſceptre and globe are of gold, and the ſword is ſaid to have been brought from heaven. The robe of Charlemagne is of a violet colour, adorned with pearls, and the imperial cloak is edged with them, ſcattered over with eagles of gold, and a great number of precious ſtones. Here are alſo the cope, the ſtole, and the breeches adorned with jewels, the ſtockings and the buſkins covered with plates of gold.

Among ſeveral other relics, they keep in the church of the hoſpital the iron head of St Longinus's lance; and as they are ſenſible that it is ſhewn in above ten other places, they maintain that all thoſe are counterfeits, and that their's was found by St. Andrew, and brought from Antioch to this city; they have the bulls of five popes to vouch for its authenticity.

The arſenal here is one of the moſt famous in Germany. In the two great halls, each of which is 250 paces long, we ſaw 300 pieces of cannon, and among them many of a very large bore, the biggeſt of which carries a ball of 300 pounds; but moſt of theſe arms, being of greater antiquity than uſe, ſerve only for ſhew.

The public library is in a cloyſter which formerly belonged to the Dominicans, and is ſaid to contain 20,000 volumes; the moſt ancient manuſcript is nine hundred years old, which is a copy of the Goſpels, with the prayers and hymns uſed in the Greek church.

The town houſe is a ſpacious fabric, with a beautiful and well proportioned front, but has no court before it.

From hence we were carried to the public cellar, which is 250 paces long, and is ſaid to contain 20,000 auns, or middle-ſized tuns of wine, a proviſion of which the Germans always take extraordinary care; for it muſt be confeſſed, that the Germans though the moſt civil and obliging people in the world, are exceſſive drinkers. You ſcarce enter a houſe, but before you can ſpeak three words a ſavoury collation is preſented before you, with large veſſels of wine. To refuſe a health, or to leave a drop in your glaſs, are capital faults, by which means it never ſtands ſtill, which made the duke of Rohan ſay pleaſantly of the Germans, that they had found out in their cups the perpetual motion, which had puzzled all the mathematicians in the world. Hence glaſſes of all ſizes are ranged in order in their beſt apartments, and make a part of their ornamental furniture.

In the evening we had the opportunity of ſeeing the ceremony of marriage performed; the bridegroom attended by his relations and friends, walked from a houſe to the church, which was about 200 paces diſtant, and was ſoon after followed by his bride, who came with her friends from the ſame houſe. On their entering the church the bridegroom ſat down with his relations on one ſide, and the bride on the other oppoſite to him, and over each of their heads againſt the wall was painted the figure of death. From thence they both walked up to the miniſter, who ſtood in the midſt of the choir, and he had no ſooner performed the ceremony, than four or five trumpets ſounded from the top of the ſteeple. Upon this the new married couple returned in the ſame manner to the place from whence they came.

The bridegroom appeared all in black, with a cloak trimmed with lace, with a large ruff, and a little crown of gold plate lace upon his periwig. But the bride's dreſs is not ſo eaſily deſcribed: the beſt way to form an idea of it is, to fancy a head-

tire compoſed of gilt-wire like a bob periwig half a foot higher than the forehead, and frizzled out on the ſides; theſe threads or wires are ſo cloſe together, that there is no more diſtance between them, than is juſt ſufficient to faſten to them an infinite number of very ſmall thin round plates of gold, which hanging both within and without, waved with the leaſt motion. Her habit was a kind of black veſt, with long ſkirts, but the body was very ſhort, and had the ſeams covered with gold lace, as the ſkirts were with ſmall knots of black ſattin ribband. She had ſtraight ſleeves and cuffs, that reached down below her wriſts. Over this ſhe wore a handkerchief of very fine lace, ſhaped before like a man's band, but reaching down to the middle of her back, ended in a point. She had alſo a gold chain about her ſhoulders, and another about her waiſt inſtead of a girdle. The petticoat was pretty ſhort, and trimmed towards the bottom with gold fringe, and black bone-lace. We ſaw this bride dance at the wedding with one of the ſenators in a great ruff. Indeed, the cuſtoms I obſerved at this feaſt were ſo very different from any I had ſeen before, that I rather fancied myſelf in China, than in Europe.

Nuremburg can boaſt of better artiſans, and that in greater numbers, than perhaps any city in Europe, particularly the curious works made here in wood, ivory, alabaſter, and even of paper and ſtarch, are famous over all Europe. Their houſes are within neat and ſpacious, and I did not ſee one ceiling in all the city, but what was adorned with ſome curious joiner's work. They have here ſuch a peculiar reſpect for horns, that with theſe they adorn even their beſt apartments and chambers.

All the way between Heidelburg and Nuremburg we had met with very poor entertainment, but now the inns of Nuremburg made us ample amends; where, among other things, we had every day plenty of very good fiſh, and a deſſert of fruit at reaſonable

rates. [The Roman Catholics are allowed the public exercise of their religion in the German house, or factory, where they maintain a priest and two chaplains, who are always regulars. The rest of the inhabitants of Nuremburg are Lutherans.]

The Jews are obliged to live in a village near the city, from whence they have the liberty of coming daily into the town on paying a small piece of money, but they are obliged to return before night.

The roads from Nuremburg were very bad and woody till we came towards Ingolstadt, where we met with a well cultivated champaign country. Ingolstadt is under the jurisdiction of the elector of Bavaria, and is pleasantly situated upon the Danube. It is of an indifferent size and strength, with broad, straight and well-paved streets; but is poor and ill peopled. The houses are mostly painted white on the outside. They told us wonders of their arsenal; but as they were very unwilling to shew it, I supposed its fame was greater than it deserved, as things of this nature are seldom kept from the view of strangers unless not worth their seeing.

From Ingolstadt we travelled to Newburg, a small city of no great strength, seated on the right side of the Danube, where that river begins to be pretty broad and rapid; we passed it over a bridge, that brought us into the city, where, at our first entrance, we took a view of the castle, which is built on a rock, and the apartments, especially those on the ground floor, are very handsome and convenient; but all the furniture had been lately removed to the castle of Heidelburg, and there only remained a cabinet full of pictures, and other curiosities.

The Jesuits church is the handsomest in this city, though that of St. Peter has lately become famous by a pretended miracle, which happened to Mark de Avilano, a Capuchin, who coming some years ago to Newburg, and perceiving an old wooden image of the Virgin Mary in one corner of St. Peter's church,

all covered with duſt, proſtrated himſelf before it; and while he was offering his fervent prayers, ſuddently cried out A Miracle! proteſting that the good lady had lifted up her eyes towards him. This ſtory, backed by the reputation of the father, ſoon obtained ſuch univerſal credit among the inhabitants, that they went in proceſſion to St. Peter's church, took the ſtatue, and having cleaned and dreſſed it in a ſumptuous habit, placed it on the high altar; where it is viſited by a great number of pilgrims from all parts, and is well known by the title of our lady of Newburg.

The country between Newburg and Augſburg we found very fruitful and pleaſant, till we came near the laſt city, where the grounds are boggy and barren. The Augſburgers, however, boaſt their city is the handſomeſt in all Germany, and that in ſize it exceeds Nuremburg itſelf, though they acknowledge it is not ſo well peopled: but though their ſtreets are broader and ſtraighter, their houſes are not near ſo handſome, few of them being built of hewn ſtone: for they are generally only plaſtered over, and whitened without; but ſome of the walls are adorned with pictures. However, the floors of their apartments are, for the moſt part, paved with a kind of yellow marble, brought thither from Tirol; and their ceilings are either of curious joiner's work divided into compartments, or of a well poliſhed cement that is very durable. The greateſt defect in their buildings is their chambers being of no regular figure; for the ſtairs which lead to them are ſo ill-contrived, as to take away all their uniformity.

Augſburg is the metropolis of Swabia, and though Auguſtus ſent a colony thither, it was ſo often pillaged, eſpecially by Attila, that there are ſcarce any remains of antiquity to be found there. However, there has been lately dug up a pillar of five or ſix feet high, with the figure of a pine-apple on the top; and ſeveral medals of Auguſtus have been

found, with such a pillar on the reverse. This pillar was probably intended to point out the boundary of the empire on that side, it being a constant custom among the Romans to distinguish the limits of a new conquered country by some distinguishing mark peculiar to that country; and the pine-apple was probably chosen for this pillar, because this part of Germany abounds in fir and pine-trees; and it is perhaps for this reason, that Augsburg bears the pine-apple in its arms.

Though the fortifications of Augsburg are not very considerable, the inhabitants have endured several sieges with much bravery. The senate is composed of half Lutherans and half Roman Catholics; and the bishop, who has a palace in the city, has also a considerable sway, and is master of the greatest part of the territories belonging to it. The Roman Catholics make public processions here, and carry the host through the streets, which the Lutherns salute by pulling off their hats; for they live in a good correspondence with each other, and avoid all opportunities of giving offence: indeed, so great is the harmony that subsists between them, that the poor of both religions are maintained in one common hospital. The Jews are, however, confined to a separate place, and for every hour they stay in the city, are obliged to pay a florin, which amounts to three of our shillings.

The town-house is a lofty and spacious square edifice of very fine hewn stone: the portal is of marble and almost all the rooms wainscoted and ceiled with Polish ash, which makes a fine appearance. The great hall is a very noble room, it being 110 feet long, 58 broad, and 52 high, and is finely paved with jasper. The walls, according to the German custom, are adorned with paintings, intermixed with emblems and devices relating to the government; but the roof exceeds all the rest for its singular beauty, it being composed of regular compartments,

beautified with curious pictures and other ornaments, the ſquares and pannels of which are enriched with ſculptures finely gilt.

The arſenal is alſo a very large ſtructure. The two halls are full of cannon, moſt of which are of braſs; but among the reſt there is a culverin, which is a ſix-pounder, made of leather, and twenty-ſix feet long. The other arms are kept above ſtairs. During the wars of the laſt century, the Augſburgers uſed frequently to keep their gates ſhut for fear of a ſurprize; but at laſt they contrived, for the conveniency of admitting ſtrangers and others without danger into the city, a ſecret gate which ſtill remains with all its locks and engines: the deſign of which is very nicely and well contrived.

Augſburg was once a city of great trade, when all the merchandize from the Levant was landed at Venice, and, by the way of Augſburg, diſperſed through Germany.

In the biſhop's palace is ſhewn the apartment where the confeſſion of Augſburg was preſented to the emperor Charles V. in 1540 by Luther and Melancton. The cathedral here has a gate of braſs, over which are repreſented ſeveral paſſages of the holy ſcriptures in baſſo relievo; one of them is the hiſtory of the creation, in which the Virgin Mary is repreſented framing Eve out of one of Adam's ribs.

The artiſans of Augſburg are not at all inferior to thoſe of Nuremburg, and even excel them in clocks, goldſmith's work, and ivory turning. We were here ſhewn ſeveral clocks valued at 15 or 20,000 crowns each; but the worſt is, they are ſo very nice as not to be durable. Their ivory work is no leſs admirable, and among the reſt contain well ſhaped cups with a ring made of the ſame piece, which plays between the foot and bowl of the cup without a poſſibility of coming off. Theſe are ſo nicely made in miniature that they incloſe 100 of them with their rings in a pepper corn of an ordinary ſize. Some of

theſe I purchaſed. Upon examination, the traces of the tool with which they were turned are viſible, They have other curious baubles, as fleas faſtened about their necks with ſteel chains, ſo finely wrought that though they are a ſpan long, a flea will lift up the chain when it leaps; one of theſe fleas with this curious chain, they ſell for ten-pence.

The ſingularity and variety of habits is ſtill more conſpicuous at Augſburg than at Nuremburg; that affair being ſo exactly regulated by the magiſtrates, that the difference of religion, and quality of the people, are for the moſt part ſeen by their clothes. For inſtance, I ſaw a Roman Catholic merchant's widow in mourning for her huſband: ſhe had a handkerchief well whitened and ſtarched with wings and cornets, a black petticoat and a cloak of the ſame colour made like that of a man's, which reached down to her knees, a large white veil behind hanging at the corner of her handkerchief and reaching down to her heels, inlarging itſelf by degrees, and a piece of the ſame linen with the handkerchief four feet long, and at leaſt two broad, very much ſtarched, and ſtretched on a ſquare of wire, faſtened juſt below the hips, and covering all the fore part of the body.

They have found the means of turning a branch of the river Leck into the city, the waters of which are exceeding clear and good. Upon this channel ſtand four or five towers, on the tops of which are ciſterns filled by the help of ſeveral pumps moved by mills, from whence the water is conveyed into all parts of the city. There are alſo many fountains at Augſburg, ſome of which are not inferior to the magnificent fountain of Nuremburg.

On our leaving Augſburg, we took notice upon the road that they cover the vines and fig-trees hereabouts with ſtraw or mats to ſhelter them from the cold, which is ſharper here than in England, though it does not lie ſo far to the north. The country be-

tween Augſburg and Munich is upon a level, and is covered with fir-tree woods.

Munich, which is a very beautiful city, was built in the year 965; but is ſcarce half ſo big as Augſburg; it is but indifferently fortified, and has no trade. The chief thing it has to boaſt of being the reſidence of their prince and his magnificent palace. The firſt thing we did was viſiting the jeſuits library, of which we had heard wonders, but found it far below our expectations; and the library keeper, or his deputy, who was ordered to ſhew it us, was ſo prodigious a blockhead, that we could ſcarce imagine ſo much ignorance could be found in a perſon of that order. Both their convent and church are exceeding fine, and the laſt very large, light and lofty. The veſtry is very rich, and among their relics they ſhew a joint as big as that of an elephant, which they told us was one of the joints of St. Chriſtopher's back-bone. In the Auguſtin's church they have many excellent pictures, and that of the Cajetans is a handſome ſtructure.

In the church of our lady is the magnificent tomb of the emperor Lewis IV. which is adorned with many marble and braſs figures. About ten or twelve paces from the entrance of the great door, one of the ſtones of the pavement is marked with a double croſs; and a perſon ſtanding upon this ſtone, finds the pillars of the church ſo placed as to intercept the view of all the windows.

They have here no other religion but that of the Roman, to which they are ſo bigotted, that they look upon thoſe of another perſuaſion as monſters rather than men.

[The city of Munich is compoſed of broad ſtreets extending in a direct line, and adorned with a multitude of ſtately edifices of all kinds. The palace and other buildings belonging to the elector, together with the new brew-houſes, the churches, ſixteen

monaſteries, and other religious ſtructures, take up near half the city. The precinct of the Auguſtins alone conſiſts of ſeveral ſtreets, which bring them in an annual rent of 3000 guilders.]

The elector of Bavaria's palace conſiſts of four courts; the two fineſt of which are called the prince's and the emperor's court; the former is adorned with ſeveral braſs ſtatues. A wide flight of ſteps of beautiful red marble leads to the emperor's hall, which is 118 feet in length, and 52 in breadth, and in it is among other things, a ſtatue of Virtue, of one ſingle piece of porphyry. In the muſeum are ſome hundred ſtatues and buſtos of the old Roman emperors, with 500 other antiques, as lamps, inſcriptions, baſſo relievos, &c. moſt of which were brought from Italy. The fault of this fine building is its lying too low, by which means its beautiful pavement of red and white marble is extremely damaged by the ſaltpetre.

Among the valuable curioſities in the treaſury, I obſerved a cabinet of many large pieces of work in chryſtal, among which is a ſhip ſome ſpans long, with the pilot and all the tackling of the fineſt gold; a hill with a caſtle upon it all of oriental pearls; St. George on horſeback, of red agate, with his armour of diamonds ſet in gold; the Bavarian family, each perſon cut out of a piece of blue chalcedony, &c.

Oppoſite to the palace is a houſe built by count Preiſing, maſter of the horſe, which is a great ornament to the city, its four ſides anſwering to ſo many ſtreets. The pillars of his ſtable are of red marble, and every horſe feeds out of a marble manger of twenty-five guilders value.

We arrived at Munich juſt in time to have the pleaſure of ſeeing the proceſſion at the feſtival of Corpus Chriſti, at which the deputies of all the trades and manual arts aſſiſted, with coſtly flags carried before them: as did all the religious orders,

every member of which joined in the proceſſion; and a great number of religious hiſtories were exhibted on triumphal cars by children richly dreſſed. At the head of their reſpective orders rode St. George and St. Maurice in Roman habits, while St. Margaret was repreſented by a young lady dreſſed like a veſtal, leading after her a large dragon, in which two men were incloſed to give it the neceſſary movements. The four mendicant orders preceded the hoſt, which was carried under a ſplendid canopy; after which came the elector and his conſort, both holding a lighted taper. They were followed by the maſter of the houſhold, ſome court ladies, and after them the whole court. The proceſſion was cloſed by the garriſon, burghers, and peaſants; and when the clergy ſtopped at four different places to give the benediction, they were anſwered by ſalutes of eight guns from the ramparts

We now went to Sleiſheim, to take a view of that palace, which is ſituated at the diſtance of three leagues from Munich. The entrance is very grand, both the pavement, and the columns are of red and grey marble; the ſtairs are alſo adorned with columns of green marble, brought from Brixen. In the firſt hall are two large paintings of the raiſing of the ſiege of Vienna, and the battle of Hagaz; and in the victory hall, which is contiguous to it, are the battles of Belgrade, Peſt, and other places. The electreſs's bed-chamber is hung with yellow and ſilver damaſk, and near her highneſs's bed is a little tent and cuſhion of the ſame, for a favourite dog. The elector's bedchamber is directly under that of the electreſs's, with which it has a communication by means of back ſtairs. Near the elector's bed is a ſort of kennel for a dog, and another kennel for twelve others in a fine cloſet adjoining to it. On the other ſide of the palace towards Munich, is a noble gallery of pictures, among which are two pieces of Annibal Caracci, for each of which Maximilian, the

firſt elector of the Bavarian family, paid 40,000 guilders, and ſeveral large hunting pieces by Rubens. In another chamber is the ſlaughter of the innocents at Bethlehem, finely painted by Peter Paul Rubens; in which the various agitations of the mothers ſupplicating, lamenting, ſtruggling, and fainting are incomparably expreſſed. The greateſt collection is in a particular apartment, covered with ſmall pictures: nothing has a place there, but what is eſteemed among the nobleſt productions of that art. In another chamber is Alexander's firſt battle againſt Darius; a moſt admirable piece, painted by Albert Durer, who has beſtowed incredible labour on it: it contains ſeveral thouſand men, yet the hairs of their heads and beards, with the ſmalleſt joints of their armour, and other minutiæ, are all diſtinctly expreſſed.

At the diſtance of half a league from Munich, is the palace of Nymphenburg; which has not the grandeur of Sleiſheim; but its fine gardens and water-works render it a more agreeable ſummer reſidence. Among the fine walks is Bademburge a delightful ſtructure, conſiſting of elegant grottos and a large bath, into which both cold and warm water may be conveyed. The floor is overlaid with copper, and the wall decorated with porcelain and conduits. Over againſt this place is the mall and the bowling-green, contiguous to which ſtands Pagodenburg, the chief uſe of which is for the elector, after violent exerciſe at thoſe games, to change his linen and other apparel. Here you alſo ſee ſeveral little cabinets, in the Chineſe taſte, and other contrivances equally ornamental and convenient. On this ſide nearer the palace, ſtands a very pretty hermitage, ſo naturally imitating a ruinous building, that it never fails to raiſe the beholder's admiration.

Three leagues from Munich lies another electoral ſeat called Starenberg, where the court ſometimes take the diverſion of water-hunting. A ſtag is forced

into a neighbouring lake; the hounds purſuing him, are followed by the huntſmen in boats, and their highneſſes in a ſplendid barge which carries twenty-four braſs guns.

The court here often take the diverſion of hunting the heron, and at the concluſion of every year, an heron that has had the good fortune to be taken alive, is ſet at liberty with a ſilver ring on its foot, on which is engraved the name of the reigning elector. [No longer ago than laſt ſpring one of theſe birds being taken a ſecond time, had on its ring the name of Duke Ferdinand, grandfather to the preſent elector, ſo that it had ſurvived its former adventure above ſixty years: they put a ring with the preſent elector's name upon its other leg, and again gave it its liberty.]

After we had travelled for ſome time along the banks of the Yſſer, upon which Munich is ſituated, we paſſed through a foreſt, and immediately upon our leaving it diſcovered the ſnowy tops of the Alps, which at a diſtance reſemble the foaming waves of a raging ſea. At length we coaſted along the mountains, and by degrees got within the rocks covered with fir-trees and ſnow; a moſt deſolate place, deſtitute of inhabitants, except near two or three lakes where we met with a few fiſhermen's huts made of the roots of fir-trees well joined together, and even their boats were formed of the ſame trees hollowed out like Indian canoes.

At the village of Mittenwald, which is three leagues within the mountains, and ſeated in a pleaſant valley, ſurrounded with rocks, we were treated with ſome goats fleſh and ſalmon trouts; when our hoſt ſhewed us a kind of round ſtones, which he aſſured us were found in the ſtomachs of their goats, and reſembled a ſoft imperfect bezoar. He aſked ten crowns a piece for them.

We were not far from this village, when we met a troop of beggars acting the hiſtory of the fall of man.

They had planted a tree loaden with red fruit in the way, up which there climbed a little devil in the ſhape of a crocodile, while a girl, with long diſhevelled hair, approached towards it, and an old fellow clothed in black, with a young boy in white, holding a ſword in his hand, ſtood at a ſmall diſtance, and upon our approach the play began. The little boy with the ſword repreſented Michael the arch angel; I need not mention in what character the old man appeared, though he did not ſcruple to tell me. The reader will eaſily judge what terrible effects, with reſpect to religion, ſuch impious follies muſt naturally produce.

Within a quarter of an hour after, we paſſed by the fort of Chernitz, which is built between two inacceſſible rocks, and was the common boundary of Tirol, and the biſhoprick of Freiſingen, the firſt of which belongs to the emperor, and the laſt is part of the country of Bavaria.

At night we entered the village of Leefeld, where is a convent of Auſtin friars, in whoſe church they ſhew two or three pretended miracles, and among the reſt a chewed bloody hoſt, in a repoſitory of glaſs. They ſay that a gentleman named Milſar, lord of the caſtle of Schleſburg, being ſo vain as to oblige them to give him the great hoſt, which is only for the uſe of the clergy, he had no ſooner put it into his mouth but it caſt out a flood of blood, and at the ſame time his legs ſunk into the pavement up to his knees. They ſhew the hole in the pavement near the altar, and the print of his hand on one of the ſtones of the ſame altar, where he would have ſupported himſelf. His repentance, however, ſaved him, and he left theſe veſtiges to deter others from attempting the like mighty crime, in the ſight of the prieſts. This hoſt alſo works miracles, among which we may well reckon the inhabitants implicitly believing every word of this ſtory.

About two leagues beyond this village we began to deſcend into a valley, which is at leaſt a mile in breadth, and ſprinkled with ſeveral pretty little villages, watered by the river Inn, and paſſing along the right ſide of it, proceeded along the foot of a mountain; where, after we had travelled a league farther, we were ſhewn a craggy precipice above 100 fathoms high, called the emperor's rock, and at about three quarters of that height, we obſerved a niche dug, in which ſtood a crucifix with a ſtatue on each ſide, and were told that the emperor Maximilian I. being in chace of a wild goat, purſued her to this place, when alighting from his horſe, he durſt not remount him; but was forced to be brought down by the help of engines.

Having proceeded about two hours from the middle of this valley, we paſſed the river Inn, over a bridge that brought us to Inſpruck, [a fine city with well paved ſtreets, and handſome flat roofed houſes.*] There are twenty-eight magnificent braſs ſtatues in the church of the Cordeliers, which were the gift of the archduke Frederic; they are bigger than the life, and repreſent the emperors, the archdukes, the dukes of Burgundy, with two empreſſes, and two princeſſes of his family; but their names, theſe Cordeliers were unable to tell, notwithſtanding they pretend to have the greateſt reverence for that family.

At about half an hour's ride from Inſpruck, at the foot of a mountain ſtands Amras, a country ſeat of the archduke's, which is only remarkable for its ſituation, and the curioſities ſhewn there to travellers. There is a large hall filled with all ſorts of arms, which are more curious than uſeful, and among the reſt a lance uſed by the archduke Ferdinand in

* For a more particular deſcription of this city, ſee Mr. Addiſon's Travels.

tournaments. They here tell moſt ſurprizing things of this prince's ſtrength; as for inſtance, that he could ſtop a coach and fix by taking hold of a ſpoke of one of the wheels, and would break two crown pieces joined together. In an adjacent gallery we ſaw effigies of many princes in armour, mounted on their horſes with all the ornaments uſed in tournaments, and the ſkin of a ſerpent fifteen feet long, taken near Ulm upon the banks of the Danube. At the end of this gallery is an apartment filled with ſpoils and arms taken from the Turks: Here are repreſented a baſſa and an aga of the janizaries on horſeback in magnificent habits and harneſſes embelliſhed with gold, ſilver, and precious ſtones, the ſame they had on when they were taken priſoners.

In another gallery we were ſhewn a double range of cupboards joined by the backs and ſides, which extended along the middle of the gallery, with only a ſmall ſpace left to walk on each ſide The three firſt were full of curious works in alabaſter, glaſs, coral, and mother of pearl: the fourth contained medals, and gold, and ſilver coins: the fifth, veſſels of porcelain: in the ſixth were many curious little cabinets richly inlaid, the drawers of which were filled with medals, and little curioſities in agate and amber, with ſeven large volumes bound in black velvet, with edges and claſps of ſilver; but inſtead of leaves they contained ſmall boxes filled with a great number of medals: the ſeventh cupboard had many very ancient arms curiouſly wrought, and among the reſt a corſs-bow, with thirty four leſſer bows within its compaſs, which diſcharged thirty arrows at a time: the eighth was filled with animals, plants, and other natural curioſities: the three following cupboards were furniſhed with works in ivory and wood: the twelfth was filled with manuſcripts and ſcarce books: the thirteenth with works of ſteal, and particularly ſeveral curious kinds of locks: in the fourteenth they ſhewed us ſtones, on

which were the repreſentation of trees, fruits, ſhells, and animals, all the mere productions of nature: in the fifteenth and ſixteenth were many kinds of clock-work, and muſical inſtruments: the ſeventeenth contained a conſiderable quantity of precious ſtones unpoliſhed, and mineral ores: the eighteenth a large number of ſmall veſſels of precious materials, and alſo of the moſt curious ſhells in the world: the nineteenth exceeds all the reſt in riches, it being filled with veſſels of gold, cryſtal, agate, chalcedony, onyx, cornelian, lapis lazuli, and other precious ſtones, enriched with gold and diamonds, in baſſo relievo, and other curious workmanſhip: the twentieth and laſt, contains antiquities of all ſorts, as ſepulchral lamps, urns, idols, &c. and among the reſt a piece of rope about a ſpan in length, which they pretend is a part of that with which Judas hanged himſelf. On the walls and ceiling are an infinite number of other curioſities, among which the bow of Noah is an admirable piece of painting, for which they affirm the Grand Duke of Tuſcany offered 100,000 crowns.

From hence they took us into the library, which we found much out of order; and from thence into another gallery adorned with ſtatues, buſts, and other pieces of antiquity We alſo ſaw many apartments adorned with pictures of great value.

About a league beyond Inſpruck we again entered the mountains, and after a tedious aſcent of ſeven hours, came late at night to a village near the top of a mountain called Gruſs, or Salutation, a name which it acquired from the meeting of Charles V. and his brother Ferdinand, near this village; the whole account of which is engraved on a piece of marble, at 200 paces from the village; that being the exact place where they firſt ſaluted each other. We were here treated at night with veniſon, and had ſeveral ſorts of wild fowl; it is obſervable, that all the bears, foxes, and hares about this place are white

as well as moſt of the partridges. This country alſo abounds in heathcocks, pheaſants, and another kind of large wild fowl called by them ſnow-gooſe. It is worthy of notice, that all theſe ſorts of wild fowl have their feet velveted over with a kind of fur, which is neither hair nor feathers, but ſo thick, that the ſnow cannot penetrate it.

This mountain is called the Brenneberg, or burning hill, on account of the burning winds, which, together with the thunder and lightning, frequently prevail in the ſummer ſeaſon. Theſe winds force their paſſage through the hollows of the neighbouring mountains as it were through pipes, and raiſe ſuch furious hurricanes as ſometimes overthrow both rocks and trees.

We dined that day at Steerzingen, where we eat the fleſh of a creature called by the inhabitants a ſteinbock, or rock goat. It is produced by a conjunction between an he-goat and a doe, and is moſt excellent meat. The direct way from hence to Trent being very rough, we took that to Brixen, which is leſs dangerous. We this day met above 100 waggons drawn by oxen, whoſe cloven feet were ſhod with iron. Theſe carriages came from the fair of Bolſano. We alſo ſaw in theſe mountains many ſmall carts, with two wheels drawn by the peaſants, and chiefly uſed to fetch ſalt from Hall, a little city in the valley of Inſpruck. The habits of theſe mountaineers are very odd, ſome wearing green, others yellow, and others blue hats, and with ſuch little difference in their garments, that the women are ſcarce to be diſtinguiſhed from the men.

Brixen is a very ſmall city in the country of Tirol, but is the reſidence of a biſhop. They here keep their beſt apartments in the higheſt ſtories, but for what reaſon I cannot determine.

From hence to Bolſano is only ſeven hours travelling, but as the road lies between the river and the high mountains, if a ſudden thaw happens to melt

the ſnow, the torrents roll down from the precipices with ſuch violence as to overwhelm both man and beaſt; whence there are many ſmall monuments to be ſeen on the road, filled with the hiſtories of ſuch perſons as have either periſhed by theſe accidents, or narrowly eſcaped. Whence the churches hereabouts, and eſpecially our lady of Newburg's, are almoſt overladen with preſents.

We were not a little ſurpriſed at finding the valley of Bolſano, in the middle of winter, (it being now December) covered with green willows, roſes, and mulberry trees; this may be attributed to the ſituation of this valley, which is on all ſides ſheltered from the winds.

The city of Bolſano, which is very ſmall, belongs to the biſhoprick of Trent. Its chief trade ariſes from four fairs a year that laſt fifteen days each, in which they exchange the commodities brought thither from Germany and Italy. They here ſhewed us a round hole of three feet diameter in the roof of the church, ſurrounded with a garland of ribbands of different colours, on which hang a great number of wafers, and told us that an opera being acted in that church on Aſcenſion-Day, the perſon who repreſented Chriſt was taken up to Heaven through this hole.

The valley of Bolſano is full of vineyards, which produce a wine much eſteemed in this country, but is not ſo agreeable to ſtrangers, on account of its extraordinary ſweetneſs. The road between Bolſano and Trent, which is but one day's journey, is planted all along the valley with vines, where are ſeen little ſtraw huts ſupported by three high poles of fir, from whence they ſhoot the bears that come from the mountains to eat the grapes.

Trent is much of the ſame bigneſs as Bolſano, and is ſeated after the ſame manner, on a flat rock of a kind of red and white marble, which alſo furniſhes the materials for their houſes. This city is ſubject to

moſt dangerous inundations, not only from the overflowing of the river, but from the brooks of Levis and Ferſena, which ſometimes precipitate themſelves with ſuch impetuoſity from the adjacent mountains, that they force great rocks along with them even into the town.

Trent is only fortified with a ſingle wall waſhed by the river Adage. The bridge and biſhop's palace are much boaſted of by the country people, though the laſt is a low edifice of indifferent extent. The biſhop is both a temporal and ſpiritual lord, and his territories are very conſiderable. Some place this country in Germany, and others in Italy, becauſe the biſhop is a prince of the Empire; but the common language of Trent is Italian, and the inhabitants of the country reckon it part of Italy, in which, however, they are not followed by their neighbours.

In one of the chapels of the cathedral we were ſhewn a crucifix as big as the life, and gravely told that it bowed its head at the time of the council's being ſworn and proclaimed under it, to ſhew its approbation of the veracity of theſe decrees. They added, that nobody knows the materials of which it is compoſed, and for that reaſon would have us believe it was made without hands. It is called the Holy Crucifix, and the chapel in which it is placed being ſomewhat dark, they were building a moſt magnificent one for its reception.

In St. Peter's church they ſhew the chapel of little St. Simon, and ſay, that in 1276 the Jews ſtole one Simonin or little Simon, a ſhoemaker's ſon, in the 28th month of his age, and after having killed the child in a moſt cruel manner, to drink his blood at one of their feaſts, threw his carcaſe into a water pipe, which now paſſes to the houſe where it is pretended this murder was committed, and where their ſynagogue was at that time, but the body being carried from thence into the river was found by ſome

fiſhermen; when the affair being diſcovered, 39 of the Jews were executed, and the reſt baniſhed the city for ever. Pope Sixtus IV. canonized the child, who being embalmed, is now to be ſeen in a veſſel upon the altar of the chapel dedicated to his memory, with a knife, pincers, and four great needles they made uſe of in tormenting him, and two ſilver goblets in which they drank his blood. The ſame ſtory is painted at Francfort on the Maine, under the bridge-gate.

From Trent we travelled to Roveredo, a ſmall city famous for its trade in ſilk; and proceeding thence to Borguetto, the laſt village in the territory of Trent, came to Oſſenigo, the firſt place belonging to the Venetians. On our leaving the firſt mentioned city, we travelled through what is called the wood of Roveredo, though there is ſcarce a ſhrub to be ſeen all the way, the ground being covered with rocks that lie ſcattered up and down at ſome diſtance from each other. It is a dangerous paſſage for travellers as well as the foreſt of Vergnara, between Oſſenigo and the fort of Guardara, on account of the multitude of robbers that frequent theſe deſert places.

It being too late to reach the fort Seluſe, we were forced to lodge in the little village of Seraino. The fort is ſeated at the foot of a high rock, and the way leading to it is cut out of this rock, which has a precipice on the back ſide, at the bottom of which the Adage runs with a ſwift current.

After we had paſſed the fort, and for ſome time proceeded along the banks of the Adage, which here glides among the rocks, we at laſt came into a vaſt plain, that is in ſeveral places ſtony and barren though in others it is well planted with olive and white mulberry-trees, as well as with vines: the laſt of which are planted at the foot of cherry-trees, and young elms, and joining themſelves from tree to tree form a very agreeable proſpect. Having

paſſed the Adage in a ferry-boat two leagues from Seraino, we ſoon after diſcovered the city of Verona, where we arrived the ſame day.

On that ſide of the city where we entered the gate, we found many void ſpaces, and the ſtreets were ſcarce half paved, and though the reſt are ſomething better, yet generally ſpeaking, this city is but indifferently peopled, and the houſes are moſtly low and irregularly built: the balconies are chiefly of wood, and the ſtreets dirty, and generally very narrow. The ſituation of this city is, however, infinitely pleaſing, and the air very good. The Adage divides it into two parts, which have a communication by four bridges; and the caſtle of St. Peter being ſeated upon a riſing ground, affords a very fine proſpect of the adjacent country. The fort of St. Felix is behind that of St. Peter, and both together command the city; but the reſt of the fortifications are both irregular and much out of repair.

The front or outward wall of the ancient amphitheatre of Verona is all deſtroyed, but the benches have been kept in tolerable repair. There are 44 of theſe. The circumference of the higheſt I found to be 530 paces, and of the loweſt 250, each ſtep is a foot and a half high and 26 inches broad. At each end of the arena between the benches is a portal of 25 feet high, by which is the entrance out of the ſtreet; and above each of theſe portals is a balcony 20 feet long, and ten broad ſurrounded with marble rails.

The cabinet of count Maſcardo, which conſiſts of a gallery and ſix chambers full of pictures, books, rings, animals, plants, metals, extraordinary productions of nature, and the moſt exquiſite pieces of art, is ſo admirable, and the number of theſe curioſities ſo great, that even a catalogue of them would fill a volume. Among theſe are many inſtruments and utenſils uſed in the Pagan ſacrifices; ſeveral braſs

figures that were hung up in their temples, in remembrance of ſome ſignal deliverance, and ſome pieces of workmanſhip out of ſtone aſbeſtos ſpun into thread like cotton.

We ſaw at Verona a very ſingular funeral; the body dreſſed in black, with a white linen cloak, a fine peruke upon his head, and a hat adorned with a garland of flowers was laid upon a quilt, with a counterpane of flowered ſilk red and yellow, and a pillow of the ſame ſtuff; after which it was carried open by four men through the ſtreets, the company following two and two, and ſuch as were never married wearing garlands, in imitation of the ancients who had their corona pudicitiæ, or garland of chaſtity.

On our travelling from Verona to Vicenza the country appeared very fertile, well cultivated, and generally level; and their trees, on which they raiſe their vines, are here planted lozenge wiſe. We dined at the little village La Torre, the boundary between the Veroneſe and the Vicentine territories. We here found the wines very ſweet, but the bread, though made of excellent flour, for want of good management, as heavy as a lump of earth; and the reſt of our dinner was only a diſh of grey peaſe fried in oil, which was very ſurpriſing in ſo plentiful a country, eſpecially as we had better fare among the mountains.

Vicenza is ſcarce half ſo big as Verona, and but ſlenderly fortified with an old wall: and though four ſmall rivers meet near it, none of them are navigable. Among their churches the cathedral is remarkable for ſeveral good pictures; and the cathedral belonging to the religious of St Catherine has three very fine altars.

Among other edifices, we ſaw a ſmall country ſeat about half a league from the city, that belonged to the marquiſs of Capra. It is a ſquare building, in the middle of which is the hall, that has a ſmall

dome, and at each angle of the ſquare are two chambers and a cloſet. It has ſome good pictures, and being ſituated on an aſcent, is very pleaſant.

In our return from this country ſeat, we took a view of the church of our lady of Montheric, when the prior gravely told us, that this image of our lady came out of the earth in the ſame place where it now ſtands, from whence it is not to be removed; for he added, that 10,000 men have been employed to carry it to Vicenza, but were unable to perform the taſk. The picture in the dining room, performed by Paul of Verona, repreſenting St. Gregory at dinner with ſome pilgrims, is a moſt excellent piece. The ruins of the old amphitheatre at Vicenza are hid under other buildings. The theatre in the academy of the Olympics, is the work of the great architect Palladio, as is the triumphal arch without the gate that leads into the plain, called the Field of Mars; this is executed after the manner of the ancients.

The garden of the Count Valmanara is much boaſted of by the people of Vicenza. But though it has a handſome canal, curious knots, and diviſions, and a moſt delightful viſto of orange and citron-trees, it is far from being anſwerable to the inſcription over the garden gate, which begins in the following pompous ſtrain. "Stop, dear traveller, "thou who ſearcheſt for curious things, and inchant-"ing places; for here thou may'ſt find ſatisfaction. "Enter this delicious garden and take a full taſte "of all ſorts of pleaſures The Count de Valma-"nara gives thee leave, &c."

The road between Vicenza and Padua nearly reſembles that between Verona and Vicenza. About an hour after we left this laſt city, we paſſed the Tezenza, and at length arrived at Padua, which on account of its univerſity, is ſtiled the learned. This is a large, and yet a very poor city, ſeated in the midſt of a moſt fruitful country, it having many

void places without houſes, and many houſes without inhabitants, which is alſo the caſe of ſome other of the neighbouring places.

This city fell into the hands of the Venetians in 1406, and in 1519 they included the ſuburbs within the fortifications, which are now ready to fall. The ſtreets of this city are adorned on each ſide with piazzas, that afford a convenient ſhelter againſt the rain; but make them dark and narrow, and give an opportunity to many murders, robberies, and inſolent actions committed by the ſcholars. [Some people of underſtanding here are of opinion, that Padua was formerly a ſea-port, both on account of its ancient grandeur and riches, and from maſts and anchors being ſometimes dug out of the ground. But theſe, perhaps, may be the wrecks of ſhips left in a canal leading to that city.

The church of St. Anthony of Liſbon, otherwiſe called St. Anthony of Padua, is both very large, and magnificently adorned with carving, painting, and very ſumptuous tombs. The picture in freſco in the chapel of St. Felix, by the famous Giotto, is a moſt admirable piece. The chapel of St. Anthony is forty feet long, and twenty-five feet broad; the body of the ſaint lies entombed under the altar, which is very rich and magnificent, and they pretend that his bones ſend forth an odoriferous ſmell. The chapel is covered all over with white marble, upon which are repreſented in baſſo relievo the miracles wrought by this ſaint, performed by Tullius Lombardus and Sanſovin. Before the altar hang 36 large ſilver lamps, which burn night and day in honour of this ſaint.

The church of St. Juſtina is very large and magnificent, though not quite finiſhed. The pavement is compoſed of red, black, and white marble ſquares, and the roof of the great church has ſeven domes, and two more on each arm of the croſs. There are in it twenty-four fine marble altars, each of a differ-

ent colour, beſides the great altar, which is very magnificent. The baſſo relievo of the benches of the choir repreſent the prophecies of the Old Teſtament relating to Chriſt, with their accompliſhment in the New; and is a ſurpriſing work. The hiſtory of the martrydom of St. Juſtina over the great altar, is by the exeellent hand of Paul of Verona. The monaſtery is a vaſt pile of building with no leſs than ſix cloyſters, and as many courts and gardens. I omit the ſtory of the image of the virgin, which it is ſaid flew from Conſtantinople, when the Turks became maſters of that city; and ſhall paſs over the other ſaints kept in this church. The great place near it, which is 256 feet long, and 86 broad, was formerly called the Field of Mars, but has ſince changed its name into that of Prata della Valle, or the Meadow of the Valley. The hall of the town-houſe is 110 paces long and forty broad, but dark; it, however, contains many monuments of illuſtrious perſons.

We left Padua on the 20th of December 1687, and came to Venice the ſame night in good time, having ſeen by the way many handſome villages and fine country houſes, belonging to noble Venetians, till coming to Meſtre, a little city on the ſhore of the gulph, five miles from Venice, we took a gundola, which carried us thither in an hour and a half.

To form a true idea of Venice, the reader muſt imagine thirty or forty tall ſteeples riſing out of the ſea at the diſtance of a league and a half from the continent: all geographers agree, that Venice is compoſed of ſeventy-two iſlands, by which one would imagine that there were ſeventy-two little hills, one near the other, and that theſe ſmall eminences being all inhabited, have at laſt formed the city of Venice; but this is not ſtrictly true. Venice is generally flat, and built on piles in the water, which waſhes the foundations of the houſes to the

height of four or five feet. They have, indeed, made the beſt uſe of ſeveral iſlands of a reaſonable bigneſs: but there are not ſeventy-two of them, nor any thing like that number; for the ſtreets are very narrow, and moſt of them ſeem to have been raiſed up with mud and rubbiſh, eſpecially along the canals; but if all the diviſions formed by the canals were reckoned as iſlands, we ſhould find near 200; and, it muſt be farther obſerved, that the number of theſe iſlands might be increaſed, and new ones made, by fixing piles and building houſes upon them.

Some reckon Venice to be eight miles, and others only ſeven in compaſs; but I have ſeveral reaſons to believe that it does not exceed five, and that the number of its inhabitants does not at preſent amount to more than 130 or 140,000 ſouls

The ſtreets have generally canals running through them, ſo that there are but few houſes that a perſon may not go to by water, as well as by land, though every canal is not bordered by a double quay as in Holland; for very often the canal takes all the ſpace from one row of buildings to another. The paſſages over theſe canals are formed by 450 bridges; but all the little paſſages and turns that muſt be made to find theſe bridges, render Venice a true labyrinth.

The firſt place we viſited was the palace of St. Mark, the glory of Venice. The church of St. Mark fronts one end of a ſquare, and that of St. Geminian the other, and between both theſe churches the procuraties, or inns of court, are regularly built of fine marble, and border both ſides of it with lofty piazzas.

At a ſmall diſtance from thence is another ſquare 250 paces long and eighty broad, called the Broglio, the extremity of which reaches to the ſea-ſide; the doge's palace takes up one ſide, and the procuraties are contiued on the other. The tower of St. Mark

being near the angle of the ſquare, in ſome meaſure ſpoils the ſymmetry of the place. Its height is 360 feet, including the angel that ſerves for a weather-cock, and being formely gilt might be diſcerned 30 leagues at ſea; but the gold being now worn off, it is ſeen at no great diſtance. The Broglio is the place where the nobles walk, who ſometimes take one and ſometimes the other ſide, according to the convenience of the ſun or ſhade, and no body elſe is allowed to walk on that ſide with them, though the other is free for every body; and in this they are ſo exact, that when a young nobleman arrives at the age that qualifies him for ſitting in the council, four noblemen, his friends, introduce him the firſt day into the Broglio; and alſo if any nobleman is excluded from the council, he is no longer admitted into that ſide of the ſquare.

About the ninth century, the merchants of Venice are ſaid to have tranſported the body of St. Mark from Alexandria in Egypt to this city, and as Chriſt is ſaid to have ſaluted this Evangeliſt in priſon with theſe words, "Peace be unto thee, Mark, my Evangeliſt," ſo the body of this ſaint was received with the ſame words by the ſenate of Venice, who ordered them to be written in the open book held by the lion of St. Mark in the arms of Venice, and the church of St. Mark to be built to his honour; though at the ſame time they were ſo careleſs of his ſhrine or tomb, that they now cannot preciſely tell where it is.

The patriarchal church dedicated to St. Peter and St. Mark, is no more than the doge's chapel, and the primicerio or dean of the canons of St. Mark wears a mitre and roachet, like a biſhop, and has no dependance on the patriarch. I ſaw him officiate in great pomp on Chriſtmas day. He muſt always be a noble Venetian, and his annual revenue may be about 1000*l.* ſterling.

The church of St. Mark is a ſquare edifice after the Greek manners, it being a croſs ſhortened; but it is ſomewhat dark, and not very lofty. The roof has ſeveral domes, and that in the middle is larger than the reſt. On the outſide are a vaſt number of ſtatues, among which the Adam and Eve, by Ricedo, are very remarkable. Over the porch are four brazen horſes, which a learned antiquary told me, belonged formerly to the chariot of the Sun, and were a ſingular ornament to a triumphal arch erected by the Roman ſenate, in honour of Nero, after his victory over the Parthians. Conſtantine the Great carried them from Rome to Conſtantinople, where they ſtood in the Hippodrome, till they were brought from thence by the Venetians. They plainly appear to have been once gilt.

But the greateſt curioſity belonging to St. Mark's church is the vaſt quantity of Moſaic work, with which both the roof and pavement are covered. Inſtead of making uſe of natural ſtones, which would have taken up too much time in poliſhing and preparing, they have employed a compoſition of glaſs and enamel melted together in a crucible, which takes a moſt lively and bright colour, that is incapable of fading or being ſtained. Every piece of the Moſaic of St. Mark is a little cube, of which the field is Moſaic finely gilt: theſe cubes being exactly joined together were regularly painted with all the draperies and ornaments, and being afterwards put into a furnace, the colouring was ſo incorporated with the ſubſtance of the work, that it has now laſted near 850 years, without loſing any part of its beauty.

The pavement of the church is not inferior to the roof, it being compoſed of jaſper, porphyry, and marble of ſeveral colours formed into compartments.

Among all the relics, miraculous images, and other ſuppoſed holy rarities, I ſhall only mention the

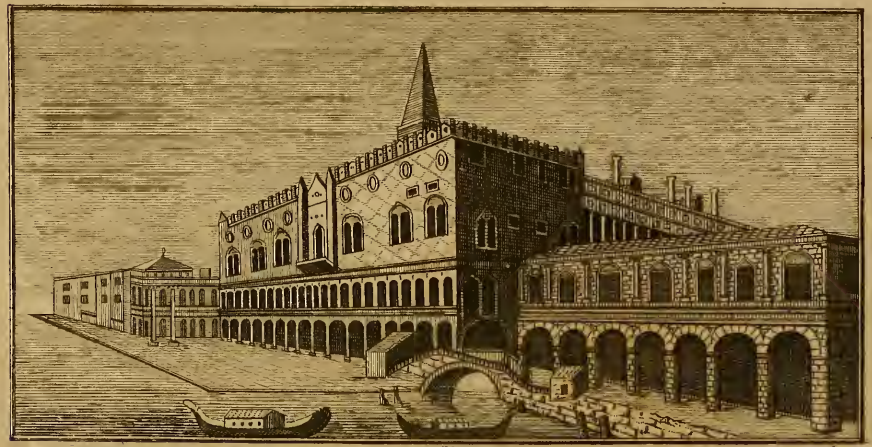
rock ſtruck by Moſes in the wilderneſs in the chapel of Medona della Scarpa, at the end of the font. It is of a greyiſh marble, and the three holes, out of which the water is pretended to have iſſued, are placed in a triangular form, about two inches aſunder. But as each of theſe holes is no bigger than a gooſequill, it was impoſſible for them to furniſh water in ſo ſmall a time ſufficient to quench the thirſt of 600,000 men, with their wives, children, and cattle. In the middle of the portico of the church, over-againſt the door, they ſhew a piece of porphyry in the pavement, where Pope Alexander III. ſet his foot on the neck of the emperor Frederic Barbaroſſa.

From St. Mark's church we were conducted to the treaſury, of which three procurators of St. Mark are always guardians, and which is never opened but in the preſence of one of them. In the firſt apartment, we were ſhewn ſome relics, and in particular what was pretended to be ſeveral pieces of the true croſs, and ſome of the Virgin Mary's milk and hair. From thence we went into another room where the real treaſure is kept, moſt of which was brought from Conſtantinople with the above mentioned brazen horſes; the moſt conſiderable pieces here are the two crowns of the kindom of Cyprus and Candia, many veſſels of agate, the root of an emerald, and a rock of cryſtal: all which are ſaid to have belonged to Conſtantine. A ſeal eight inches in diameter made of one ſingle garnet; a ſapphire weighing ten ounces; twelve croſslets of gold adorned with pearls; as many head-tires in the form of crowns, worn upon certain feſtivals by the maids of honour to the empreſs Helena; a cup made of a ſingle turquois, ſeven inches in diameter, and three and a half deep, with Egyptian characters upon it; and many other things of great value; but the duke's como, or cap of ſtate, is, in my opinion, the moſt magnificent piece to be ſeen there, though Camerarius values it at no more

than 200,000 crowns. The circle is of gold, and the bonnet of crimſon velvet, all over enriched with precious ſtones, and very large pearls. Charles Paſcal is of opinion, that this is the Phrygian bonnet or Trojan mitre, brought into Italy by Antenor, the figure of which is repreſented in ſeveral ancient ſtatues and medals. I alſo here ſaw the pretended manuſcript of the original goſpel of St. Mark, the leaves of which are of parchment very much torn, defaced, and ſo rotten, that wherever it is touched ſomething ſticks to the fingers. It is in quarto, of two fingers thickneſs, and ſhut up in a gilt box made in the ſhape of a book; but there are only here and there ſome traces of imperfect characters to be ſeen on the moiſt parchment; it is diſputed whether it is wrote in Latin or Greek; and there does not appear any reaſon for their aſſerting that it is of St. Mark's own writing.

Next adjoining to St. Mark's church is the palace of St. Mark, a great maſs of building after the Gothic manner, but very magnificent. It has, however, been very often defaced by fire, ſo that the reparations being made at different times, have rendered it not ſo uniform as it would otherwiſe have been. That part which faces the canal is excellently deſigned, and built of a very hard kind of ſtone brought from Iſtria; and were all the reſt like this, it might paſs for an exquiſite piece of architecture. However, as it is, it makes a venerable appearance. Here the duke reſides, and the council of ſtate and other aſſemblies meet. The apartments are ſpacious, lofty, and well wainſcotted; but are not ſo light as thoſe of modern buildings.

The hall appointed for the meeting of the great council, in whom the ſovereignty is properly lodged, is very large, and adorned with curious paintings, particularly the pictures of all their dukes: the hiſtory of the taking of Conſtantinople in 1192, and pope Alexander ſetting his foot on the emperor Bar-



Barker fc.

The Doge's *Palace at* Venice.

baroſſa's neck, or rather ſhoulder. The rebellion of Bajamonta againſt the ſenate in 1210 gave riſe to the little arſenal kept in this palace, from whence there is a paſſage to the hall of the great council, that in caſe ſuch another deſign ſhould break out while they are aſſembled, they may be readily ſupplied with arms for their defence. From the ſame cauſe they erected the little judgment-ſeat, called the loggietta, at the foot of St. Mark's tower, in ſight of the palace and the great council-chamber. Here are always ſome procurators of St. Mark upon the watch, while the great council meet and deliberate on matters of ſtate.

This arſenal is provided with a conſiderable number of fuſees and muſkets ready charged, beſides many other arms. They have here an engine that will light 500 matches at once, and ſome very curious arms of an ancient make, among which is a ſmall trunk with ſix little guns, which Carrara, the laſt lord of Padua, who was infamous for his inhumanity, ſent as a preſent to a lady, and is ſo contrived by certain ſprings, that upon opening of the trunk the guns all fired at once, and killed her. They likewiſe ſhewed us ſome little pocket croſs bows, and ſteel arrows, with which this tyrant uſed to kill ſuch as paſſed by, without their knowing from whence they received their wounds; and various whimſical locks and bolts with which he uſed to keep his concubines confined. We alſo ſaw here the two little ſtatues of Adam and Eve, which Albert Durer made while in priſon, with only the point of his pen-knife, and which procured his liberty.

We muſt not here forget the lion's mouth, under the inner portico of this palace, and in ſeveral places of the galleries, into which any one has the liberty of caſting a note, to give advice of any ſecret tranſactions to the inquiſitors, who have the keys of the boxes into which theſe notes fall, and ſometimes re-

ward the people for ſecret accuſations, when they diſcover themſelves by joining a piece they had torn off the billet.

The library is kept in the procurties oppoſite to the palace on the other ſide of the Broglio. But the books are neither numerous, ſcarce, nor in the beſt condition; and there are but few manuſcripts, which are moſtly Greek. However, it has many excellent pictures done by Titian, and other great maſters, and ſeveral Greek ſtatues that are exquiſitely fine, as that of an Apollo, a Venus, a Ganymede, and two Gladiators. Some are of opinion, that Venice has as many valuable pictures as Rome; but whether this be true, I will not pretend to determine; only I ſhall obſerve, that the moſt celebrated pieces we ſaw here, either in the churches, or in any other public place, are the wedding at Cana, by Paul Veroneſe, in the refectory of St. George Major; the preſentation of the Virgin in the ſchool of Charity; and St. Peter, martyr, in St. John and St. Paul's, both by Titian.

To return to the churches; it is one of the peculiarities of Venice, that ſome of theſe edifices are dedicated to ſaints who were never canonized; ſuch as the good man Job, the prophets Moſes, Samuel, Jeremiah, Daniel, and Zachary, with ſome others. One of the fineſt of theſe is that dedicated to St. Moſes; it has a magnificent front built by Alexander Tremignone, at the expence of the procurator Vincent Fini. Several relics are preſerved in this church, which it is pretended are both very authentic and very potent; but ſince they only conſiſt of arms, legs, and jaw-bones, I will not trouble the reader with a catalogue of them. As for St. Samuel's church, there is nothing remarkable to be ſeen in it. St. Job's is a very fine building; in the veſtry is kept the body of St. Luke, and the Benedictines of St. Juſtina at Padua have another; but as the pope has declared for the former, the monks of Padua have prudently

taken the reſolution to be ſilent. At St. Jeremy's, which is a fine edifice, they have one of that prophet's teeth; and if the reſt had imitated ſo judicious an example, we might perhaps have had the pleaſure to have ſeen one of Moſes's horns, and Job's ſcabs. The great altar, and the tomb of St. John the martyr, duke of Alexandria, are the moſt remarkable things I obſerved at St. Daniel's. St. Zachary's is a fine building; the architecture is not modern, but the front is enriched with fine marble, and the inſide beautified with many ornaments and magnificent altars.

As to the other churches, thoſe of St. George Major, and Della Salute are finely adorned with moſaic work; but in this reſpect they are not to be compared with St. Mark's, though they greatly exceed it in architecture. Of theſe churches the beſt judges give the preference to St George's, but common eyes find ſomething in the church Della Salute that appears more agreeable. The great altar in St. George's is enriched with the fineſt marble, curiouſly wrought, and adorned with ſeveral ſtatues, the chief of which are the four Evangeliſts ſupporting a world, on which there is a Padre Eterno, the whole of braſs gilt. The ſeats of the canons round the choir are of walnut-tree, on which the life of St. Benedict is repreſented in very fine baſſo relievo, where the rules of perſpective are well obſerved. They alſo pretend to have in this church the body of St. Stephen, the Protomartyr, which a pious woman called Juliana, brought from Jeruſalem to Conſtantinople, from whence it was afterwards tranſported to Venice, by one Peter, a monk. The whole ſtory is told at length in two long Latin inſcriptions.

The church Della Salute was erected by the public, in conformity to a vow made to the Virgin, for a deliverance from the plague. The choir, altars, dome, and veſtry are all extremely beautiful; and it

is adorned both without and within with about 130 marble ſtatues. On the great altar is a ſtatue of the virgin holding the infant Jeſus in her arms, while the genius of Venice is on her right hand, imploring her aſſiſtance to ſtop the progreſs of the peſtilence, and on her left, peſtilence is flying, purſued by an angel with a torch in his hand; St. Mark is alſo preſent, with St. Lawrence, Juſtiniani, and ſeveral others. All theſe ſtatues are of fine marble, and wrought by a curious hand. I dare not undertake to deſcribe all the embelliſhments of this noble ſtructure.

St. James de Rialto is ſaid to be the firſt church built at Venice; but notwithſtanding its boaſted antiquity, it has been ſo often damaged and repaired, that it may be reckoned a new ſtructure. Its altar in the great chapel is of white marble, adorned with a fine ſtatue of St. James, done by Victoria.

St. Peter di Caſtello, which is the epiſcopal and patriarchal church, is pretty large, and the front is worthy of notice, on account of its beautiful ſimplicity; but though no extraordinary care has been taken to embelliſh this edifice, there are ſome very conſiderable ornaments and ſeveral remarkable things to be ſeen in it. I have obſerved ſome devout perſons kiſs a ſtone chair which ſtands in this church on the right hand by the wall, between the ſecond and third altar. They pretend that St. Peter made uſe of it when he was at Antioch; and a Sacriſtan informed me, that it was a preſent from Michael Palæologus, emperor of Conſtantinople.

The monks of St. Michael, between Venice and Murano, have in the chapel of the family of Priolo, a fine croſs, which is thought to be endued with the virtue of appeaſing tempeſts; and its hiſtory, which is full of aſtoniſhing wonders, is written on a ſcroll of vellum. It was formerly the cuſtom for no veſſel to ſet ſail from the port of Venice, till the pilot and all the ſhip's crew had recommended

themſelves to the protection of this miraculous croſs: but the heat of this devotion is now much abated. The choir of this chapel is much admired for the richneſs and beauty of its ornaments. In a little chamber near this choir is a map of the world drawn by a monk, and adorned with miniatures: this is certainly a curious piece.

The monk who ſhewed us this laſt place carried us to a little but magnificent chapel at a ſmall diſtance, and told us that the people generally believed that it was built by a courtezan with the profits of her vocation, but aſſured us that they were miſtaken. The convent to which this chapel belongs is a large building moſt agreeably ſituated, for from hence we had the proſpect of Venice, Murano, Lido, Terra Firma, and ſeveral places in the Lagunes, without mentioning the walks and gardens that belong to the convent.

Beſides theſe and many other churches, there are public edifices divided into chapels, halls, chambers, and lodgings, which belong to fraternities of monks and other ſocieties, and are called Scuole: of theſe I ſaw at leaſt thirty-five, and I doubt not of there being more; among the reſt there are five called Scuole Grandi, which are embelliſhed with ſuch art and coſt, that they may vie with the fineſt churches, both in the richneſs and beauty of their ornaments.

The arſenal of Venice challenges precedence among the firſt in Europe: but as it may be confeſſed that it is a place of great conſequence, ſo on the other hand it ought to be conſidered that it is the only one the Venetians have in Italy; and that in its incloſure is contained all their ammunition, ſtores for their navy, caſting houſes, rope-yards, forges, galleys, galleaſes, and the bucentaure itſelf; beſides the docks for refitting their ſhips. Notwithſtanding which, we ought not to believe more than half what they tell us in relation to it; for our guide would

have fain perſuaded us, that it contained no leſs than 2500 pieces of great cannon, arms for 100,000 foot, and complete accoutrements for twenty thouſand horſe. Among the men of war, that called the Redeemer is the biggeſt, and as they told us, carried eighty pieces of cannon and fourteen padereroes. Their galleaſes have three rows of guns in the prow, but only two in the poop, and carry ninety-two ſlaves, ſix on a bench. The bucentaure is a large galleas of ſtate, finely carved and gilt, in which the doge and ſenate with many of the nobles annually go out on Aſcenſion Day, to perform the ceremony of marrying the ſea.

As to their other buildings, the bridge of the Rialto, founded on 10,000 elm piles, challenges the firſt place: it is built over the middle of the great canal which divides the city in the figure of an S, and conſiſts of only one arch that forms the third part of a circle, the whole extent of which is ninety feet, and in the middle it is twenty four in height. It is ſtrongly built of great blocks of a kind of white marble. It has three rows of ſhops, which divide it into three ſtreets; one large one in the middle, and two other little ones on the ſides. Moſt of the other bridges at Venice are alſo compoſed of a ſingle arch.

All the beſt houſes are on each ſide of the great canal, and here are many magnificent palaces, whoſe chief beauty conſiſts in their frontiſpieces, which are commonly of two or three ſorts of architecture.

The Lagunes contribute not a little to the unwholeſomeneſs of the air of Venice, and their water is generally bad, for though they have 150 ſprings, there are only two or three that afford good water; whence moſt of the private perſons of note preſerve their rain-water in ciſterns. The wines generally drank are either exceſſive ſweet or ſour, and their bread is very ill made; for let it be ever ſo new, it

is as hard as a biſcuit, and muſt be broken with a hammer. The women of quality do not even ſhew their faces in the churches, and the ordinary women wear over their heads a large ſcarf, which opens a little above their eyes. The females are educated in convents till they are married, without their being allowed to ſee their future huſbands; whence the men commonly remedy the defects of their wives by keeping miſtreſſes. Many who are of a tender conſcience, ſatisfy themſelves with living with women whom they deſign to marry, which is frequently not performed till a few days or hours before the death of one of the parties.

The Carnival commences here the ſecond holiday in Chriſtmas, when they begin to wear maſks, and open the theatres and gaming-houſes. In the beginning they act with ſome moderation, but the nearer they come towards Shrove-Tueſday the more their madneſs increaſes. Theſe extravagancies are allowed by the Senate of Venice, to divert the people from feeling the heavy burthen of their government, which without ſuch amuſements would be intolerable. Beſides, the vaſt number of ſtrangers who come to Venice from all parts to ſee the diverſions of the Carnival bring great ſums of money to the city. I was credibly informed, that during the laſt Carnival there were no leſs than ſeven ſovereign princes, and 30,000 other foreigners.

Their eunuchs make a prepoſterous figure in their operas; for it appears very odd to ſee one of theſe mutilated fellows act the part of a bully, and another with his withered wrinkled face repreſenting a young lover; and in every opera a buffoon intermixes his fooleries with the moſt ſerious and tragical parts. Their comedies are ſo ridiculous, that in other places they would ſcarcely paſs for tolerable farces; for Harlequin is commonly the head actor; and to make the ſpectators laugh, his grimaces are backed with the moſt rank bawdry that can be uttered.

The aſſemblies where they play at baſſet are called Ridotti. Ten or twelve rooms may ſometimes be ſeen with gaming tables in each, crouded with gameſters maſked, with ladies of quality and courtezans. They have alſo certain rooms where liquors and ſweet-meats are ſold. Every perſon thus maſked, provided he is well dreſſed, has the liberty of talking to the ladies even of the higheſt quality. Nobody, not even the huſband himſelf, taking notice at that time of what is ſaid to his wife, becauſe the maſk is ſacred; though this ſometimes gives occaſion to an intrigue, in a place where the ſcarcity of opportunity prompts them to do more with the wink of an eye, than in other countries with a long courtſhip. The chief place of maſquerading is St. Mark's ſquare, where you may put yourſelf in what diſguiſe you pleaſe, provided you maintain the figure of the perſon you aſſume. For here Harlequins ridicule one another very handſomely, and thoſe who perſonate Doctors hold learned diſputes. But ſuch as have no inclination to venture upon theſe engagements, may appear in the habit of a nobleman, or in ſome foreign dreſs, and be only ſpectators. All the maſkers muſt be without ſwords.

In this ſquare are alſo puppet-ſhews, rope-dancers, and fortune-tellers, whoſe little ſtages are filled with globes ſpheres and other aſtronomical inſtruments.

I ſhall not deſcribe their bull-baitings, gooſe-hunting, wreſtling, boxing, balls, and races upon the water, or their feaſt of Shrove-Tueſday, when they cut off a bull's head in the preſence of the whole Senate, in memory of a victory obtained in Friuli. But it muſt not be omitted, that the Carnival is not the only time when maſks are in requeſt at Venice, there being no feaſt where they are not uſed more or leſs: as at the audiences of ambaſſadors; on Aſcenſion-day, &c. all which are very profitable to the watermen, who knowing all the turns and bye-ways, keep a correſpondance with the waiting-women, and

for a good reward will furniſh a ladder of cord for an intrigue; their buſineſs being pimping. The Venetian gondolas may be hired either from place to place, by the hour, or by the day; and one of the beſt of them may be had for five or ſix ſhillings a day. They are prettily contrived, and very light. They are generally thirty or thirty-two feet long, and four or five broad, and a perſon may ſit in them much at his eaſe, under a cover like that of a coach, with glaſſes on both ſides. The boatmen are very dexterous in their buſineſs, and manage their oars with ſurpriſing facility, ſtanding with their faces towards the place to which they are going. All the gondolas muſt be black, and even the little room is generally covered with black cloth or ſerge; but foreigners are not confined to this rule. The gondolas, particularly of the ambaſſadors, are extremely magnificent.

With reſpect to the doge or duke of Venice, he has only the ſhadow of greatneſs, without any real ſubſtance. He has, indeed, ſome outward marks of grandeur, but theſe are beſtowed on him only as he is repreſentative of the republic, as ambaſſadors are of their maſters; for all his counſellors have a conſtant eye over his actions, and have authority to viſit his cloſet every hour. It is not in his power to pardon a criminal: he cannot ſo much as paſs over to the continent without permiſſion from the ſtate; and he no ſooner ſets his foot on ſhore than he loſes his dignity, and is conſidered as nothing more than a bare nobleman of Venice. When he dies there is no public mourning; he is beſides as much ſubject to the laws as the meaneſt perſon, and the inquiſition of ſtate is chiefly levelled at his power, which is ſo ſtraitened, that except two or three inconſiderable privileges, he poſſeſſes nothing beyond other noblemen. The principal of theſe are, his having a double voice in the grand council, the diſpoſal of ſeveral little offices belonging to the palace, and the nomination of the primicerio and canons of St.

Mark. His honours are only paid him as the marks of the ſovereignty of the commonwealth, in which ſenſe he bears the title of duke, and of his ſerenity, which laſt title is here eſteemed above that of highneſs; and when he appears abroad upon any ſolemn occaſion, he has a torch carried before him, with a folding-chair that has two arms and no back; he has beſides eight ſilver trumpets, and as many ſtandards with the arms of Venice, and perhaps ſome hautboys. Of theſe ſtandards two are white, two red, two violet, and two blue, which are ſaid to ſignify peace, war, truce, and the league. The two red ones were at this time carried firſt; the ſtate being then engaged in a war againſt the Turks; but in time of peace, the white one precedes the reſt. He has alſo a kind of umbrella carried after him. Upon theſe occaſions the doge is generally accompanied by the nuncio, and the ambaſſadors reſiding at Venice, who wear their hats; and the doge never pulls off his ducal coronet, except when the hoſt is elevated, or when viſited by a prince of royal extraction, or by a cardinal, who ſits in a chair like the doge's, and even on his right hand. After theſe march the chief ſenators, before whom is carried the ſword of ſtate.

The doge's name, it is true, is ſtamped upon the coin; but on the reverſe he appears on his knees at the feet of the primicerio, who ſits and repreſents St. Mark, before him the doge takes the oath of fidelity, with a maſs book in one hand, and with the other receiving the ſtandard of Venice. Whence it is plain, that his effigy bears here no more marks of honour than that of the primicerio. The letters of foreign princes are alſo directed and delivered to the doge, but he is obliged to deliver them unopened to the council. With reſpect to ambaſſadors, after matters have been deliberated and concluded in the council, the doge is obliged to deliver their anſwer with ſuch exactneſs, that if he commits the

leaſt miſtake he is corrected upon the ſpot. Thus in all acts or declarations of ſtate, he is no more than an herald, who publiſhes what it is enacted by the ſenate.

A noble Venetian never appears in public but in his robes, which are of black cloth lined with greyiſh cloth in the ſummer, and ermine in the winter. The ſtole is of the ſame cloth as well as the girdle, which being about four inches broad, is adorned with ſilver buckles and plates. His bonnet is no more than a black worſted cap with a worſted fringe which he commonly carries in his hand, that he may not incommode his large peruke. The procurators of St. Mark, the Sani Grandi, and ſome others of the great officers of ſtate, are diſtinguiſhed by peculiar habits. Thoſe who have been ambaſſadors have the privilege of wearing a ſtole of cloth of gold, and gold buckles on their girdles; but they are generally ſatisfied with wearing a little gold galloon upon their black ſtoles.

The phyſicians, advocates, notaries, and all thoſe called cittadini wear the ſame habits as the nobles, they claim the title of excellency, and the manner of ſaluting them is to kiſs their ſleeve, which about the elbow is as big as a moderate ſack, and ſometimes ſerves to carry proviſions in from the market, becauſe they ſcarce ever appear with any attendants at their heels. They are never ſaluted in the ſtreet, except by thoſe who wear the ſame robe. The nobility of Venice is not reſtrained to the eldeſt ſons, and they are not allowed to traffic, much leſs to marry with foreigners.

The marquiſſes, counts, and other titular nobles belonging to the Venetian ſtate, are not noblemen of Venice; but either ſuch as really enjoyed thoſe dignities in their reſpective countries before they became ſubject to the Venetians, or have been dignified with theſe titles by the Venetians ſince their conqueſts, to humble the ancient nobility of thoſe

countries. There are a third ſort of titular nobility, in the Venetian State, whoſe anceſtors, though not fully intitled to thoſe dignites, yet had ſome pretenſions to them, and upon the change of the government aſſumed thoſe titles by the connivance of the Venetians.

The only thing worth notice between Padua and Rovigo, is the country, which is flat and fertile, adorned with meadows, groves, vineyards, and watered by many rivulets. Upon the road are ſome houſes of pleaſure belonging to the Venetians; but the country people about Rovigo dwell only in huts made of reeds. The city of Rovigo is very poor and of no great extent, and yet is the reſidence of the biſhop of Adria; once a famous city, which gave its name to the gulph, but is now no more than a half drowned village.

Ferrara is a large and beautiful city, notwithſtanding its being poor and ill peopled. We went on purpoſe to one of the beſt places of the whole city where four ſtreets meet, but could not perceive one perſon in any of them, yet the adjacent country is ſome of the beſt in Lombardy; but lies untilled for want of inhabitants, and is almoſt deſolate from the ſeverity of the papal government.

Ferrara was united to the eccleſiaſtical ſtate under the pontificate of Clement VIII. who built a ſtrong citadel, which is ſtill in good repair. One poor college belonging to the Jeſuits is all that is left of the ancient univerſity. Near the cathedral ſtand ſome brazen equeſtrian ſtatues, and oppoſite the palace of the nobility is one of duke Hercules II. on the pedeſtal of which is an inſcription granting ſanctuary to criminals for twenty paces round it. We alſo ſaw the ducal palace, the houſe of the marquis De Villa, and ſeveral churches and convents, which have all their peculiar beauties: and among the reſt we took notice of the tomb of Arioſto in the church of the Benedictines.

Though it is 50 miles from Ferrara to Ravenna, we did not ſee in all this way one town or village worth notice. The firſt days journey was very paſſable, but afterwards the road between the Adage and the Po became very deep. The ancient geographers deſcribe its ſituation like that of Venice, among the waters, and it is certain that this was the beſt harbour the Romans had in the Adriatic gulph; but ſince that time the Lagunes are dried up, and the ſea is at leaſt three miles from it, the city being now ſurrounded with the moſt fruitful fields of Italy. There is not the leaſt doubt but that the preſent Ravenna is ſituated in the ſame place where the ancient Ravenna ſtood, there being in the walls facing the ſea-ſide many great iron rings by which they uſed formerly to faſten their veſſels, and the ruins of the ancient beacon are ſtill to be ſeen. This city is ſeated in a flat country, is thinly peopled, and meanly built.

The cathedral is a very ancient ſtructure, ſupported by 56 marble pillars placed in a double range on each ſide, and the choir is vaulted with excellent Moſaic work. They there pretend to ſhew us a precious relic, one of the ſtones with which St. Stephen was martyred, but what is moſt worthy of notice, the great door of the church is formed of the planks of vines, ſome of which are 12 feet high, and 14 or 15 broad; for in the places formerly covered by the ſea, the vines grow to a prodigious ſize.

The churches of St. Apollinarius, St. Vitalis, St. Remualdus, and St. Andrew have many fine pieces of marble and porphyry brought from Greece during the time of exarchy, or while under that name it continued a province of the Greek empire. The tomb of Galla Placidia, the daughter of Theodoſius the great, is to be ſeen in the church of St. Celſus, betwixt thoſe of Valentinian and Honorius*.

* See a particular deſcription of the city of Ravenna in Mr. Addiſon's Travels.

We had ſcarce travelled an hour from Ravenna before we entered a foreſt of pine-trees, which is four miles long, and having paſſed it, travelled within ſight of the ſea to the left, and the marſhes to the right. Having croſſed the river Savio in a ferry-boat, we proceeded through the little city of Cervia, ſeated among the bogs, where the inhabitants live by making of ſalt. We dined at Coſenate near the ſea ſide, and before we had proceeded three miles farther, came to the banks of the famous Rubicon, alſo called the Piſatello, and by ſome the Frumicino; when we were not a little ſurprized, conſidering the manner in which Lucan ſpeaks of this river, to ſee our coach paſs it without a bridge or ferry boat. Within an hour after we travelled cloſe by the ſea-ſhore, upon a firm ſand, till coming within a mile of Rimini, we were obliged to travel deeper into the country for the convenience of paſſing the river Ariminum, now called Mareciha, which waſhes the walls of Rimini.

Rimini is a ſmall and poor city, ſeated in a rich country. On the bridge, which is of marble, are two intire inſcriptions, intimating that Auguſtus and Tiberius were the founders of this city, and that the triumphal arch which forms one of the gates was built by the firſt. Behind the gardens of the capuchins are the ruins of an amphitheatre, and five hundred paces from thence without the city is a brick tower, which was the Pharos of the ancient harbour, but it is now encompaſſed with gardens, the ſea being retired at leaſt half a mile from it. Out of the ruins of this harbour, which is one of the beſt in Italy, was built the church of St Francis. In this city is the brazen ſtatue of Paul V. and near it a curious marble fountain.

From Rimini we travelled fifteen miles along the downs, betwixt the ſea and the fields; and at length diſcovered the city and little republic of St. Marino *

* See a particular account of this ſmall republic in Mr. Addiſon's Travels through Italy.

on the top of a mountain; and continuing to proceed towards Peſaro, found the country very well inhabited and cultivated.

The city of Peſaro exceeds Rimini both in bigneſs, in the pleaſantneſs of its ſituation upon an eaſy aſcent, and in the neatneſs and beauty of the buildings. Nothing can afford a more agreeable proſpect than the little hills that ſurround it, with the pleaſing mixture of paſture, vineyards, and orchards. Their olives are very good, and their figs are eſteemed the beſt in Italy. Fleſh meat is here ſo cheap, that a pound containing eighteen ounces may be bought for leſs than a half-penny, and bread and wine are even cheaper in proportion than meat. And as the ſea and rivers furniſh plenty of fiſh, the city abounds in all the neceſſaries of life. In the market-place is a fine fountain and a ſtatue of Pope Urban VIII. under whoſe pontificate this city and the dukedom of Urbino were incorporated with the Eccleſiaſtical ſtate.

From Peſaro we continued our journey along a ſandy ſhore for ſeven miles as far as Fano, and ſaw abundance of walnuts, cheſnuts, ruſhes and many other things driven by the wind from the neighbouring rivers upon this ſhore. One of our company took up here a ſmall fiſh called by the Italians Cavaletto, and by the French Cheval-marin, or the ſea-horſe, for its head and neck have ſome reſemblance to thoſe of a horſe; and as it is eaſily dried and preſerved, it is frequently to be met with in cabinets. The Italians attribute to it the quality of curing the bite of a mad dog if eaten roaſted, and applied to the affected part, ſkinned and beaten with honey and vinegar.

Fano is a ſmall neat city, but has nothing in it worth notice, except a triumphal arch, the inſcription of which is quite defaced.

About a mile from Fano we travelled over a wooden bridge that is five or ſix hundred paces long, erect-

ed over the ſeveral branches of the Pongio, which, when the ſnow begins to melt on the Appenines, overflows all the neighbouring country. Then coaſting along the ſea-ſide, we came to Senegallia, an old city incloſed with a ſtrong wall and ſome baſtions; and proceeding from thence ſeventeen miles along the ſhore, met with no houſes, except an old caſtle and ſome inns, and at length arrived at Ancona, which is ſituated upon two hills on the point of a promontory. It is much larger than any of the four or five laſt mentioned cities, but not much richer, though the excellency of its harbour, and the fertility of the adjacent country, render it a proper place for trade, of which it had formerly a ſufficient ſhare; but it has fallen into decay ſince it became ſubject to the papal dominion. The ſtreets are, however, dark and narrow, and the buildings but very indifferent; beſides, the declivities upon which it ſtands render it very inconvenient. The citadel, which commands both the city and harbour is ſeated on the firſt hill; and on the other, which forms the point of the cape, ſtands the church of St. Cyriaca, a low dark fabric, the front of which is of marble, but without any ornament. At the entrance of the mole is a magnificent triumphal arch of white marble, erected by the ſenate to the honour of Trajan. The exchange where the merchants meet is built in the manner of a portico, at the four corners of which ſtood the ſtatues of faith, hope, charity, and religion. The laſt of which was thrown down by an earthquake.

Before I take leave of Ancona, it may be proper to mention the dreſs of the inhabitants. We ſaw the chief citizens on a holiday appear in black clothes lined with green, with blue or philamot ſtockings, ſhoes whitened with chalk, and tied with ribbands of various colours. Their unbuttoned doublets were embroidered with many colours, and their long ſhirt ſleeves hung down to their fingers ends. The

ordinary ſort of women wear a kind of coif with a long fringe that hangs over their faces. The body of their gowns is generally of red or yellow, faſtened on four ſides with laces, and trimmed all over with coloured galloon. Their waiſtcoats and petticoats are both very ſhort and of various colours. The ladies of quality, however, ſtrive to imitate the French in their dreſs; but it is in ſo awkward a manner, that appear more ridiculous than if they were adorned in the faſhion of their country.

We obſerved another cuſtom upon this road, which is their paper windows, which being always torn, prove very inconvenient in winter, and look very diſagreeable to foreigners. To complete our vexation, they would commonly bring a fricaſee of three eggs and perhaps as many pilchards for a ſupper for five or ſix perſons, and afterwards make us pay as dear as if we had been well entertained; for our dinner and ſupper generally amounted to our ſhillings a head.

The country between Ancona and Loretto is much the beſt in Italy, though the roads are the worſt, which obliged us to alight ſeveral times to eaſe the horſes. Though there are ſeveral accounts of Loretto, the curioſities are here ſo extraordinary, that I ſhall with great fidelity give an exact abridgement of what I was able either to learn or ſee.

The houſe of our lady of Loretto, ſo much celebrated among the Roman Catholics, is pretended to be the ſame in which the Virgin was born, the ſame wherein ſhe was betrothed and married to Joſeph, that where ſhe received the ſalute of the angel, and where the ſon of God became incarnate. This houſe, they ſay, was tranſported by the angels into Dalmatia, and on the 10th of May, 1291, placed on the hill of Terſetto; where, after it had continued for three years and ſeven months, the angel removed it from thence into the middle of a foreſt in the territory of Recanati, which being famous for many robbers, it was after eight months removed a third time to the

hill on which it now ſtands; but a diſpute ſoon after ariſing between two brothers, coheirs of the ground on which it ſtood, about the poſſeſſion of this houſe, it was within four months after placed by the angels ſome paces from thence, in the high road, where it is ſtill to be ſeen.

To prevent the inconveniences that might happen to ſo ſacred a place, a moſt magnificent church is built about it: in the midſt of this ſtructure it ſtands free from all injuries, and for its better preſervation, four walls have ſince been erected, that encloſe it on all ſides like a box, without touching the walls of the Santa Caſa, or Holy Houſe. All that painting, ſculpture, and architecture were able to perform in the beginning of the laſt century, have been beſtowed on this church, which is built of white marble of Carrara, and is of the Corinthian order, adorned with the moſt exquiſite baſſo relievo, in which the whole hiſtory of the Virgin is repreſented. It has three doors, two of which are at the end facing the eaſt. Here the pilgrims are let in, and the other is on the ſouth ſide, and leads to the ſanctuary, the ſpace between the altar and the end of our lady's apartment.

To render the ſtory of the removal of this houſe the more probable, they pretend that it was built of ſome unknown ſtones; but upon the ſtricteſt examination I could make, I found them to be true brick of different ſizes, and unequal ſhapes, mixed with ſome flat greyiſh or reddiſh ſtones, that are very common here, and the whole is cemented with lime and ſand; but the pieces are ill joined, as if done in great haſte. The maſon's work is on the inſide almoſt open to view, except in ſome places where there are fragments of plaſter-work covered with painting, in which the virgin is repreſented holding the infant Jeſus in her arms. However, the tradition of the removal of the holy houſe is ſo ſtedfaſtly maintained, that there is ſcarce an inhabitant in the

place but pretends to be deſcended from thoſe who ſaw it fixed where it now is; and I cannot paſs by in ſilence, that as we were going to it, the rabble flocked about us, to let us know, that we ought not to approach the holy place without confeſſion, and receiving the euchariſt, unleſs we would expoſe ourſelves to a ſudden death.

The holy houſe ſtands from eaſt to weſt, which is not very common in Italy. On the eaſt ſide is a little chimney with a fire place, over which is a niche, in which ſtands the image of the lady of Loretto, [which is five feet high, and is ſaid to be made of cedar with St. Luke's own hand; the infant on her right arms is alſo of cedar, but is not quite two palms in height, and in her left hand ſhe has a globe. The faces of both images have been laid over with a kind of ſilver lacker, which is now become quite black with the continual ſmoke of the lamps; ſo that the virgin Mary wants only a thick upper lip to make her a perfect Negro. The infant Jeſus is dreſſed in a flame coloured habit, and the virgin Mary in an azure robe; with which ſhe is ſo modeſtly covered, that no part of the ſtatue is to be ſeen, but its face and toes. The mantle hanging down her ſhoulders is of the ſame colour, powdered with golden ſtars: her hair hangs on her ſhoulders and part of her back. On her head is a triple crown of gold, enriched with pearls and diamonds, and another is on that of the child Jeſus; both the gift of Lewis XIII. king of France, and valued at 75,000 crowns. The gold chains, rings, and jewels, with which the image of the virgin is loaded, are frequently changed, and her apparel is not always the ſame; for on the ſeven days of paſſion week ſhe is dreſſed in deep mourning, and has daily a freſh ſuit. The niche in which the image ſtands, is adorned with ſeventy-one large Bohemian topazes. On the right-ſide of the image is an angel of caſt gold, profuſely enriched with diamonds and other

gems, with one knee inclined, offering a golden heart embelliſhed with large diamonds, and terminating in a flame of rubies and pearls: This piece is ſaid to have coſt 50,000 ducats, and was offered by Maria Beatrix Eleanora, queen to James II. of England, that by the interceſſion of the virgin, ſhe might conceive a ſon; and it is ſaid, that ſoon after ſhe had the ſon, who has made ſuch noiſe under the name of the pretender to the Britiſh crown. On the left ſide of the virgin is a ſilver angel, in the ſame poſture of reverence, offering her a golden heart crowned, and glittering with pearls, emeralds, and diamonds, likewiſe terminating in a flame. This was preſented by the mother of the ſame princeſs. On the right hand of the virgin is a ſilver angel, weighing 351 pounds, offering on a cuſhion of the ſame metal, an infant of maſſy gold, weighing twenty four pounds: This was preſented by Lewis XIII king of France, for the birth of the dauphin, afterwards Lewis XIV. who made a much greater ſtir in Europe, than the above mentioned pretender. Beſides, ſeven golden lamps are continually burning before the image; and among the thirty ſeven ſilver lamps with which the other part of the Caſa Santa is illuminated, four of them weigh 128 pounds each.] On both ſides of the niche are cupboards filled with the ancient ornaments of this ſtatue; and in a little window in the wall are ſome earthen diſhes, ſaid to be uſed by the holy family. Some of theſe veſſels have ſince been edged with gold: but that which was ſhewn us, was a porringer with a ſilver foot at the bottom, pretended to be made of a ſtrange earth, though it is no more than potters ware, the glazing of which is not ſo nicely taken off, but that ſome parts of it may be diſcovered by a curious eye: [but all theſe veſſels are now plated over with ſilver.] At the weſt end, juſt oppoſite to the image of our lady, is a window of about three feet ſquare, through which the angel entered. Here is alſo an altar, ſaid

to be made by the apoſtles themſelves, and a ſtone on which it is pretended that St. Peter celebrated maſs the firſt time. This is covered with ſilver, and kept as a precious relic under the altar, where they uſually officiate, and theſe are ſaid to have been tranſported hither at the ſame time with the houſe. The arch with which the holy houſe is covered being a modern fabric, I aſked what was become of the old roof, but they could tell me no tidings of it. The floor of the Santa Caſa is compoſed of ſquares of red and white marble; but this is not the old floor, becauſe that was left with the foundations at Nazareth.

[Notwithſtanding the mean appearance of the walls within, the outſide of the Caſa Santa is built of the whiteſt Carrara marble; but it is ſo contrived, that a ſmall interval is left between it and the brick wall of the Caſa Santa. This is partly to be attributed to the veneration entertained for thoſe ſuppoſed ſacred materials, aud partly from an apprehenſion that they would not have ſuffered the unhallowed marble to touch them; but would have repelled it with ſuch violence, as to endanger the lives of the workmen. It is about fifty feet in length, forty broad, and about the ſame height. It has four braſs doors of curious workmanſhip, and the two longer ſides are adorned with twelve Corinthian columns, while the two other ſides have eight. The intervals between the columns are filled with baſſo relievos finely executed, repreſenting the moſt remarkable incidents in the life of the bleſſed virgin. There are alſo ten ſtatues of the prophets, and above them the ten ſybils. Among the prophets on the ſouth-ſide, David with the head of Goliah at his feet, is greatly admired by all connoiſſeurs: and on the north-ſide, in a groupe repreſenting the eſpouſals of the virgin Mary, a boy playing with a dog, whilſt his mother, with a child in her arms looks at him with a countenance full of maternal tenderneſs

and complacency, cannot be viewed without pleaſure.

The treaſury infinitely ſurpaſſes the holy houſe in riches. It is a ſpacious hall, wainſcotted and the arched roof is divided by gilt compartments, beautified with excellent pictures. They were formerly glad to keep abundance of works in ſilver in ten large preſſes, with folding doors; but that metal is now laid up in great heaps, in private places, and perhaps for private uſes; and they are now filled with nothing but pure gold, jewels and ſuch veſſels and ornaments as are ſuppoſed to exceed the value of gold and gems. It would be a folly to attempt to deſcribe what exceeds imagination. The beſt idea I am able to give of this treaſure is, by obſerving that all people, princes, and ſtates who acknowledge the papal authority, have for theſe 400 years paſt endeavoured to outvie each other in the value of the preſents they make to this houſe. It has beſides a ſettled revenue, and vaſt tracts of land belonging to it, and the boxes in which the alms of the pilgrims are gathered furniſh thoſe who have the care of it with more money for making freſh purchaſes.

It is to be obſerved, that round the walls of the church that incloſe the holy houſe are a vaſt number of branch candleſticks to illuminate the whole fabric; and that the greateſt curioſity ſeems to be the proceſſions of thoſe devotees, who crawl round the holy houſe upon their knees, ſome five times, others ſeven, and others twelve times, all furniſhed with beads, and muttering Ave Marias and Pater Noſters; but as they all ſtrive to come neareſt the holy place, this ſometimes occaſions no ſmall confuſion, on which account it is never done but when their number is but ſmall. The chief reſorts of pilgrims is at Eaſter, and the virgin's nativity; and in ſome years they have here above 200,000 pilgrims during theſe two feſtivals. It is no unpleaſant ſight to obſerve the

caravans of theſe pilgrims of both ſexes, who generally come in ſocieties. For inſtance, a certain body of men join at Bologna, each of whom has a frock of coarſe linen, and a cawl of the ſame which covers his head, leaving only three holes for the eyes and the mouth. They all ride upon aſſes, and appear in different colours, each ſociety chooſing their own. But all are provided with beads, girdles, and pilgrims ſtaves; and each perſon has the arms of the ſociety either painted or wrought on the back or breaſt of his frock. The women appear as richly dreſſed as they are able, and fix to the bodies of their gowns a little pilgrim's ſtaff of the length of a hand, ſome of which are of gold and ſilver, adorned with gems and pearls, and others of ebony or ivory artificially wrought. The ladies commonly ride in calaſhes, attended by whole ſquadrons of pilgrims mounted on aſſes.

To proceed, we were conducted from the treaſury to a little arſenal, which has ſcarce any thing remarkable but ſome arms taken from the Turks, who about fifty years before made a deſcent upon the coaſt under the reign of Mahomet II and Selem, in order to plunder this ſacred place But it is pretended that they were ſtruck blind by the Virgin Mary, as they were endeavouring to break into the houſe. From the windows of the arſenal they ſhew that part of the ſea over which the houſe was carried by the angels; and a Jeſuit ſolemnly proteſted, that there ever ſince remains a white track on the water, and that he had often obſerved it.

From hence we went to the great wine cellar, ſtored with 150 tuns of excellent wine; and in the apothecaries office, we were ſhewn 145 earthen veſſels, which are highly eſteemed, becauſe they believe them to be painted by Raphael; on five of the largeſt are repreſented St. Paul and the four Evangeliſts, and the reſt are adorned with the hiſtories of ſaints, the metamorphoſes of Ovid, &c.

The city of Loretto is but ſmall, but it is pretty well fortified. In the great ſquare is a noble marble fountain adorned with ſeveral braſs ſtatues, and another erected by the citizens, in acknowledgement of certain privileges granted them by Pope Sixtus V. The inhabitants get their livelihood by making and ſelling medals, roſaries, ſanctified beads, images, Agnus Dei, and other things of the like nature.

Travelling from hence through Recanati, a ſmall city ſeated on the top of a hill, three miles from Loretto, I looked into the great church, where I could ſee nothing worth mentioning but the tomb of Pope Gregory XII. who was depoſed by the council of Piſa.

Ten miles farther, in a moſt fruitful country on the banks of Potenza, we paſſed through the ruins of the city formerly known by the name of Helvia Ricina, where we ſaw vaſt fragments of an amphitheatre built of ſtone and brick; then travelling on the ſame ſide of the river two miles among the hills, we came to Macerata, where we lodged that night. It being foul weather we could not ſtir abroad; but we were told by the inhabitants that it was a large and pleaſant place. The country between Mecerata and Tolentino lies all upon a level, but though extremely fruitful, it is very indifferently peopled. They here prop their vines with reeds, and plough with buffaloes, which are ſtronger than oxen and eaſier fed. Tolentino is ſeated on a riſing ground, but has nothing remarkable in it.

The next place we came to was Belfort, which is all built of ſtone; and a mile beyond it begins the province of Umbria, where we enter into the Appenines.

We now travelled forty miles among the rocks, and left the mountains near the village of Pala, from whence we diſcovered the plain of Oligno, which affords the moſt delightful proſpects from the hills, it being watered by many rivulets; it is well culti-

vated and improved, ſo that we had no ſooner quitted the mountains, than we found ourſelves ſuddenly in a moſt agreeable climate, where the almond-trees were already in bloſſom.

Having continued our journey for four miles in a continual eaſy deſcent, we came into a narrow level road, on one ſide of which runs a ſmall clear river, and at the end is ſituated Foligno, in the moſt fertile country in the world; and it has the reputation of carrying on a greater trade than moſt of the other cities in the eccleſiaſtical ſtate. This trade chiefly conſiſts in draperies, gold and ſilver lace, ſilk ſtuffs, and ſpices.

Soon after our leaving Foligno, we diſcovered on an eminence on the other ſide of the plain, the town of Montefalco, famous for the interment of St. Clara. There are here ſhewn three ſtones of the bigneſs of ſmall nuts, ſaid to be found in the heart of that ſaint, upon which the hiſtory of the paſſion is engraved.

Near the village of Peſignano, at the foot of a hill which incloſes the plain, ariſes a large ſpring through four ſeveral outlets from under the rock, which by their conjunction form a ſmall lake, from whence flows a rivulet which waters the adjacent country; and about 100 paces from the ſpring head near the road is a ſmall temple of the Corinthian order, called St. Salvatore, where the biſhop of Spoletto ſays maſs once a year.

In travelling from Peſignana to Spoletto, we proceeded ſeven miles through a level and populous country at the foot of the mountains. Spoletto, which is ſituated between the mountains beyond the above mentioned plain, is a poor, ill built, and thinly peopled city. The cathedral is celebrated for its height, which however, is not extraordinary. The pavement is inlaid with ſmall pieces of marble, and the pediment of the great portal is adorned with

very fine moſaic work, on a gold ground. The caſtle is erected on the higheſt part, and has nothing to boaſt of but its ſituation. About 500 paces without the city is the church, once a temple conſecrated to concord; and ſince called the chapel of the crucifix. Spoletto has alſo ſome remains of antiquity, as a triumphal arch half ruined, the fragments of an amphitheatre, and an aqueduct that joins the mountain of St. Francis to that of Spoletto: this is a Gothic work, and ſtill remains intire; its length is 350 paces, and its height from the bottom of the valley 230.

Three miles beyond Spolletto we paſſed Semma, the higheſt mountain hereabouts; and after we had travelled about five or ſix miles along the barren rocks, found the ſucceeding hills for four or five miles covered with laurels, wild olives, tamarinds, junipers, evergreen oaks, and ſeveral other trees and ſhrubs that never loſe their verdure.

At our approaching Terni, the mountains that incloſed us in a ſtreight paſſage upon the brink of a torrent, which runs at the bottom of the valley, opened by degrees into a great foreſt of olive-trees laden with fruit, that is generally ſuffered to hang till they drop off themſelves. From this wood of olives we travelled for a mile in an agreeable plain that brought us to Terni, which is ſituated upon the river Nera, in a moſt fruitful country. This city is not ſo large as Spoletto, but is much more populous. A conſiderable trade is here carried on in oil, and we were told that during ſix months of the year they make a hundred charges of oil every day, each charge weighing ſix hundred pounds, which is generally ſold at the rate of twelve Engliſh crowns. By an inſcription on the porch of the ſeminary near the cathedral it appears, that this city may contend for antiquity with Rome itſelf.

About three miles from Terni is the famous water-fall of Monte del Marmore, to which there

is a very rocky aſcent, that obliged us frequently to alight from our horſes. By the way, we obſerved on the ſouth ſide of the mountain ſeveral corners, in which the rigour of the winter ſeaſon is never felt, and in ſome places ſaw abundance of jeſſamines, laurels, and myrtles, that were as freſh then, though it was February, as they are with us in April. But to return to the above water fall: the river Valerio riſes among the mountains twelve or thirteen miles from the place where the water falls down; at about nine miles from its head ſprings it runs into the lake of Luco, and thence continuing its current with a much larger ſtream than before, runs through a plain on the top of a mountain, till coming to its edge, it falls with great force down a craggy rock three hundred paces high, into the concavity of another rock underneath it, againſt which the waters break with ſuch violent agitation, that they riſe like a cloud twice as high as they fall, and occaſion a perpetual rain in all the adjacent parts. The repercuſſion of the ſun beams in this cloud produces an infinite number of rainbows, according to the various rebounding and ſpirting of the watering particles, which afford an amazing proſpect. At laſt theſe waters gather into an abyſs formed by this continual fall, and thence breaking forth with incredible force through the crevices of ſeveral rocks, continue their courſe a little farther with a murmuring noiſe, and at laſt run into the little river Nera, which is much enlarged by the acceſſion of this ſtream.

From Terni to Narni we travelled ſeven miles through a plain and fertile country, and the laſt-mentioned town affords a pretty good proſpect from the adjacent hills; but we found ourſelves deceived on entering it, it being in a manner deſtitute of inhabitants, with narrow dirty ſtreets, ſo uneven that we could not go five ſteps without aſcending or deſcending; and their paper windows have a very

beggarly appearance. I however took notice of ſome handſome braſs fountains. A little before we entered the city, we obſerved the ruins of a bridge ſaid to have been built under the reign of Auguſtus, which is worthy of admiration both on account of its height and ſtructure, for after having joined the mountain of Spoletto to another neighbouring mountain, it ends in the high road towards Peruſa. It is remarkable that the vaſt pieces of marble, of which this bridge is formed, are joined together without either cement or iron-work. It has four or five arches, of which only one remains entire; the top of the mould of the largeſt being broken. I was credibly informed, that this arch is 170 feet in extent, which, if ſo, far exceeds the celebrated Rialto.

We had no ſooner left Narni, than we found ourſelves again among the mountains, and thus travelling on for eight miles, we came to the town of Otricoli. Soon after we paſſed the Tyber, over a ſtone bridge founded by Sixtus V. and embelliſhed by Urban VIII. We came very late to Citta Caſtellana, which we left early the next morning. Near Regnano we found the old Via Flaminia, with its pavement intire, of which we had perceived no foot-ſteps ſince our leaving Rimini, whither it formerly extended. Having dined at Caſtle Nuova, which, as well as Regnano, is an inconſiderable place, we continued our journey to Rome, through an infinite number of ancient ruins; but moſt of the country lay untilled, and is almoſt deſtitute of inhabitants. Having repaſſed the Tyber by the Pons Milvius, now called Ponte Molle, we came upon a paved way that brought us between many gardens and ſummer ſeats, to the famous city of Rome.

Having rambled two or three days about Rome, we were invited by ſome good company to haſte our intended journey for Naples, which is eight days travelling from Rome. About twelve miles from

this city we came to Marina, a large town now belonging to Prince Colonna, formerly known by the name of Villa Mariano.

From Marino we aſcended a rocky mountain, covered with woods and abounding in buffaloes. We then rode near an hour on the banks of the lake of Gaſtel Gundolfo, and about five miles after we had left the lake, diſcovered the ſea at the bottom of the mountain, and on our right hand the city called Citta de la Vigna, ſituated on a ſmall hill. This was the ancient Lanuvium, a municipal city, which gave birth to Antoninus Pius, and not the Lavinum of Æneas, as is commonly believed.

Late at night we reached Velitri, a little city ſeated on a hill, and ſurrounded by a wall. It was anciently ſo conſiderable a place as to dare to oppoſe Rome itſelf, though it now makes a very indifferent figure. The people are here generally of opinion, that Auguſtus was a native of this city, and one of the ſervants of the inn in which we lodged was ſo communicative as to tell us ſo; but being aſked who that Auguſtus was, he anſwered, he was the firſt Chriſtian Emperor. Indeed nothing is more common than for the Italians of this place to canonize all the illuſtrious men of antiquity, whether Chriſtians or Pagans. Auguſtus was indeed certainly born at Rome under the conſulate of Cicero and Antony, but his family deduced its original from Velitri. In the midſt of the market-plance is a curious brazen ſtatue of Pope Urban VIII ſitting, as generally all the ſtatue of popes are repreſented, I ſuppoſe, to denote their ſuperiority over other princes.

On our deſcending from the hill of Velitri, we took notice of many caves dug on purpoſe to keep their wines cool; after which we travelled for fifteen miles through a poor country to the foot of a mountain, on the top of which ſtands the little city of Lermonetta, built upon the ruins of the old Lera: four miles farther we ſaw on our left ſome ancient

ruins, which they told us were the remains of the place called by St. Paul, The three Taverns; and on our right, the cape called Monte Circello, which ſome ſuppoſe to have been formerly an iſland, and that here the jealous Circe changed her rival Scylla the miſtreſs of Glaucus, into a ſea monſter, and Ulyſſes' companions into hogs. At a ſmall diſtance farther we ſaw the city of Letia, ſeated on a mountain; but its ancient fame for the goodneſs of its wine is now loſt, the mountain producing none. It is true, the woods, wherewith theſe mountains are almoſt covered, produce abundance of trees called Ficus Indica, ſome of which grow up to the height of thirty or forty feet, with trunks as thick as the body of a man: laurels and myrtles grow in great plenty in the hedges, and abundance of orange-trees in the open fields.

At the village of Caſa Nuova, inſtead of taking boat upon the lake, we continued our journey by land; and turning to the left entered into a valley, which brought us to the mountain and city of Piporno. In our way thither I obſerved a church-yard planted with orange-trees, which is not uſual in Italy, where all people of faſhion have their chapel or vault in ſome church or convent, and the poorer ſort are interred in ſome private corner, without the cities: beſides, whenever they have church-yards it is uſual to plant them with only cypreſſes, pines, or yews.

Piporno is a modern city, built near the place where anciently ſtood Privernum, the metropolis of the Volſci, and the reſidence of king Metabus, father to the famous Camilla. The biſhopric of Piporno is on account of its poverty united to that of Terracina, and the biſhop's chair is kept in the choir of the cathedral. In St. Benedict's church they ſhew an image of our lady, which they ſay was made by St. Luke, and could not be burnt when Piporno was deſtroyed by fire. On the hill of Piporno, called Colle Roſco, lilies and daffodils grow in great plenty

and this hill alſo affords a peculiar fine earth for potter's ware. From its top may be ſeen a little city called Mayenca, near which is a lake, whoſe waters riſe conſiderably two days before rain.

From Piporno we travelled over ſandy hills covered with various ſorts of ever-green ſhrubs, and afterwards got into a wood where we ſaw abundance of cork-trees, much reſembling an ever-green oak; and indeed, I believe, this tree to be a kind of oak, ſince it bears acorns. It has this peculiar quality, that the more it is ſtripped of its bark, the ſtronger it grows, and ſoon produces a new one.

Soon after our leaving the wood we went to ſee the abbey of Foſſa Nuova, ſaid to be built upon the ruins of the Forum Appii, about 300 paces from the high road; and about ten miles from thence we began to diſcover ſome remains of the ancient high road called Via Appia, from its being made by Appius Claudius. In my opinion theſe famous roads are more ſurprizing than moſt other pieces of antiquity, conſidering that ſo many fragments of them ſtill remain, though ſuch an infinite number of paſſengers, horſes, and carriages have inceſſantly paſſed over them for many ages. The ſtones of which this pavement is compoſed, are not all of the ſame ſize, they are of a reddiſh colour not unlike ruſty iron, very hard, and ten or twelve inches thick; thoſe of the largeſt ſize are generally above two feet over, and the leaſt not leſs than one; notwithſtanding the great difference in their ſhape and figure, they have been ſo nicely joined, that where the pavement is intire, the point of a ſword cannot be thruſt between them. The conſular ways had on each ſide borders of the ſame ſtone raiſed about two feet above the reſt, and between theſe borders, the true breadth of theſe highways ought to be taken; according to which I found the two ways Via Appia and Via Flaminia 20 palms broad, which is 13 feet 8 inches Engliſh meaſure. In ſome places there are ruts made by the

wheels of carriages, three or four inches deep: in other reſpects the pavement is even, without any viſible impreſſions made by the horſe-ſhoes. We were told that the foundation of this pavement was another thick layer of ſtone, fixed on a bed of ſand that keeps it from ſinking. All along the road to Terracina, are to be ſeen the ruins of many ancient monuments, formerly erected for the ſake of ornament. Terracina, or Trachina, ſo called from its ſituation upon a rock of difficult acceſs, is the Anxur of the ancients; but it is now a poor and ill peopled place, ſituated in a deſolate country. From thence we continued our journey over the hills covered with cork-trees, with the marſhes and the ſea on our right till we arrived at Fondi. In our way about three miles beyond Terracina, we ſaw an old wall, which we were told was the boundary between the eccleſiaſtical ſtate and the kingdom of Naples.

Fondi is ſituated in a flat country, near a lake that bears the ſame name, and extends itſelf among the marſhes, between the hills and the ſea. The eels of this lake are very famous for their extraordinary bigneſs. The city was entirely ruined in 1534 by Hariaden Barbaroſſa, admiral of the Turkiſh fleet, the hiſtory of which is painted in the church of the Annunciata. Fondi is paved with ſtones taken from the Via Appia, but they are not near ſo exactly joined. Not far from the caſtle they ſhew a garden, which they ſay belonged to Cicero.

The Dominicans preſerve, with great veneration, the chamber and auditory of Thomas Aquinas: as alſo an old orange tree, which he is ſaid to have planted; but, as he died in 1273, this muſt certainly be the oldeſt orange tree, that ever yet exiſted. They told us ſtrange things of this tree, among the reſt, that its leaves are of a quite different ſhape from thoſe of other orange-trees, but we could not perceive the leaſt difference.

After we had left Fondi, we travelled for ten miles upon the old pavement of Mola, among the mountains. Near Itru, a ſmall city ſeated upon a rock, about ſix miles from Fondi, I took notice of ſome large trees called ſouſelle, the fruit of which is a cod of half a foot long, of the thickneſs of a bean cod, which when dry taſtes like honey or manna. The true name of this tree is carobba.

Mola is a ſmall city ſeated upon the ſea ſhore, where are to be ſeen vaſt heaps of marble, the ruins of Formiæ, once a magnificent palace built by Antiphates, king of the Leſtrygons. The air is here extremely ſweet, and the hills on the gulph between Cajeta and Mola produce moſt excellent fruit and vines, and the ſea abounds with plenty of fiſh. We were ſhewn the ruins of an old palace which we were told belonged to Cicero, and the various pieces of moſaic work, which are plainly to be diſtinguiſhed in ſeveral places, ſufficiently prove that it was no ordinary ſtructure; and we were aſſured with great confidence, that inſcriptions have been found which make it plainly appear to be Cicero's.

It blowing then a very briſk gale, we were at a ſtand, whether we ſhould venture over the little gulph, which is four miles broad, to Gaieta, which is ſeated on the very point of the cape, directly oppoſite to Mola; but having at laſt reſolved on the paſſage, we arrived at Gaieta, which is of a pretty large extent, and ſtrong, both by art and nature, from its being placed upon a high rock of difficult acceſs. It has alſo a very good harbour.

We were conducted from hence to the cleft mountain called La Spaccata, near the ſea-ſhore, which is ſeparated from the top quite down to the bottom, where it is about four or five feet aſunder, but increaſes in breadth, as it advances upwards. The concavities in one ſide, and the protuberances on the other directly oppoſite, ſeem evident marks of

its being really disjoined; and this, they say, happened at the time when our Saviour gave up the ghost. Upon one of the insides of this rock they shew the print of the hand of an incredulous person, the rock, as they pretend, softening as he touched it. As this rock is famous for the pilgrimages made to it, there are small steps that lead down to a little chapel dedicated to the holy trinity. The curate would have given us some pieces of the rock we had broke off with a hammer; but finding us unwilling to take charge of such baggage, seemed offended at our refusal.

We thence proceeded to the cathedral, where we were shewn among other antiquities, a pretended pillar of Solomon's temple. There is also a very ancient vessel of white marble, said to have been found at Mola, which now serves for a font in the baptistry. It is a most curious piece, and admirably preserved. It in shape resembles a bell, supported by four lions, which are also of white marble. The basso relievo is greatly admired, especially a little Bacchus rising out of Jupiter's thigh, put by Mercury into the hands of Ino. All round it are placed Satyrs and Bacchanals, and among the rest a Faunus playing on two pipes at once.

After a short stay at Gaieta, we returned to Mola, and then proceeded to Capua, which is seated upon the banks of the Volturno, the chief river in the kingdom of Naples. There are in this city various inscriptions, and pieces of marble brought thither from the ancient Capua, which was situated at about two miles distance; and the town called St. Mary's was built out of the ruins of this once celebrated city. To these ruins we paid a visit, when the many little temples, the remains of two amphitheatres, one of the gates, and a great number of broken pillars, and other magnificent fragments of architecture, appeared undeniable proofs of its former grandeur.

The country between Capua and Naples is perhaps the moſt fruitful ſoil in the world, whence they have given it the name of Campagna Stellata, to ſignify the benign influence of the ſtars upon this country, as if fertility proceeded wholly from thence.

The city of Naples is large and very populous; its figure is ſomewhat irregular, and its circuit, according to the computation of ſeveral perſons who have walked round the wall, is about nine miles without including the ſuburbs, which amounting to nine more, make the whole circumference eighteen. It is all over paved with ſquare ſtones of the ſame ſize. The ſtreets are generally ſtraight and broad, and the houſes lofty, flat roofed and uniform, in which it exceeds the buildings of London, Paris, Venice, and even Rome itſelf: all which have very fine buildings, but theſe are mixed with a great number of ordinary houſes, while thoſe of Naples are in general very handſome. To the ſouth it is incloſed by a ſmall bay, and to the north by very fertile hills that riſe by an eaſy aſcent into Campagna Felice. To the eaſt lies a plain leading to mount Veſuvius, and on the weſt ſide the high town, where are the Chartreux, and the caſtle of St. Eraſmus, the aſcent to which affords a very fine proſpect. Beſides, the many noble palaces, the three caſtles, the arſenal, and the magazines for their galleys, are all very remarkable ſtructures. The whole city is adorned with a conſiderable number of fountains, among which three are extremely grand and beautiful; but the churches, both for their number and magnificence, ſurpaſs all the other buildings; their frontiſpieces, portals, chapels, altars, and tombs being the moſt exquiſite pieces of architecture that art ever produced. They are filled with pictures, ſculptures, and gold and ſilver veſſels; and their arches, wainſcots, and walls are covered with the moſt precious kinds of marble, with compartments of baſſo relievo, or of gilt joiner's work, and beautified with the performances of the

greateſt painters. In ſhort, wherever we turned our eyes, we were dazzled with jaſper, porphyry, and Moſaic work of all ſorts, and the moſt exquiſite productions of art.

The church of the Jeſuits is a very fine edifice embelliſhed with magnificent ornaments, from top to bottom, and the painting of the dome is the work of Lantranc. That of St. Mary of the Annunciata is not inferior to it, and the famous hoſpital, which has 200,000 ducats annual revenue, is exceeding rich, as are thoſe of St. Philip of Neri, St. Maria La Nuova, St. Severin, St. Paul, St Dominic, the church and convent of mount Olivet, the church of the Holy Apoſtle, and many others, are extremely beautiful, and have their veſtries and treaſuries crouded with riches. I remember that two Theatines, as they were conducting us into their church of the Holy Apoſtles, made heavy complaints of the poverty of their order, they having no poſſeſſions, and not being permitted to beg like the mendicants; but having ſhewn us the magnificence of their church, and fourteen large cupboards in the veſtry filled with gold and ſilver veſſels, and other things of great value, we had ſufficient reaſon to believe, that they had no great occaſion to go a begging: but in Italy, all monks are at once miſers, and mendicants.

The ſpacious convent of the Chartreux of St Martin, is every where full of curious and magnificent pieces, and the church, though none of the largeſt, is a very fine one. The monks, who were our conductors, aſſured us that under one priorate, above 500,000 ducats were beſtowed among them in ſilver plate, ſculptures, and pictures. The nativity of Chriſt is a moſt exquiſite piece done by Guido: the four pictures of the laſt ſupper are by the hands of Eſpagnolet, Hannibal Caracci, Paul Veroneſe, and Maſſimo. Beſides which, there are many other pieces of great value, and in particular the famous crucifix of Michael Angelo, done, as it is ſaid, to the life

after a peaſant, who for that purpoſe was murdered by the painter; it is of wood, and not above half a foot high. It is obſervable that the head is upright, which does not look very like the poſture of an expiring perſon. The pavement of the cloyſter, which is 100 paces ſquare, is of marble inlaid in boughs and ſuch like ornaments, and the four galleries are ſupported by ſixty pillars, each of one entire piece of the beſt white marble of Carara. Every friar has his own chamber, cloſet, library, and little garden, and the prior's lodgings are fit for the reception of a prince.

From this aſcent there is the moſt delightful proſpect that can be well conceived; for at one view may be ſeen the ſea and many iſlands, and particularly that of Caprea, and the famous ſeraglio of Tiberius; as likewiſe the whole city of Naples, with its three caſtles, the harbour, mole and lanthern; and along the ſea-ſhore, the creeks, capes, and a great number of villages on the ſea ſide. On the other hand are the gardens and fertile hills leading into Campagna Felice, and at a greater diſtance the ſmoke of mount Veſuvius.

The city of Naples having ſuffered many revolutions, has loſt the greateſt part of its antiquities. However, in the front of St. Paul Major is the frontiſpiece of the ancient temple of Apollo, afterwards dedicated to Caſtor and Pollux, by one Tiberius Julius Tarſus, whoſe name is ſtill to be ſeen on one of the friezes of this frontiſpiece. The portico reſts upon eight twiſted pillars of the Corinthian order, and the pediment is adorned with baſſo relievo, repreſenting the pagan deities. Though columns of the Reſtituta are ſaid to have been taken from the ancient Temple of Neptune. Here are alſo to be ſeen the ruins of an amphitheatre, and an ancient ſtatue of the Nile, upon a crocodile.

The generality of the Neapolitans are a very wicked generation, which has doubtleſs occaſioned the proverb: "That Naples is a Paradiſe inhabited by devils."*

In our way from the ſuburbs of Naples we ſaw the hill known by the name of Pauſilypus. It ſtands in a delightful ſituation, is extremely well cultivated, and is planted with moſt excellent vines, and adorned with many fine ſeats. Through this hill is cut a ſurprizing paſſage, called the grotto of Pozzuolo. It is in ſome places cut through the rock, and in others through the ſand. Its whole length is near a mile, its height between thirty and forty feet, and its breadth affords an eaſy paſſage for two coaches. The duſt which is here raiſed by the paſſengers, is very troubleſome, to avoid which, we covered our faces with our handkerchiefs, and to prevent their running againſt each other, the people cry as they paſs along, To the right, or to the left.

A little beyond Pauſilypus, lies the lake of Agnano, between two hills. It is almoſt round, and is two miles in circumference. The water is very clear, and without any ill taſte; and though it ſeems continually boiling, produces not the leaſt heat, but abounds with great plenty of tench and eels. Near the banks of this lake, are the two celebrated caves known by the names of the baths of St. German, and the grotto Del Cani, or grotto of the dog †.

From hence we deſcended towards Puzzoli, which was anciently a famous city, as is evident from the vaſt number of ſtatcly ruins ſtill to be ſeen there,

* See a farther account of Naples, and a deſcription of the Volcano of Mount Veſuvius in Mr. Addiſon's Travels.

† See a very curious account of this grotto in Mr. Addiſon's Travels,

though at preſent it is but an inconſiderable place. Near St. James's church are the ruins of a magnificent amphitheatre, the arena whereof was 172 feet long and 88 broad, built of hewn ſtone. Here we were told that St. Januarius, with ſix other Chriſtians, being thrown down before the beaſts, they adored inſtead of devouring them: but not long after they had their heads cut off near Solfatara, in the place where the church dedicated to St. Januarius now ſtands.

Cloſe to the amphitheatre there ſtill remain vaſt ruins, which are almoſt buried under ground, thought by ſome to be the remains of a labyrinth, though I am rather inclined to believe it a fiſh-pond like the Piſcina Mirabilis. The cathedral is built not only upon the ruins of Jupiter's temple, but alſo of part of its materials. Between the city and amphitheatre are alſo the ruins of the temple of Diana; and in tempeſtuous weather the ſea throws on ſhore, near the convents of the Dominicans of Jeſus Maria, many marks of the ancient magnificence of Puzzoli, as cornelians, agates, jaſpers, amethyſts, and ſeveral other ſorts of ſtones, upon which are engraved a variety of figures. The ſand of Puzzoli uſed in building is much commended by Vitruvius and Pliny, and if mixed with a certain ſort of mortar, becomes as hard as marble even in the ſea itſelf.

As we paſſed along in our boat to go to the lake of Lucrin, at two miles diſtance from Puzzoli, we had an opportunity of taking a full view of the famous arches, generally ſuppoſed to be the remains of a bridge built by Caligula, from Baiæ to Puzzoli, whence it is called by the inhabitants Caligula's bridge; but if we attend to the words of Suetonius, nothing can be more evident than that Caligula's bridge was not formed of ſtones or bricks, but of boats, and that theſe arches belonged to a mole, by

which the harbour was defended from the violence of the tempeſtuous waves.

The lake of Lucrin, once ſo famous, is now no more than a pond of about a quarter of a mile long, and 100 paces broad. It is about 60 or 80 leagues from the ſea, though it anciently joined it: for Pliny ſays, they were obliged to make uſe of many engines to ſeperate them: and this lake, the waters of which are ſtill ſalt, was highly celebrated among the ancients for its oyſters. In the night between the 19th and 20th of September, the earth here produced a mountain, which has ever ſince retained the name of Monte Nuovo, or the New Mountain. This was attended with a moſt dreadful earthquake, that put all the neighbouring country under a great conſternation: for the ſea recoiled, many houſes and churches were burnt or ſwallowed up, and a vaſt number of men and beaſts periſhed at the production of this new mountain; which thoſe who have meaſured its perpendicular height, ſay, is 400 toiſes*, and its circumference is three miles.

The lake of Avernus is not above a mile from the lake of Lucrin; but what the ancients have ſaid of its deadly vapours is not at preſent true; the birds flying over it without the leaſt detriment; but Strabo attributes the caſe of this fatal ſtench to the thickneſs and number of the trees, with which Avernus was ſurrounded; and ſays, that theſe being removed by Auguſtus, the air became pure and ſweet; and the ruins at preſent about the Avernus plainly demonſtrate that the adjacent hills were well peopled after the above trees were cut down.

Not far from hence is the ſubterraneous paſſage and cave, commonly known by the name of the Sybils grotto. The chief entrance of which is ſaid to have been near Cuma; four miles from Avernus; but it is all filled up on that ſide. We went in to it with eve-

* A toiſe is ſix feet.

ry one of us a lighted torch in our hands. The paſſage is on both ſides overgrown with briars and thiſtles; after we proceeded 250 paces in a ſtraight line, we met with a ſquare grotto on the right, and 70 or 80 paces farther, a little cell of 15 feet long, and eight or nine broad, where we perceived that the roof was formerly painted and the walls adorned with Moſaic work. This in my opinion, might be ſuch another paſſage as the grotto of Pauſilypus, and the painted cell appropriated to ſome deity.

From this cave we took a turn to Baiæ, which in ancient times was the moſt pleaſant and magnificent place in the world. Horace, Martial, Joſephus, Seneca, Albinus, and others, have left ſuch a character of it, as would be a ſufficient proof of this, were not the ruins of many temples, palaces, and baths which are to be ſeen round the bay, and even in the ſea itſelf, undeniable proofs of its former grandeur. The bay of Baiæ is extremely pleaſant, the air remarkably ſweet, and the adjoining hills with eaſy aſcents charming beyond what can be expreſſed or imagined; but alas! the vaſt number of ſummer ſeats which once adorned the neighbourhood of this city are now nothing but heaps of ruins and a diſmal ſolitude. At a ſmall diſtance is a great heap of ruins, commonly called Mercato di Sabbato, which ſome pretend to be the remains of a Circus. At the ſea-ſide are the ruins of the country houſe of Hortenſius; and near his fiſh pond, the remains of a temple ſaid to have been dedicated to Diana. Not many years ſince a moſt noble ſtatue of Venus, twice as big as the life, holding a globe in her right hand, and three oranges in her left, was dug up in this neighbourhood.

We returned from Baiæ to Puzzoli in a boat, and thence went on horſeback to Naples, from whence we returned to Rome.

The city of Rome, before the reign of Servius Tullus, contained no more than ſeven hills, but

afterwards being much enlarged, it covered no leſs than twelve. Theſe however, were not large mountains but ſmall hills, the aſcent to which is ſcarce diſcernible. The preſent walls of Rome are nearly the ſame with thoſe erected by Aurelian, and are not above thirteen miles in circumference, and this was the largeſt compaſs Rome ever had, though its ſuburbs extended perhaps far beyond them. But at preſent there is not above one third part of what is incloſed within the walls inhabited, the reſt being either gardens or ruins. Moſt of the houſes are of brick, plaiſtered over on the outſide; the roofs are ridged, and at the top form a very obtruſe angle; but neither the common houſes nor ſtreets are beautiful; the pavements are narrow, and not very neat.

The firſt proſpect of this great city does not, therefore, ſurprize the traveller; but the longer he ſtays in it, the more frequent opportunities he will find of obſerving ſomething worthy his attention.

Two days after our return from Naples, we went to take a view of the Minerva; where we happened to ſee the ceremony of making either wives or nuns of 350 maidens; the funds for which was raiſed by ſixty charitable gentlemen. This ceremony is annually performed on the feſtival of the Annunciation, when the pope and the ſacred college meeting at the Minerva, the pope, or in his abſence ſome cardinal, ſays high maſs, and all the girls confeſs and receive the ſacrament. Theſe girls are clothed in white ſerge, and have veils over their heads, with only one opening for them to ſee through; and thus dreſſed, they proſtrate themſelves at the feet of the pope or cardinal who officiates, near whom ſtands an officer with a baſon full of little white bags, each of which contains either a bill of fifty crowns for ſuch maidens as chuſe marriage, or a bill of 100 crowns for thoſe who are willing to embrace a

religious life. Each maiden, having declared her choice, goes off to make room for another, when thoſe who have choſen a religious life are crowned with garlands of flowers, and have the firſt place aſſigned them in the proceſſion; but at that time there were no more than thirty-two of theſe among the 350.

Having taken a full view of the Minerva, where we ſaw the famous ſtatue of Chriſt embracing the croſs, performed by Michael Angelo, we went to the beautiful Borgheſe palace, the portico of which is ſupported by ninety-ſix antique pillars of Egyptian granite. In the lower rooms alone are no leſs than 1700 original pictures by the beſt maſters in Europe, among which that of Venus blindfolding Cupid, done by Titian, far excels the reſt. The picture of Paul V. in moſt exquiſite Moſaic work is reputed to contain above a million of pieces. We alſo here ſaw a crucifix of the ſame ſize of that ſhewn us by the Carthuſians at Naples; and they aſſured us, that this is the celebrated original of Michael Angelo.

[Of the temple of Concord eight oriental granite columns of the Ionic order are ſtill to be ſeen towards mount Palatine. It was built as a memorial of the reconcilement of the people and the nobility of Rome; and on the architrave is a Latin inſcription, intimating that this temple, having been deſtroyed by fire, was rebuilt by order of the ſenate and people.]

The pantheon, which from its circular figure is called the Rotunda, was dedicated by Boniface IV. to the virgin and all the martyrs; and by another pope to all the ſaints, as well as the martyrs, and is one of the moſt beautiful and intire pieces of antiquity in Italy. [Several of the niches are ſtill remaining that formerly contained the ſtatues of the gods. The outſide of the building is of Tivoli free-ſtone, and within it is incruſted with marble. The

roof of the pantheon is a round dome, without pillars or windows, the diameter of which is 144 feet. Though this church has no windows, but only a round aperture in the centre of the dome, it is very light in every part. The pavement is made of large ſquare ſtones and porphyry, ſloping all round towards the centre, where the rain water falling down through the aperture on the top of the dome, is conveyed away by a proper drain, covered with a ſtone full of holes. Eight altars are placed round this church, among which the high altar is of porphry. The colonade in the front, which conſiſts of ſixteen pillars of granite, thirty-ſeven feet high, excluſive of the pedeſtals and capitals, each cut out of a ſingle block, cannot be viewed without aſtoniſhment. The entrance of the church is adorned with columns forty feet high, and the architrave is formed of a ſingle piece of granite. On the left hand, on entering the portico, is a large antique vaſe of Numidian marble; and in the area before the church is a fountain, with an antique baſon of porphyry.] The columns of the portico are each of one piece of granite of the Corinthian order.

St. Peter's church has the reputation of being the largeſt and moſt magnificent church in the univerſe. Wherever we turn our eyes, we meet with nothing but gilt work, excellent pictures, and braſs and marble ſtatues, diſpoſed in ſuch admirable order, that their multitude does not cauſe the leaſt confuſion. The inſide of the dome is adorned with moſaic work, and the arch of the nave of a fine clay, with compartments of raiſed work gilt. The high altar ſtands directly under the dome, and the pavilion is ſupported by four wreathed pillars of braſs, beautified with foliages and bees, the arms of Pope Urban VIII. On each of theſe columns ſtands a braſs angel ſeventeen feet high, and on the cornice are groups of children playing and walking up and down. The whole height amounts to ninety feet,

Under this altar is a pair of ſtairs leading to the chapel under ground, where St. Peter's body is ſaid to be kept, and two other ſacred ſubterraneous places belonging to the church. At the entrance down theſe ſtairs, I ſaw a pope's bull engraven in marble, forbidding any woman to enter, except on Whitſun-Monday, when mên are not allowed entrance under pain of being anathematized. This place is very dark, and we were told by the ſexton, that theſe prohibitions were occaſioned by an amorous intrigue.

The double row of pillars, which amount to 286, and form a ſemi-circular portico on each ſide before the church, has a ſurpriſing appearance; and the two magnificent fountains are well worth the obſervation of a curious traveller, as well as a noble obeliſk that ſtands in the middle, which conſiſts of one intire piece of granite ſeventy-eight feet high, without reckoning either the pedeſtal or the croſs placed on its top. We have given a view of the church, becauſe it is the moſt celebrated in Europe; and near it is ſeen a part of the Vatican.

The palace of the Vatican, ſo called from the god Vaticanus, who delivered his oracles here, is conveniently ſituated by St. Peter's church, but by its being too near, it takes off abundance of the proſpect. This palace is not one intire regular ſtructure, but a compoſition of many beautiful parts, ſaid to contain 12,500 halls, chambers and cloſets.

The Belvedere, belonging to the Vatican, received its name from its delightful proſpect. We were here ſo ſurprized with the moſt excellent pieces of Raphael, Michael Angelo, Julio Romano, and other great maſters, that we neglected to take notice of all the other perfections of this beautiful edifice. I have often with great delight ſeen the moſt curious perſons in Rome gaze with amazement upon the hiſtory of Atila, the work of the incomparable Ra-

phael, and admire its beauty and perfections. But ſome nice judges have found fault with the dreſs in which Raphael has thought fit to repreſent Leo I. and two cardinals, as they have the very habits worn by them at preſent, though it is evident from the hiſtory of thoſe times, that Pope Conſtantine, and the other popes 250 years after Leo I. wore plain camblet garments. Thus Titian has painted roſaries at the girdles of the two diſciples who met Chriſt on his way to Emaus, and Roſſo has repreſented monks in their habits, as gueſts at the virgin Mary's wedding. I remember that at Soeſt, a town of Weſtphalia, there is a picture of our Saviour's laſt ſupper painted in the glaſs window of a church, in which the painter has put a gammon of bacon, inſtead of the paſchal lamb; nay, even Michael Angelo, in his moſt celebrated piece of the laſt judgment has introduced many indecent poſtures, and even the ferry-man Charon with his boat full of ſouls.

In the hall where the pope gives audience to ambaſſadors, are three large pictures, repreſenting the hiſtory of the Admiral Coligny. Among the curious ſtatues in the gardens of Belvedere, there is one which is invaluable: it is a marble ſtatue of one entire ſtone of Laocoon, the work of Ageſander, Polydorus, and Athenadorus, three ancient Grecian ſculptors.

In the arſenal, we are told that the pope conſtantly preſerves arms for 40,000 foot and 20,000 horſe, but I am ſure that there were not half enough for that number, and thoſe very indifferent. The pope may ſecretly retire from the Vatican into the caſtle of St. Angelo, through a gallery built by Alexander VI. In the little arſenal belonging to this caſtle we ſaw, beſides the papal triple crown, an armoury filled with prohibited arms, taken for the moſt part from ſuch unfortunate perſons as were executed for having them in their poſſeſſion. Among the reſt they ſhewed us the piſtols of Ranuccio Farneſe, the ſon and heir

of Alexander Farneſe, duke of Parma, and governor of the Netherlands, who uſually carrying piſtols about him, contrary to the expreſs orders of Sixtus V. that rigorous pope ordered Ranuccio to be ſeized in his palace, as he was going to deſire an audience of him, and to be carried priſoner to the caſtle of St. Angelo. Cardinal Farneſe, Ranuccio's uncle, left no ſtone unturned to procure his liberty, but in vain, for one evening, while the Cardinal was ſoliciting the pope for his releaſe, he privately ſent orders to the governor of the caſtle of St. Angelo to have him beheaded. The pope, not doubting that his orders had been immediately executed, and willing to make a ſhew of obliging the Cardinal, gave him a new order about eleven o'clock, injoining the governor of the caſtle to ſet Ranuccio at liberty. The cardinal, who knew nothing of the firſt order, made all the haſte he could thither, but was greatly ſurprized at finding his nephew with a confeſſor, preparing for preſent death, which had alone delayed his execution; when being overjoyed at his coming at this critical conjuncture, he haſtily ſhewed the governor his new order, and taking him away, Ranuccio took poſt immediately, and by that means ſaved his life.

[The ſteps that form the aſcent to the capital are low, but of a very extraordinary breadth, and at the bottom on each ſide is a ſphynx of Egyptian marble, ejecting water. On the left is a ſtatue, reſembling Minerva, and thought to repreſent Rome; the drapery of this ſtatue is much admired. On the top of the aſcent are two large antique ſtatues of Caſtor and Pollux on horſeback, facing each other. In a direct line with them on each ſide is an ancient trophy, generally thought to be raiſed for Caius Marius, and fixed on new pedeſtals. In the ſame line on each ſide is a marble ſtatue of Conſtantine the great. Farther on is an ancient mile-ſtone, and oppoſite to it, for the ſake of regularity, is another

antique pillar, with a globular urn on the top, in which Trajan's aſhes are ſaid to have been depoſited. In the middle of this ſquare, Paul III. erected an equeſtrian ſtatue of the Roman emperor Marcus Aurelius Antonius, which formerly ſtood in St. John Lateran. The pedeſtal is very grand, it being the work of Michael Angelo. The owl on the horſe's head is an emblem of the emperor's wiſdom and vigilance, that bird being ſacred to Minerva. Theſe ſtatues, with the ſteps up the aſcent, all placed there by different popes, give this place a grand appearance. In the place where the ancient capital ſtood is a very magnificent palace, the roof of which is flat, and adorned with many ſtatues of illuſtrious perſons among the Romans. In the front of the building is a high tower with the ſtatue of religion erected on the top. The double flight of ſteps at the entrance of this palace is the work of Michael Angelo; who likewiſe added to the beauty of the front by a ſuperb fountain, adorned with two ſtatues, repreſenting the Nile and the Danube in a reclining poſture. In the centre is a porphyry ſtatue of Rome, in the habit of Minerva, repreſented ſitting. This is a piece of great antiquity, and is univerſally admired by connoiſſeurs. In the room are great numbers of curious antiquities, with the nobleſt antique ſtatues, and paintings by the greateſt maſters. In the main buildings reſides the ſenator of Rome, who daily adminiſters juſtice there; and in the wings, are the apartments of the conſervators of the city.]

We took a view of the palace of Riari, the reſidence of Chriſtiana, queen of Sweden, where we met with many ancient pieces, the moſt exquiſite of which are, the ſtatue of Auguſtus, a tranſparent oriental alabaſter, but the head and feet are modern, and of braſs gilt; ſixteen ancient columns of Giallo, with two pillars of tranſparent oriental alabaſter ſeven feet high; a Venus whoſe legs were broken,

but are ſo admirably ſupplied by new pieces that the joining is not to be perceived; Caſtor and Pollux on each ſide of their mother Leda, all of one piece of marble; the ſons are bigger than the mother; the altar of Bacchus, of beautiful white marble, adorned with moſt exquiſite ſculptures in baſſo relievo; old Silenus going home drunk from the feaſt of his foſter child, ſupported by two men, with the Bacchantes appearing in the poſture of mad women; and a goat flead alive for cropping the vines. Among the pictures, the piece of Correggio, repreſenting the intrigue of Jupiter in the ſhape of a ſwan, is exceeding fine; as are the virgin with the infant Jeſus; the little St. John, by Raphael; and Danæ by Carracchio; beſides ſeveral other fine pieces of Titian, Paul Veroneſe, Guido, and other great maſters.

On the high altar of the church of the Franciſcans is to be ſeen that moſt excellent piece of the Transfiguration, which was the laſt work and maſterpiece of Raphael Urbino, the greateſt painter of his time.

Not far from thence is a chapel, ſaid to be built in the place where St. Peter was crucified, in which they ſhew a deep hole, where they affirm the croſs was fixed. The picture of this crucifixion with the head downwards is to be ſeen at St. Paul's, at the three fountains, by the hand of Guido; where they alſo ſhew the pillar on which it is ſaid that St. Paul was beheaded.

In the cloyſter of St. John de Lateran is ſhewn the column on which St. Peter's cock crew, and another which was cleft aſunder from the top to the bottom on the day of Chriſt's paſſion. Here is alſo ſhewn the meaſure of Chriſt's height. And the ſtone on which Pilate's ſoldiers caſt lots for Chriſt's garments, which is of porphyry, and is four feet long and three broad; the dice, they pretend are kept at Umbriatico in Calabria. There is here alſo the

porphyry chair perforated at the bottom, formerly uſed in the ceremony inſtituted to prevent all doubts concerning the pope's ſex.

The church of St. John de Lateran is celebrated for its ſpaciouſneſs and magnificence, and its bearing the title of head and mother of all churches. Sixtus V. built a large palace near this church, but it was never inhabited. Next adjoining to this ſtructure is the Sancta Scala, ſo called from the twenty eight ſteps of white marble pretended to be the ſame by which Chriſt aſcended into Pilate's houſe, which nobody is permitted to aſcend but on their knees; however, there are ſtairs on each ſide, by which men are allowed to walk up into the chapel, called Sanctum Sanctorum, or the Holy of Holies; but women are forbid to enter it. It has its name from an image of Chriſt, ſaid to be made by angels; but upon examining it, I found it very ill ſhaped, and unworthy of the pretended celeſtial artiſts.

The chapel of Sixtus V. and that of Paul V. are very magnificent ſtructures: in the laſt of which is ſhewn the manger of Bethlehem, and the picture of the virgin, done by St. Luke. Near it ſtands the little church of St. Anthony, where all the horſes receive benediction every year on that ſaints feſtival.

At the palace of Juſtiniani, the catalogue of the antiquities amount to 1867 pieces, of which 638 are curious pictures, the moſt excellent of them are, Nero's head, Minerva, Venus coming out of a bath, and three little cupids ſleeping and leaning one upon another.

Cardinal Chigi's palace is ſcarce inferior to any in Rome. The gates are cruſted over with old green marble: the ſtatues of the two Venus's of Marcius ſtead, and the dying gladiator, are admirable pieces.

The Farneſian palace was begun by Antonia de St. Gallo, and brought to perfection by Michael Angelo. The front is 180 feet in breadth, and 90

feet high ; but all the principal ſtones of this beautiful ſtructure were the ſpoils taken from the great Coliſeum, which admirable monument of antiquity has alſo furniſhed materials, not only to the palace of the Chancery, and St. Lawrence's church, but alſo to ſome part of the city walls. Thus Innocent VIII deſtroyed the Gordian arch to build a church, and Alexander VI. that moſt beautiful pyramid of Scipio to pave the ſtreets with the ſtones. The Hercules and bull in the Farneſian palace are celebrated throughout the world, and the gallery by Carracchio, the hall by Sabriati, and the Venus and Adonis by Titian, are finely performed.

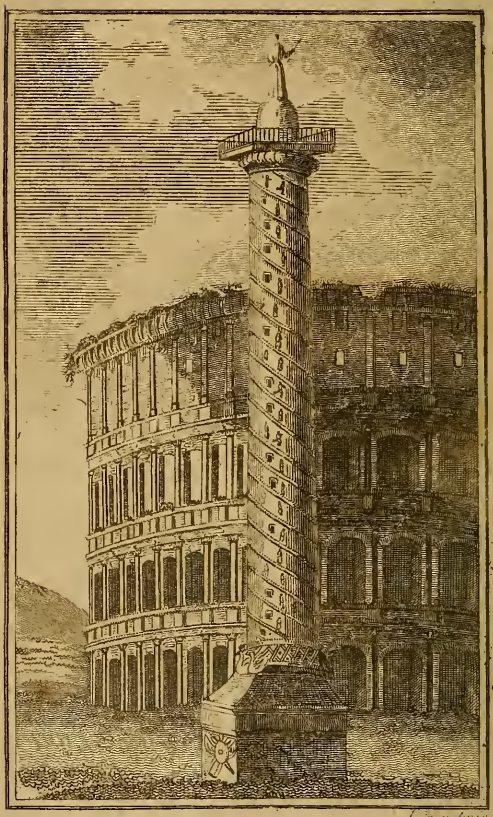
Among the ſtatues at Rome, it may be proper to mention Paſquin and Marforio. The firſt is a mutilated ſtatue, which ſome think was made for Alexander the Great, ſome for Hercules, and others for a Roman ſoldier; it ſtands leaning againſt the wall of a houſe at the corner of a place where ſeveral ſtreets meet. Near it lived a taylor called Paſquin, to whoſe ſhop the newſmongers reſorted. He was a man of wit and humour, and being fond of ſatyrical jeſts, his lampoons were called paſquinades ; and all the ſatyrical libels in the city were not only called by the ſame name, but, that they might be thought to be his, were affixed to this mutilated ſtatue. In another part of the city is a maimed figure called Marforio, and on this laſt ſtatue was affixed queſtions which were to be anſwered by that of Paſquin.

The obeliſks in Rome are quadrangular, ending in a ſharp point. They are made of granite, and covered with hieroglyphic characters. Theſe were brought from Egypt, where they were of prodigious antiquity. That of St. John Latern is ſaid to have ſtood 3000 years, and that of St. Peter 900 years longer. The firſt, which is the biggeſt of the two, is 108 feet high, without including the pedeſtal or the croſs. The columns of Trajan and Antoninus are magnificent monuments of antiquity, adorned

with moſt excellent baſſo relievo's aſcending in a ſpiral line from the baſe to the capitals. [Antoninus's column is 180 feet high, and exhibits a great number of baſſo relievos, repreſenting the moſt remarkable actions and atchievements of Marcus Aurelius. Within this column a ſtair-caſe, winding in a ſpiral line, and conſiſting of 192 ſteps, leads to a ſquare gallery ſurrounded with an iron baluſtrade, from whence there is a moſt charming proſpect. The light is admitted into this pillar through fifty-two ſmall windows. About fourteen feet higher than this gallery is a ſtatue of St Paul of braſs gilt, erected by Sixtus V. who cauſed the whole column to be repaired. The imagery in the upper part of the column is bigger than in the lower; and this is almoſt the only inſtance of antiquity where the rules of perſpective, with which the ancients were little acquainted, have been attended to. This pillar is indeed falſely called the Antonine, for from the baſſo relievos, among which are intermixed ſome circumſtances of the Marcomanian war, it is evident, that this monument was erected in honour of Marcus Aurelius, and not by him to his father Antoninus Pius.

For ſome time this error paſſed current, till in 1704 the genuine pillar erected to Antoninus Pius, after his deceaſe, was found half buried in rubbiſh in the Mons Certorius This laſt is of a red oriental granite, forty four feet three inches high, and five feet eight inches in diameter. It is without ornaments; but the pedeſtal, which is of Parian marble, is an excellent piece of work. It is twelve feet long, and eleven broad. On one ſide is the inſcription, and on the other baſſo relievos repreſent the apotheoſis of Antoninus and his empreſs Fauſtina, and likewiſe ſome horſe-races.]

Trajan's pillar, erected by the ſenate to the honour of that great prince. [is adorned with bolder reliefs than that which bears the name of Antoninus,



Trajans Pillar and Titus's
Amphitheatre at Rome

and makes a very ſupurb appearance. The grandeur of this marble column is ſtill heightened by a noble pedeſtal, repreſenting a maſs of huge rocks, and embelliſhed with coats of mail, ſhields, &c. It now ſtands in a ſquare hole ſeven or eight feet deep, the ſides of which are ſupported by brick walls within it. This plainly ſhews, that the ground of the city is raiſed much higher than it was when this pillar was firſt erected. The baſſo relievos are carried round the pillar, and from the bottom to the top form twenty-three ſpiral circumvolutions. The ſubject of them is Trajan's expedition againſt Decebalus, king of the Dacians, and they contain near 2500 figures, but with ſo little regard to perſpective, that thoſe in the rear of the corps appear as large and as full in view as thoſe in the front.] The urn with Trajan's aſhes on the top was taken away by Sixtus V. who placed in its room the ſtatue of St. Peter of braſs gilt.

[The amphitheatre of Titus, notwithſtanding it has greatly ſuffered by the injuries of time, is not to be beheld without aſtoniſhment. The whole edifice is of Travertina ſtone, with four galleries over one another, adorned with pillars of the Doric, Ionic, Corinthian, and compoſite orders. This ſtructure was 1612 geometrical feet in circumference, and the external figure of it circular; but the inſide was oval. A great quantity of ſtone has been taken from this ancient edifice for building the palaces of Farneſe, St. Mark, and the Cancellaria; but ſome ſay, that ſuch ſtones only were carried away as had been thrown down by the weather, or by earthquakes. However, no manner of care is now taken to preſerve this noble ſtructure, and the area within it is over-grown with graſs and weeds. According to the moſt exact computation, this amphitheatre was capable of containing 34,000 perſons, excluſive of thoſe in the upper gallery; and according to Dion Caſſius,

9000 wild beaſts were killed within its area at the dedication of it.]

One day as we were viſiting the caves generally known by the name of the Catacombs, we entered into the mauſoleum of Ceciliia, the daughter of Metellus, ſurnamed Creticus, where at the very entrance we were ſhewn a hole into which a gentleman a few weeks before happened to fall very deep under ground unperceived by his company, when his friends being amazed at miſſing him, went in ſearch of him ; but whether he was ſo ſtunned by the fall as not to be able to cry out, or whether the depth of the pit prevented his being heard, they returned without knowing what was become of him. The poor gentleman continued in this deplorable condition for ſixty hours; but at laſt found means to open a paſſage, and with great difficulty clambering out, got to a neighbouring houſe, where being comforted with good broths, he ſoon recovered his ſtrength. The Catacombs are not ſingle vaults, but rather whole ſubterranean cities, with turnings and windings like ſtreets. There are ſome caverns, as thoſe of the gate Pinciana and thoſe near St. John and St. Paul, which ſeem never to have been made uſe of as burial places, and are known by the name of grottos.

The Catacombs of Rome extend under all its ſuburbs, but thoſe of Naples only under one part of that city ; theſe are dug out from among the rocks, each paſſage being commonly between 15 or 18 feet wide, and twelve or fifteen feet high: the hollow niches in both ſides of the walls are ſhaped like cheſts, of divers ſizes, placed in rows one above another without any coffins, covered only with flat ſtones like tiles, cemented with a kind of mortar, or mixture of chalk and ſand.

Freſcati and Tivoli are very fine places, but neither theſe nor any other of the celebrated retreats about Rome deſerve to be compared with Verſailles,

with reſpect to their gardens and water-works. Freſcati is a ſmall town, ſituated on the brow of a hill, twelve miles from Rome, and has ſeveral beautiful country ſeats; the three principal of which are Monte Dracone, Belvedere, and the Villa Ludovicia. Monte Dracone is a very large ſtructure, ſeated on an aſcent from whence may be ſeen Rome and the adjacent plain; but as the city lies at two great a diſtance, and as the plain is not embelliſhed with that variety of objects which renders a landſcape agreeable, the proſpect of Paris from St. Clou is infinitely more delightful. On the ſide of Monte Porcio there is much greater variety in the proſpect, but it is more ſtraightened, and the gardens and fountains are much out of order. The ſituation of Belvedere is nearly the ſame as Monte Dracone. It has a pretty caſcade and grotto, where Apollo and the nine Muſes are ſeen on Parnaſſus. The chief ornament of the Villa Ludovicia is the caſcade But the furniture of all theſe houſes, is but very indifferent.

Tivoli is another ſmall town about eighteen miles from Rome, [and has in all ages been celebrated for the extraordinary ſalubrity of its air. The ſenate and people of Tivoli, however, make at preſent but a very mean figure, and this ancient town, ſaid to have been built 640 years before the city of Rome, is but a wretched hole, excepting only the Villa Eſtenſe, which is ſaid to have coſt the family whoſe name it bears three millions ſterling; but even that noble edifice is going to decay. The chapel is famous for its altar-piece, on which is a fine Madona. Eight rooms on the ground floor are beautifully painted in freſco by Frederico Zuccaro, Muſiano, and Tempeſta. Here is alſo a ſmall marble group of the Nile, and twelve boys ſporting about it. In the gardens were formerly fountains, adorned with the ſtatues of Leda, Æſculapius, Arethuſa, Pandora, Flora, Pomona, &c. But the preſent ruinous condition of this place

is a plain indication of the abſence of the owner: however, moſt of the water-works are kept up; for as they are eaſily ſupplied from the Ano or Teverone, a river which forms a noble caſcade near Tivoli, they cannot be very expenſive. Juſt before the palace is a large baſon with the ſtatue of a horſe in the centre, which furniſhes a great quantity of water. Near this baſon is a long row of ſome hundreds of eagles, pyramids, vaſes, and other figures cut in ſtone, and fixed on pedeſtals, adorned with baſſo relievos of ſtories taken from Ovid's Metamorphoſes, and water is ejected by all of them. This row of figures extending ſome hundred paces, is a very elegant ornament, and at the end of it ſtands a ſhip with its maſts and rigging, as if engaged and vigorouſly defending itſelf, ejecting water from all parts. On an eminence near it is a repreſentation of ancient Rome, which its temples, theatres, obeliſks, baths, columns, triumphal arches, and aqueducts: but as theſe are only made of brick, they are now falling to decay. The dragon fountain throws up a vaſt column of water to a great hight; a water organ, over which is a beautiful ſtructure adorned with ſtatues and baſſo relievos, is alſo a curious piece of work, and a ſteep caſcade; where the water precipitates itſelf, is likewiſe in a good taſte.

In the market place at Tivoli ſtand two large Egyptian idols of oriental granite, ſuppoſed to be images of Iras: and by the river Anio are the ruins of a temple of the Tiburtine ſybil, or according to ſome of Veſta, and according to others of Hercules, round which was formerly a colonade of ſixteen pillars, but only ten are now remaining. The baſe of the portico has been well preſerved, ſo that the feſtoons and foliages make a very beautiful appearance. The columns are of marble, but the work within is only brick. In the niches are ſome paintings in freſco; but as the Virgin Mary is to be ſeen

here, it is plain that the building has been converted into a Chriſtian church.

About three miles from Tivoli we ſaw a ſmall lake called Lago de Bagni or Solfatara, called by the vulgar the ſixteen barges, from the ſame number of ſmall floating iſlands that are upon it. It is no more than a large pond of a bluiſh and very tranſparent water, about 200 paces in diameter: and it gives riſe to a ſmall rivulet, which, after a ſhort but rapid courſe, joins its waters with the Anieno. The lake, as well as the brook, emits a very ſtrong ſulphureous ſcent. The late Cardinal d'Eſte in vain attempted to ſound its depth, for though two divers were prevailed upon to enter into it, one never returned, and the other related, that though it was very cold on the ſurface, he found the water at a certain depth ſo hot, that he was unable to bear it. The ſound cauſed by the treading of horſes near the banks ſhew that the ground is hollow underneath; and it is not unlikely, that the circumference of this lake is only the mouth of a much larger abyſs, which extends on all ſides a great way under ground, and that the diver who was never ſeen again happened to be carried into the ſubterraneous gulph, and could not return to the entrance of the lake; for he never appeared afterwards upon the ſurface of the water. Near the bank are ſeen ſome ruins, which many ſuppoſe to be the baths of Agrippa.

The largeſt of the floating iſlands is of an oval figure not above fifteen feet long; but as the leaſt touch puts them in motion, they are eaſily carried by the wind, which way ſoever it blows. Two of our company got upon the leaſt of theſe iſlands, and puſhed it from the bank only with the points of their ſwords.

The Villa Burgheſe is, in my opinion, one of the moſt pleaſant about Rome. On one ſide it is covered with moſt curious ancient pillars, adorned with baſſo relievos, which are as naturally diſpoſed

as if they had been made for the places where they are ſeen. All the appartments are filled with admirable ſtatues and pictures; among the firſt is the Gladiator, an excellent ſtatue made by Agaſias, the ſon of Doſitheus the Epheſian, as appears by a Greek inſcription. The other moſt curious ſtatues are, a Juno of porphyry; Romulus's wolf, of the fineſt Egyptain marble; the buſts of Hannibal, Seneca, and Pertinax; an Hermaphrodite; an old Silenus with Bacchus in his arms; David throwing a ſtone out of his ſling at Goliah; Æneas carrying his father; and the transformation of Daphne; with three modern pieces of Bernini, which deſerve to be ranked among the beſt of the former ages. Among the pictures which are numberleſs, St Anthony by Caracchio and the death of Chriſt by Raphael, are preferred before all the reſt. In ſhort the Villa Borgheſe is a moſt delicious ſeat, and if it wants ſomething of that royal magnificence which gives a luſtre to ſome palaces, its natural beauties ſeem to make ample amends for this defect.

The Villa Ludovicia, though otherwiſe much out of order from the poverty of the prince of Piombino, its maſter, is very remarkable for a vaſt number of ſtatues, which are for the moſt part very ancient and valuable. The Fauſtina embracing a gladiator, her lover; the two gladiators, one a dying Mirmillo, and the other repoſing himſelf after the engagement; and the ſtatues of Bacchus, Mercury, and Concord, are all moſt curious pieces. The choiceſt pictures and richeſt furniture are, however, removed from hence to other places.

The Villa Ghigi is famous for its curious little water ſpouts, and cabinet of curioſities, in which an Adrian of oriental jaſper excels the reſt, and is really invaluable.

The curious walks of the Villa Montalto, or Savelli, are not inferior to any in Rome for valuable ſtatues and pictures. Among the firſt, thoſe of

Germanicus, Peſcenninus Niger, Scipio, Nænia, A onis, and a gladiator, are moſt excellent pieces of antiquity. The moſt curious of the pictures are, a dead Chriſt, by Raphael; St. Francis, by Caracchio; the virgin Mary, and a Bacchus, by Guido; and St. John, by Pomerancio.

The gardens of the Villa Pamphilia would, for their exactneſs and regular diſpoſition; challenge the preference before many others, were they kept in better repair; the houſe being adorned on the outſide like that of the Villa Borgheſe, with excellent baſſo relievo, and it is as well furniſhed within; but the beſt ſtatues are much damaged by an odd incident. The prince Pamphilia being very young and much bigoted to the Jeſuits, thoſe holy fathers prevailed on him to have all his marble ſtatues, of men, women, and children, laid over with plaſter work, in ſeveral parts of their bodies, and none of them eſcaped except a little Bacchus, and a Venus, the maſter piece of Caracchio, whoſe beauties were hid with ſmut, from head to foot. However, after ſome time the prince getting out of the hands of theſe zealots, ordered the plaſter to be taken off again, which was done accordingly; but he found to his no ſmall regret, that the clumſy plaſterers had mangled ſeveral parts of the ſtatues to make their mortar ſtick the better.

The Vigne Madame, a country ſeat belonging to the duke of Parma, is neither ſpacious nor magnificent, but very regular, and placed in a fine ſituation. On one ſide it has a moſt delightful proſpect of Rome, and of many of the adjacent ſeats and gardens. On the other is a moſt beautiful landſcape of ſmall well cultivated hills. On the front, is a view of the Tyber, as it flows through the meadows and fields, and at a diſtance, the ſnowy tops of the Appenines riſing up among the clouds. Behind it is a wood of tall trees, divided into cool and ſhady walks, and the

gardens riſe by degrees into terraſſes, and are well adorned with ſtatues and fountains.

It may be proper, before we entirely take our leave of Rome, to obſerve, that the people take great care to preſerve themſelves from the heats, which are uſually in ſummer very troubleſome, for which purpoſe perſons of quality have low apartments, ſhaded from the rays of the ſun, paved with marble, and furniſhed with fountains and water ſpouts; and beſides, the doors and windows are ſo contrived that they are never without a kind of cool breeze. The beds are encompaſſed at ſome diſtance, with a curtain of gauze or tiffany, which is joined cloſe to the boards of the floor and cieling, to prevent their being troubled with gnats. It is alſo the cuſtom to ſleep two hours immediately after dinner; but they never lie down, for they have a ſort of folding chairs, which have backs that riſe and fall with a ſpring. The uſe of umbrellas is common every where, the evening dew in the Campagna di Roma is eſteemed mortal during three or four months in the ſummer, and great care is taken to avoid it; for this purpoſe travellers double their pace, to arrive at Rome in time, or ſtay at the diſtance of eighteen or twenty miles from it.

During the laſt three days in the holy week, we ſaw the ſtreets of Rome crouded with proceſſions and penitents, with hoods over their heads, ſome in white, others in blue, yellow, and other colours, and ſome laſhing their naked bodies with whips of ſmall twiſted cords, which made more noiſe than they did execution. However, the concourſe of pilgrims was not ſo great this year, as it had been in ſome others, for I read in an account of Trinity hoſpital, that in 1600, which was the laſt Jubilee year, that houſe, according to cuſtom, entertained or provided for 440, or, 500 men, and 2500 women. The Italian pilgrims are entertained here three days, and ſo-

reigners four days. They are ſerved at table by princes, princeſſes, cardinals, and even the pope himſelf.

One thing I muſt not paſs over in ſilence, and that is, we never met the ſacrament in Rome, or any other town in Italy, except at Venice, where we ſaw it twice carried in great ſtate, under a magnificent canopy, attended by a great number of lights. And I muſt do this juſtice to the Italians of ſaying that they are not poſſeſſed with the ſpirit of perſecution, at leaſt againſt ſtrangers; for I do not remember, that in all our travels through Italy, not excepting Rome and Loretto, we were ever affronted for not worſhipping relics or images. The worſt we ever heard upon that ſcore was, our being ſtiled non ſano Chriſtiani, No ſound Chriſtians. [Though there are here licenſed ſtews, Rome is not more debauched than other great cities. Here are ſeveral regulations for reclaiming proſtitutes; they are all excluded from communion, and if they die in that profeſſion, are denied Chriſtian burial. In ſome parts of Italy, they are obliged ſeveral times in a year to aſſemble in a particular church, where their vicious lives are painted in the blackeſt colours, in a ſermon preached before them; when they who are moved by the preacher's arguments, and in token of their repentance, kiſs a crucifix, which is handed about, are conducted to a convent founded for the reception of penitents.]

The way between Rome and Viterbo, has little remarkable, except ſome remains of the Via Emilia which we found of the ſame breadth with the other conſular roads. The ancient Cyminus, now Lake de Vico, is at the foot of a very high hill, that is of an eaſy aſcent, and bears the ſame name with the lake. It is almoſt covered with ſycamore and cheſnut trees, and produces a vaſt quantity of primroſes, narciſſuſus, hyacinths, and many other flowers.

The city of Viterbo is built of ſtone, and ſurrounded with a wall. Beſides its ſteeples, it has eight ſquare towers, built by the inhabitants for retreats, during the inteſtine commotions of the Guelphs and Gibbelines In one of the halls of the town houſe is a picture repreſenting an innumerable ſwarm of locuſts, which in 1526 hid the ſun, and covered the earth, devouring every thing they met with upon the ground about Viterbo.

We paſſed all the way between Monteſiaſcone, and Bolſena, near the banks of the lake of that name, which is of an oval figure, and forty miles in compaſs. It contains two iſlands called Martana and Paſſentina: the firſt is celebrated for the baniſhment of Amaleſuntha, the daughter of Theodoric, king of the Goths, who was afterwards murdered there by the command of her couſin Theodatus, whom ſhe made her aſſociate in the government. Bolſena is a very indifferent town, though it was formerly an epiſcopal ſee, which was tranſlated to Orvieto. Behind it are the ruins of the ancient Volſcinium, which, according to Pliny, was burnt by lightning. The conntry between Bolſena and Aquapendente is ſome of the worſt in the world; but though the laſt of theſe places is poor and almoſt deſolate, it has retained the title of an archbiſhopric ever ſince the deſtruction of Caſtro Centino, a ſmall village at the foot of the hill. Radicofani is the utmoſt boundary of the pope's dominions on that ſide. The town and citadel built by Deſiderius, the laſt king of the Lombards, bear the name of that hill, upon which they are ſituated, and are for half the year concealed in the clouds. In our way from thence towards Sienna, we for eight or ten miles ſaw nothing but barren mountains; however, as we approached towards St. Quirico, the country began to grow better and better; but this laſted not long, for near Torrinieri, the land grew worſe than before, and thus continued with ſome ſmall alteration till we reached Sienna.

Sienna is the third city, and perhaps the moſt pleaſanaly ſituated of any town in Tuſcany. Its air is excellent, and the ſtreets, though not level, are very neat, they being paved with bricks laid ſideways. The houſes are handſomely built, and the water is very good; beſides, the Tuſcan language is here ſpoken in its utmoſt purity without the roughneſs of the Florentine dialect.

Though the cathedral of Sienna is a Gothic edifice, it is very beautiful, and one of the moſt perfect churches of that kind in Europe, it being covered within and without with marble. On the corridor, running round the body of the inſide of the church, are to be ſeen the ſtatues of the popes; and among the reſt there is one, with a very ſmooth chin, which was placed there in the room of Pope Joan, which Baronius ſays was taken away, and broken to pieces. That part next the choir is beautified with the pictures of Abraham's ſacrifice, and the paſſage of the Iſraelites through the Red Sea. The arched roof is azure intermixed with ſtars of gold.

From the church we paſſed into the place where the library was formerly kept, and there ſaw thoſe beautiful pieces in freſco repreſenting the life of Pius II. deſigned by Raphael, but painted by Penegin, his maſter, with Bernardin, and Pinturicchio. Moſt of the faces repreſent perſons then alive; among others, the pope's ſoul, ſoaring upwards in the ſhape of a bird of paradiſe, and the hermit gazing upon it, is an exquiſite piece.

The old citadel has fifteen or twenty ſquare towers, among which the tower of Mangiana is greatly extolled for its height, by thoſe who have ſeen few others. The arms of Sienna are the wolf that gave ſuck to Romulus and Rhemus, founded upon a fable that Sienna was built by the children of Rhemus.

Travelling between the city of Sienna, and the river Arno, we found the ſoil improve in proportion as we approached nearer to that river. Near Pontgibon, which is famous for its tobacco, we met whole troops of girls going from houſe to houſe, ſinging and wiſhing a merry May. Their ſongs are compoſed of a number of pleaſant wiſhes, and every ſtanza concludes with "A merry merry May." On ſeveral ſandy hills near Certaldo, we ſaw great quantities of different ſorts of ſhells, as we had before at Monte Mario, a mile from Rome, and in other places.

Piſa, the ſecond city of Tuſcany, was formerly a conſiderable republic. It is ſituated in a level plain on the banks of the river Arno, and dignified with the title of an archbiſhopric, and has an univerſity. Its ſtreets are ſpacious, ſtraight, and well paved with broad ſtones, and the houſes are generally well built. The Arno, which is navigable here, and twice as broad as the Tyber at Rome, divides the city into two parts. Piſa is, however, at preſent very poor and ill peopled, occaſioned by their wars with the Florentines; who, after the conqueſt of this place, founded the great mart of Leghorn upon the ruin of Piſa. The cathedral here is very like that of Sienna, though not quite ſo large. It is a regular ſtructure cruſted over with curious marble. The baptiſtry is of a circular figure, 180 feet in circumference, and ſurmounted by a cupola. By an inſcription on a pillar in this baptiſtry, the church appears to have been finiſhed in 1153. Travellers wonder greatly at the leaning tower; which, ſome pretend appears by a peculiar art of the architect to lean on all ſides; when, in reality, it inclines only on one ſide, occaſioned by the ſinking of the foundation. It is of the figure of an exact cylinder, and its whole height is 188 feet.

The famous burying place of Sienna, called Campo Santo, received its name from the earth being

brought in 1228 from the Holy Land. It is a kind of cloyſter, 190 paces long, and 60 broad. On a wall under one of the porticos I ſaw an inſcription, which is a decree of the ſenate of Piſa, upon the death of Cæſar, ordering their ſubjects to appear in mourning for a whole year, and to abſtain from all public diverſions. Here the knights of St. Stephen have their reſidence; they muſt be of noble blood, and born in wedlock. They vow conjugal chaſtity, and ſay 100 Pater Noſters and Ave Maries every day. This order was founded by the great duke Coſmo I. in 1561, after his having gained the battle of Marciano; and his ſtatue ſtands directly oppoſite to the church.

The country between Leghorn and Piſa is very level, but woody, and filled with oaks, cork-trees, and wild myrtles: and though theſe cities are fourteen miles diſtant, they ſay that thoſe woods were formerly covered by the ſea, which reached within three miles of Piſa, where there is a large church at the entrance of theſe woods, which they ſay was built in the place where St. Peter was once ſhipwrecked when he was fiſhing. Leghorn is a modern city, built on a level ground, and ſtrengthened with good fortifications faced with brick-work. Its ſtreets are large, ſtraight and uniform. The houſes are generally of the ſame height, and painted on the outſide.

In our journey from Leghorn to Lucca, we paſſed a ſecond time through Piſa, when we ſaw within three miles of that city the craggy mount of St. Julian, the boundary between Tuſcany and the republic of Lucca.

The city of Lucca is moſt pleaſantly ſituated in a fertile plain of fifteen or twenty miles in extent, incloſed by very rich and well cultivated hills. Its fortifications are regular, and faced with brick. We walked round the ramparts in an hour's time; but, though the place is not ſo big as Piſa, it contains

many ſtately houſes, and is very well peopled. We were ſhewn the palace of the Republic, where the Gonfalonier, or Standard Bearer, with the ſeven Anziani or Counſellors lodge and eat together.

In the cathedral we ſaw the chapel of the Volto Santo; and were told, that Nicodemus, having ſeveral times attempted in vain to paint the crucifix, was at laſt aſſiſted by the Angels, who guided his pencil to finiſh it. They are not able to tell you how this picture came to St. Fredian's church; but are poſitive that it removed from thence to the cathedral, where it hung in the air, in the place where we ſaw it, till an altar was built under it, on which it reſted, and about which they afterwards built a magnificent chapel. This crucifix is in ſuch eſteem with them, that they ſtamp it on their coin, with the arms of the Seignory. In the midſt of St. Fredian's church is a tomb ſtone, with a Latin inſcription, intimating, that there lies the body of St. Richard king of England; but who this royal ſaint was, I am not able imagine, for Richard I. died in France, and was interred in the abbey of Fontevraud; Richard II. was, after his being dethroned, ſtabbed at Pontefract, and buried firſt in St. Paul's, whence he was carried to Langley, and afterwards to Weſtminiſter; and Richard III. being ſlain in the battle of Boſworth, his body was interred at Leiceſter

The ſtate of Lucca is a fief of the empire: Its government is ariſtocratical, and is managed by the council of 240 nobles, divided into two bodies. which rule alternately every ſix months with the Gonfalonier at their head. This chief magiſtrate bears ſome reſemblance to the doges of Venice and Genoa; but continues no longer than two months in that dignity, from whence he reaps no other profit but maintaining his table at the pubiic expence. His dreſs is a robe of crimſon velvet, with a bonnet and ſtole. He has the title of excellency. His

guard conſiſts of ſixty Swiſs, and he cannot be again choſen to the ſame dignity, till after ſix years.

Half-way between Lucca and Florence ſtands Piſtoja, twenty miles from each. The adjacent country is extremely fertile, and well cultivated; but the city is almoſt deſolate, having loſt its trade with its liberty. It is much bigger than Lucca, and its large and regular ſtreets and beautiful buildings are ſufficient teſtimonies of its former grandeur. The inhabitants have a moſt profound veneration for St. James and his relics.

Florence the capital of Tuſcany, and the ordinary reſidence of the great dukes, is ſeated upon the river Arno, as it were within the arena of an amphitheatre: it being incloſed at four or five miles diſtance, except on the ſide towards Piſtoja, with very fruitful hills, which riſe by an eaſy aſcent till they unite with the high mountains. In taking a full view, from one of the towers of Florence, of the villages and houſes of pleaſure in the plains and hills, they ſeem to be only the continuation of the ſuburbs; this valley being, perhaps, the beſt peopled place of that kind in the univerſe.

This city is almoſt of a circular figure, and I was credibly informed, that the circumference of the walls is 15,240 fathoms, and that the river Arno, which runs through it, is 500 fathoms broad; ſo that adding the double breadth of the river to the compaſs of the walls, the whole circuit of Florence amounts to 36,675 feet Engliſh meaſure. The ſame perſon told me, that this city contains about 8800 houſes; 60,000 ſouls, twenty-two hoſpitals, eighty-nine convents, eighty four fraternities, 152 churches, eighteen halls belonging to merchants, ſeventy-two courts of juſtice, ſix columns, two pyramids, four bridges, ſeven fountains, 160 public ſtatues, and 17 ſquares. The ſtreets are paved with broad pieces of a grey ſtone, called Pietra Forte, brought from the

neighbouring quarries, and moſt of the houſes are built of the ſame.

The great duke's palace is a moſt noble ſtructure, but has this defect, that the court is not ſpacious enough in proportion to the edifice, which being 120 feet high to the cornice of the third order, cannot be ſeen without trouble in any part of the court, which is only 160 feet long, and 140 broad. As we were entering the old ducal palace, we took a full view of the four ſtatues of white marble on the bridge of the Trinity, performed by Michael Angelo, repreſenting the four ſeaſons of the year. The chief curioſities we obſerved in the palace were David, by Michael Angelo; Judith, by Donatelli; the Sabine women carried off by violence, by John of Bologna; Perſeus in braſs, by Coligni; Hercules and Cacus, by Bandinelli; and an equeſtrian ſtatue of Coſmo I. by John of Bologna: all which are moſt exquiſite pieces.

The great gallery of the palace is 400 feet long, where we paſſed between two rows of ancient ſtatues and buſts; and above them, againſt the wall, we ſaw the pictures of the ancient philoſophers on one ſide, and thoſe of great generals on the other. Among theſe ſtatues, that ſuppoſed to be Scipio's excels all the reſt; Leda embracing Jupiter with pleaſure in her countenance mixed with ſhame; Bacchus, with a copy not inferior to the original, by Michael Angelo; Julia, the daughter of Auguſtus; Pomona, Venus, Diana, Apollo; a peaſant ſtriking a boar; the buſts of all the emperors to Galienus, and eſpecially thoſe of Adrian, Pertinax, and Severus; are excellent pieces.*

The cathedral is a large and ſtately building incruſted both within and without with the fineſt poliſhed marble of ſeveral colours. Its whole length

* For the other celebrated curioſities in this palace, ſee Mr. Addiſon's Travels.

is 490 feet, and its height to the top of the croſs in the globe 380; its greateſt defect is its having no frontiſpiece. The moſt admired ſtatues in this church are thoſe of St. James, by Sanſovin; Adam and Eve, by Bandinello; God the Father; a dead Chriſt, and an angel ſupporting him, by the ſame hand. The Reſurrection painted in the dome, by Fred. Zucchero, is a moſt exeellent piece; but the critics find fault with his repreſenting the bodies riſing with their clothes on. We alſo took notice of a greater blunder in the ſame church, committed by no leſs famous a painter than Paul Urcello, who has painted Sir John Hawkwood,* an Engliſhman, general of the Piſans, on horſeback, with his horſe reſting on two legs on the ſame ſide, while the other two are in motion. Pieces of the rods of Aaron and Moſes are pretended to be ſhewn in the cathedral, though theſe rods are ſaid to be intire in the church of St. John de Lateran. The ſteeple near the church is a tower 180 feet high, cruſted over with ſquare pieces of red, black, and white marble, and beautified with ſeveral excellent ſtatues, among which a bald old man, by Donatelli, is highly eſteemed. The baptiſtry is not unlike that of Piſa, and is covered like the church; ſome ſay it was anciently the temple of Mars, and that after its being converted into a baptiſtry, it was dedicated to St. John the baptiſt. The moſaic work on the arched roof is eſteemed excellent; and among the ſtatues, the Magdalen of wood, by Donatelli, excels all the reſt. But the moſt ſurpriſing pieces are the three gates of braſs, on which are repreſented ſome paſſages of ſacred hiſtory in baſſo relievo. The two moſt beautiful of thoſe gates put Michael Angelo into ſuch a rapture at ſeeing them, that he ſaid they deſerved to be placed at the entrance of heaven.

* He is called by the Italians, Acutus.

In the court before the middle gate of the baptiſtry are two columns of porphyry, at ſome diſtance from each other: they are ſaid to have been brought from Majorca, and beſtowed upon the Florentines by the Piſans, in return for the aſſiſtance they gave them in the conqueſt of part of that iſland. Near them ſtands another column, erected in memory of a pretended miracle wrought by the body of St. Zenobius on its being removed from St Lawrence's to the cathedral church, when his ſhrine accidentally touching the trunk of a dry tree that lay upon the ground, it immediately bloſſomed, and produced fruit. The ſtatue of Juſtice, near the church of the Trinity, is ſupported by a column of porphyry.

The church of St. Lawrence is both rich and ſpacious; and the chapel, when finiſhed, will be the moſt exquiſite performance of its kind that was ever ſeen. It is very large and magnificent. In the middle of each face of the hexagon, ſtands a double pilaſter of jaſper, with a double chapiter of braſs gilt, the baſe being the ſame. The emblematical figures on the pedeſtals of theſe pilaſters are very artifically made of precious ſtones. In the ſix angles are placed as many rich tombs of porphyry, oriental granite, and ſome other of the moſt precious kinds of marble. On each tomb lies a great pillar of jaſper, enriched with precious ſtones, and valued at 60,000 crowns; and beſides upon each pillow ſtands a crown, exceeding in richneſs the pillow itſelf. The baſe ſupporting the tombs is incruſted with porphyry and chalcedony, on which will be engraved the epitaphs of the princes, for whom theſe tombs are deſigned; and their ſtatues of braſs gilt, which are twice as big as the life, are to be placed in the niches of the black marble, that are over the tombs. The inner roof of the dome is intended to be covered with lapis lazuli, intermixed with roſes, and

other carvings gilt; and the reſt of the walls are cruſted over in compartments with the fineſt agate, granite, onyx, and other precious ſtones. Each pannel is divided into ſquares, embelliſhed with various ornaments in copper gilt; and the high altar is likely to ſurpaſs all the reſt. The library of St. Lawrence, which is eighty fathoms long, and twenty broad, is celebrated for its ancient manuſcripts.

In the church of the holy croſs, we ſaw the tomb of Michael Angelo, which in my opinion bears no proportion to his merit. In this church is a chapel belonging to the family of the Zanchini, on the altar of which is a picture of Chriſt, delivering the ſouls of the fathers, and among them many female ſpirits, out of purgatory, the work of Angelo Bronzino; ſome are of opinion that ſhe who repreſents Eve, is the true reſemblance of Bronzini's miſtreſs, and that the man in the right corner of this piece, gazing upon this pretended Eve, is the painter himſelf juſt as Pinturiccio painted in the Vatican Pope Alexander VI. proſtrate at the feet of Julia Farneſe, inſtead of adoring the holy virgin.

The arſenal and citadel of St. John the Baptiſt are kept in very good order; but the forts of Belvedere and St. Miniata, are much out of repair.

The mountains near Florence produce certain ſtones, which being ſawed in the middle and poliſhed, ſometimes repreſent trees, and ſometimes landſcapes, with the views of towns, and ruins of old caſtles.

In ſhort, though Florence, from its ſituation and other advantages, may be reckoned among the fineſt cities in the world; yet to thoſe who know the pleaſure of ſociety, and eſpecially of converſing with the fair ſex, the inſupportable conſtraint, and unavoidable ceremonies uſed there, appear an intolerable burthen, except to thoſe who are inured to this kind of ſlavery from their infancy.

The road between Florence and Bologna being one continued ridge of the Appenine mountains, and conſequently not very fit for calaſhes, we were forced to hire horſes; all the littermen being taken up in carrying monks over the mountains. For two days together we paſſed through a barren and mountainous country; however, the vallies of Separia and Fiorenzola are not quite ſo deſolate as the reſt. The firſt is famous for knives and other cutlery work made there. From the top of the laſt of the Appenine mountains, on our approaching Bologna, we had a fine proſpect of the extenſive and delightful plain of Lombardy, which extends along the Po, from the Appenines to the Alps.

Bologna, the ſeat of an archbiſhop, who has the title of a prince of the empire, is ſeated on the foot of the Appenine hills, at their opening into the plain upon the Via Emilia. The fineſt proſpect of this city and the adjacent country is from the convent of St. Michael in Boſco, where we had the pleaſure of ſeeing one of the moſt magnificent monaſteries in Italy, which for its beauty may be compared to moſt of the royal palaces in Europe; and indeed, as Bologna is larger, more populous, and even richer than Florence, ſo its convents are generally very ſpacious, and exceeding magnificent. This is the ſecond city in the eccleſiaſtical ſtate. It is ſurrounded only with a ſingle wall without a citadel; for when the inhabitants ſurrendered to Pope Nicholas in 1378, it was under condition that they ſhould not be bridled by a citadel; and that they ſhould be allowed an auditor at the Rota, and an ambaſſador of their own at Rome; which privileges have not been hitherto infringed.

The univerſity acknowledges for its founder Theodoſius the younger in 425; but owes its chief ſplendor to Charles the Great. In one of the halls of the univerſity college is a monument erected to the

memory of a famous ſurgeon, named Gabriel Taglicozzo, who is ſaid to have made artificial noſes, lips, &c. of fleſh, and is mentioned by Butler in his Hudibraſs under the name of Talicatius.

The canal which joins the Arno with the Po is of great advantage, with reſpect to the commerce of this city; the inhabitants of which trade in wax, hemp, flax, ſauſages, ſoap, tobacco, and perfumes, and have beſides near 400 ſilk mills. The houſes are generally of ſtone or brick plaſtered over; the ſtreets have porticos on both ſides, like thoſe of Padua; but are higher, larger, and for the moſt part very ſtraight. The women are handſome, and not kept under ſo much reſtraint as at Florence.

The public palace of this city is appointed for the lodging of the Cardinal Legate, and the Gonfalonier and his counſellors. Over the portal ſtands a braſs ſtatue of Gregory XIII. and on one ſide of it that of Boniface VIII. Here is alſo ſhewn the cabinet of curioſities of Ulyſſes Aldrovandus, joined with that of the Marquis of Caſti, both of which belong to the public.

In the church of St. Petronius, the biggeſt in the whole city, is to be ſeen the celebrated meridian line of Caſſini, [which conſiſts of pieces of red and white marble inlaid, of a hand's breadth; but thoſe pieces in which the ſigns of the Zodiac are cut, are a foot ſquare. This line is above half the length of the church, and at the beginning is a Latin inſcription, which ſays, that the whole length of this line, which is ſaid to be 180 feet, is the 600,000th part of the circumference of the terraqueous globe.] In the arched roof of the nave is a hole directly over the noon point of this line, through which a ray of the ſun entering marks the ſolſtices and equinoxes upon the line. However, the ſame operation may without much difficulty be performed in any other convenient place; the whole myſtery conſiſting only in meaſuring the degrees on the line, proportion-

ably to the height of the hole through which the rays enter.

In the church of Corpus Domini is ſhewn an embalmed body of St. Catherine Vigni, which is ſaid to have wrought many miracles; but the image of the Virgin Mary, ſaid to be made by St. Luke, is held in much greater veneration. It is kept at the Mount La Guardia, eight miles from the city, from whence it is brought at certain times in proceſſion into Bologna with more than ordinary magnificence, attended by the ſeveral companies of the artiſans, the fraternities, convents, heads of the pariſhes, the magiſtrates, the Gonfalonier, and the Legate himſelf. The image is always carried under a rich canopy, the people upon their knees ſaluting it, as it paſſes by, with the moſt zealous ejaculations that can be conceived.

The tower called Gariſenda is ſquare, and built of brick: It is 130 feet high, and leans like that of Piſa, and probably from the ſame cauſe, the ſinking of the foundation.

The heats being almoſt as troubleſome here as in the Appenines, the men uſe fans as well as the women, ſome of which are of paper, and ſold for a penny a piece. In our inn they had a way of driving away the flies by a machine. We were often treated with lake tortoiſes of the bigneſs of a large trencher, and we found their fleſh pretty firm and not ill taſted. The bright ſtones, known by the name of Bononian ſtones, are found in the hill of Paderna, about three miles diſtant from the city.

Leaving Bologna about ſun-ſet, we travelled ten miles to Samogia, about half way between that city and Modena. We found, that from this place to the Alps, the country is as level as a bowling-green, and that the roads are lined on both ſides, either with corn fields or vineyards. The vines are ſupported by fruit-trees, planted chequerwiſe, as we had already ſeen them in ſeveral parts of Lombardy,

and at firſt afforded a very delightful proſpect: but at length grew diſagreeable to us travellers, for want of that variety, without which nothing is pleaſing.

The ſame night, as we came near to the village, we were ſurprized with the ſight of a prodigious quantity of ſhining flies, with which the hedges were ſo covered, that they ſeemed to be on fire. They in ſhape, reſemble locuſts, but are not ſo large; the ſhining part is a certain yellow hairy down under the belly, which being ſtretched at every motion of their wings, ſend forth a bright gleam like fire.

Early the next morning we purſued our journey to Modena, where we arrived in two hours. In our way we paſſed by the fort of Urban VIII. and a little on this ſide of it croſſed the river Panaro, the boundary between the Bolognian and Modeneſe territories. The city of Modena is ſituated in a fertile country; but for want of trade, makes but an indifferent appearance; for its fortifications are much decayed, and the ſtreets are narrow and dirty; the porticos on both ſides of them are low and narrow, and even the churches contain nothing worth notice; ſo that were it not for its ancient reputation, and its being the reſidence of the dukes of that name, it would ſcarce deſerve a place among the cities of Italy.

We travelled in calaſhes four hours from Modena to Reggio, a city as barren in curioſities as Modena; but better built, and in a very pleaſant ſituation. The inhabitants tell wonders of their churches; but they are not to be compared to thoſe of Rome and Naples. The people here are employed in working bone, of which they make ſeveral ſorts of toys.

About eight miles from Reggio we paſſed the bridge over the river Enſa, on the other ſide of which, begins the dutchy of Parma, which is a level country moſtly paſturage, while about Bologno and

Modena, the grounds are generally tilled. The city of Parma is ſeventeen miles from this bridge: it is very pleaſantly ſituated, and ſeen at a conſiderable diſtance, on account of the ſtraightneſs of the road that leads to it, and the height of its ſpires. Over the gate through which we entered, we ſaw the arms of pope Paul III. who beſtowed the dukedoms of Parma and Placentia, upon his natural ſon Lewis. The river of Parma divides it into two parts, but it is not navigable. Its fortifications are very good, and the citadel deſigned after the model of that of Antwerp, which was formerly eſteemed a maſterpiece.

The great theatre in this city excels every thing of the kind I ever ſaw, either at Paris or Venice, the ſofteſt whiſper may be heard through any part of it, though it is of a very large extent. There are no boxes, but only benches raiſed one above the other as in an amphitheatre. The pit is alſo very ſpacious, and may be filled with water to the height of three feet, in which they repreſent naval combats, with whole ſquadrons of little gilt boats.

Beſides the ſchools of the univerſity, they have a college, into which they receive young gentlemen of all nations; but none, except ſuch as are capable of being admitted knights of Malta, and at this time the number amounted to 230. The dome of the cathedral is painted by the hand of Correggio, and in the churches of St. John and St. Anthony are various excellent pieces. At the public walks we ſaw abundance of good company taking a tour in their coaches; but they here obſerve the ſame cuſtom that is practiſed at Rome; that is, the women never go in the ſame coach with the men, but always appear in coaches by themſelves.

In our journey from hence to Placentia, which is 30 miles diſtant, we ſaw not any village or river worthy mentioning, except the little diſmantled town of St. Domingo.

The city of Placentia is ſituated in a pleaſant plain, about 600 paces from the Po. It is larger than Parma; the houſes are neatly built of brick, but very low; and on each ſide of the ſtreets are foot-ways fenced with poſts as in London, eſpecially in the ſtreet called the Cours which is as ſtraight as a line, of an equal breadth from one end to the other, and 3000 feet long. The ſtatues of Alexander Farneſe, governor of the Netherlands, and of his ſon Ranuccio I. adorn the great ſquare. The cathedral has ſome pictures performed by Caracci, and that of St. Sixtus; and an image of our Lady, by Raphael. Placentia is, however, ill peopled, and the fortifications, though much extolled by the Italians, are but indifferent. The weights, meaſures, and coins uſed here, are different from thoſe of Parma.

We coaſted the banks of the Po at ſome diſtance from the river, following the current until we came over-againſt Cremona, where we paſſed it in a ferry-boat; for there are no bridges on the Po below Turin.

The city of Cremona is ſeated on the Milaneſe ſide of the Po; it is very large, but poorer and leſs populous than Placentia. The caſtle, though much extolled by the romantic Italians, is an antique, ſhapeleſs heap of ruins, and the inhabitants of this city boaſt much of its antiquity, though they can produce no authentic proofs for it.

Cremona is forty miles from Mantua, and in all this way we met with no conſiderable town, except Puzzoli, a ſmall city ſurrounded with ſome inconſiderable works, which paſs for fortifications; it, however, bears the title of a dukedom, and its prince is at the ſame time ſovereign of the adjacent country, for four or five miles about it. We paſſed the river Oglio, which riſes with a large and ra-

pid current out of the lake of Iſco, and falls into the Po.

Almoſt all the deſcriptions I ever ſaw of Mantua, have given a very imperfect account of its true ſituation, which is generally repreſented to be in the midſt of a lake; but this pretended lake is no more than the waters of the river Mincio, which ariſes from the lake of Guarda, and overflowing the flat country, forms a kind of marſh fourteen or fifteen times longer than it is broad, in which the city of Mantua is built on a firm track of ground. The cauſeway over which we paſſed was between two and three hundred paces long; but on the ſide towards Verona, it is of a larger extent. In ſome places, the water is always in motion; but as it ſtagnates in moſt parts of the marſh, the rich inhabitants generally leave the city during the ſummer ſeaſon. Mantua has a ſingle wall for its defence; but the citadel is very ſtrong. The city is about the ſame bigneſs as Cremona, but much better peopled. The ſtreets are broad and ſtraight, and the houſes indifferently built.

The Italians tell ſtrange things of the magnificence of the palace, though in effect it has neither beauty nor regularity. It is, however, large and commodious, and the duke's lodgings want nothing that can render them both convenient and ſplendid. The hall is filled with ancient and valuable pictures, and the cabinet of curioſities is capable of affording entertainment to the ingenious traveller. The other remarkable things in Mantua, are the churches of the Jeſuits, of St. Barnabas, St. Maurice, St. Sebaſtian, St. Urſula, and St. Barbara; the town houſe, theatre, the manufactory, the halls, the mill of the twelve Apoſtles, the ſynagogue and ſhambles.

The duke of Mantua has ſeven or eight country-ſeats, among which we only ſaw La Favorite, and

Marmirol, the laſt of which is very pleaſantly ſeated near a delightful brook, and a wood, and is well furniſhed with pictures and antiquities; with gardens, orange walks, aviaries, and curious fountains.

Leaving Mantua, we travelled for twenty-two miles till we came to a river that is the common boundary between the dukedom and the Venetian ſtate, and then proceeding eighteen miles farther, lodged at Breſcia, where we were not a little ſurprized at finding women in the ſtreets and ſhops, which we had not ſeen ſince our arrival at Verona.

Breſcia is pretty well peopled, and indifferently large: its citadel, which is very ſtrong, ſtands on an adjacent hill, near the foot of the Alps: but the other fortifications are of no great moment. The palace of Juſtice is a noble edifice built of a certain ſtone not unlike marble, and oppoſite to it are the armourers ſhops, under a portico 500 paces long; the fire-arms of Breſcia being accounted the beſt in Italy. This city is watered by many fine ſprings, and a ſmall commodious river, all which flow from the Alps.

On our arrival at Bergamo we found it both a trading and a ſtrong town, its ſituation being at the foot of the Alps. The fortifications are well lined, and the citadel with ſome outworks, defend the riſing grounds about the city, which has no leſs than five ſuburbs. In the choir of the cathedral is ſome inlaid work on the benches, done after the ſame manner, and by the ſame hand, as that we ſaw in the church of the Dominicans at Bologna. The Bergameſe jargon is very groſs; beſides which, moſt of the inhabitants have ſcrophulous tumours on their throats, which ſeem very nauſeous to ſtrangers, though to them theſe tumours appear ſo natural, that they queſtion whether it is a greater perfection to have or to be without them, and are inclined to

hold the former opinion. The grounds about Bergamo, and generally all over the Milaneſe, being watered with many rivulets which flow from the Alps, the country people have formed them into an infinite number of canals, by which means they prevent the inconvenience of drought, and render the grounds fertile.

The river Adda, which ariſes out of the lake of Como, having overflown its banks, we were obliged to quit our calaſh at Canonica, a village about twelve miles from Bergamo, and to paſs the river in a boat; not without ſome danger from the violence of the current. Two miles above Canonica lies Trezzo, where we embarked on the canal called Navilio della Marreſana, which extends in a ſtraight line about twenty miles length, and reaches within half a mile of Milan. From this canal we had a moſt delightful proſpect of the adjacent country, it being bordered in many places with ſummer houſes, gardens, and orchards.

Scarce any city in Europe has ſuffered ſo much, by the two terrible ſcourges of mankind, war and peſtilence, as Milan; notwithſtanding which, it may be ſtill ranked among the fineſt cities in the world. It is almoſt of a circular figure, about ten miles in compaſs, and is ſaid to contain no leſs than 30,000 inhabitants. There are but few inſtances of ſuch great cities built without the conveniency of either the ſea or a river; but this defect is ſupplied by may ſprings and rivulets that water the adjacent country, and a canal brought from the river Adda fills the ditch of the inward incloſure of the city with running water.

The cathedral, founded by John Galeus Viſconti, firſt duke of Milan, in 1386, ſtands in the centre of the city, and is of a prodigious bulk; though, according to my computation, it is a ſixth part leſs than St. Peter's at Rome; but infinitely excels it in the number of its ornaments and ſculptures, with

which it is ſo covered both within and without, that there is not the breadth of a hand to be ſeen that is unwrought. It is built after the Gothic manner; and to form a true idea of this edifice, it is neceſſary to conceive a vaſt collection of roſes, trees, animals, pyramids, groteſques, niches, ſtatues, and a thouſand other varieties, in an agreeable confuſion. There are, however, only ſome parts of this church completely finiſhed. The chapter thinking it for their intereſt not to proceed with too much vigour in a thing of this nature, which brings into their coffers vaſt ſums of money in donations and legacies. Martin the fifth's ſtatue ſtands in the choir, without a beard, and with a very young face, though he was near fifty years old when he was choſen pope; near it is the ſtatue of Pius IV. Behind the choir are two marble tables that contain a catalogue of all the relics preſerved in this church, among which is a piece of Moſes's rod, though there is another piece preſerved at Florence, and they pretend to have the rod intire at St. John de Lateran's. On the granite altar is a pretended nail uſed at the crucifiction, and five lights burn conſtantly round it day and night. The pavement of this cathedral is more curious and ſolid than that of St. Peter's at Rome, the marble of which being very thin, is almoſt worn out. We had from the ſteeple out of this church, a full view, not only of Milan, but of other cities in the plain of Lombardy, and of the conjunction of the Alps and Appenines near Genoa. The great bell, called St. Ambroſe, is ſeven feet in diameter, and weighs 30,000 pounds.

The ſeminary founded by Charles Boromeo, has a double portico 176 feet three inches long, and ſixteen feet ten inches broad, which extends round the inſide of a large ſquare court; the firſt order is Doric, the ſecond Ionic; and over the high portal is the ſtatue of Piety. The great hoſpital has alſo a large court 120 paces ſquare, about the inſide of

which are two rows of porticos, ſupported on each ſide by forty-two pillars of a kind of marble found in the Alps, each pillar conſiſting of one ſingle ſtone. The body of the ſtructure is of brick, and the old hoſpital is united with it, but the Lazaretto, or hoſpital for infected perſons lies about 300 paces without the city. This laſt is a large ſtructure, compoſed of four galleries joined in a ſquare, each of which contains ninety-two chambers about twenty-four feet broad, ſo that the whole length of each gallery including the walls, amounts to 1800 feet. The inſide is ſurrounded with a portico of marble pillars. The ſquare within is a meadow watered by ſeveral ſprings and brooks, and in the middle ſtands an altar ſupported by pillars, by which means the ſick may ſee maſs performed from their chambers.

The houſe of the marquis of Simonetta, two miles without the city, has an echo which repeats the laſt ſyllable about forty times. We heard it in a covered gallery in one of the wings of the building, where the echo anſwered from the other wing, and the ſound decreaſed like the reboundings of an ivory ball.

The people of Milan make many curioſities in ſteel and rock-cryſtal, with which they are furniſhed by the Alps in that neighbourhood. Of the largeſt pieces, they make looking-glaſſes; but theſe are ſeldom above a foot ſquare.

In our way from Milan to Pavia, which are only fifteen miles diſtant, we went to take a view of the famous convent in the plain of Berco, founded by John Galeazzo Viſconti, firſt duke of Milan. The church is of Gothic architecture; but the chapels and altars are not inferior to any in Italy. The cloyſters are ſurpriſingly handſome, and the gardens, parks, brooks, and avenues, exceeding delightful. It then contained about 58 friars, who lived there very agreeably.

The once famous, but now inconſiderable city of Pavia, is ſo much fallen from its ancient luſtre, that its poor remains bear ſcarce any reſemblance to what it was in ancient times, when it was the metropolis of the kingdom, and the reſidence of no leſs than twenty monarchs. The caſtle is now no more than an old heap of ſtones, and the fortifications quite neglected. The univerſity, which was founded by Charlemagne, and re-eſtabliſhed by Charles IV. is not much better than the town. It has, however, five colleges, among which that of Boromeo is worth notice, for the beauty of its ſtructure. The ſcholars of every college are diſtinguiſhed in this univerſity by wearing different gowns. The cathedral is a dark, low, and very old edifice; and over againſt it is an equeſterian ſtatue of braſs called the Rigiſol, which ſome imagine to be a ſtatue of the emperor Antoninus Pius.

On our leaving Pavia, we paſſed the river Ticinum now called Teſin, over a covered bridge, it being the moſt rapid, and largeſt river that falls into the Po. It is ſubject to great inundations, that ſometimes prove fatal to the adjacent fields. It is ſaid, that if theſe inundations continue for eight days, which however ſeldom happens, the coldneſs of the waters deſtroy the herbs to that degree, that they ſcarcely recover it for ſeveral years after. We dined at Voghera, a town about fifteen miles from Pavia, and the ſame night lodged at Novi, a city ſeated at the foot of the Apennines, within the juriſdiction of Genoa, from which it is thirty-eight miles diſtant, and the road between them is very mountainous.

Genoa is ſituated at the end of a gulph, partly on the brow of a hill that ſurrounds the gulph in the form of a creſent, and partly on a little plain between the foot of the hills and the ſea ſhore. The ſtreets are narrow, and the houſes in the lower part

of the city ſix or ſeven ſtories high; but are lower by degrees as the aſcent riſes. This affords a pleaſant proſpect at a diſtance; but is attended with ſeveral inconveniences, particularly with reſpect to coaches, which, for this reaſon, are not much in faſhion here, the ladies being generally carried in litters, and the gentlemen uſing calaſhes which they drive themſelves. The city is ſtrengthened by a double fortification, which on both ſides extends to the ſhore, the innermoſt incloſing the body of the city, and the ſecond the riſing ground about it. On my taking a view of the city, I could not help being ſurpriſed at its being commonly ſaid to be entirely built of marble; for except ſome houſes in the Strada Nuova, that are either adorned with, or have ſome fronts of marble, their ordinary materials for building are brick and ſtone, or both together; and their houſes are generally plaſtered over on the out-ſide. But notwithſtanding this, Genoa is not deſtitute of beautiful ſtructures, eſpecially in five or ſix of the beſt ſtreets, and in the ſuburbs of St. Pietro d' Arena; beſides, it has this advantage, that ſlates and glaſs are as plentiful here, as they are ſcarce in other parts of Italy.

The pretended gardens in the air, which ſome have compared to the penſile gardens of Semiramis, owe their original to nothing but the ſcarcity of ground in this city which induces the inhabitants to put their flower-pots in their balconies, and ſometimes to cover them with earth. Thoſe who intend to form a complete idea of Genoa, muſt view it from three ſeveral places. From the top of the Pharos; from the ſea at a mile's diſtance, and from the top of the hill.

The aſhes of St. John the baptiſt are ſuppoſed to be preſerved in the cathedral, in a ſhrine ſupported by four beautiful columns of porphyry, brought from Smyrna in 1098: and the image of

this ſaint is ſtamped on the coin of Genoa, which is the handſomeſt and beſt in Italy, and commonly called Genouines.

The ladies generally dreſs after the French faſhion; but the ordinary ſort make uſe of a kind of litttle fardingals. The noblemen, though not obliged to wear any particular habit, are generally clothed in black with cloaks; they aſſume the titles of dukes, marquiſſes, counts, &c. which the Venetian nobility do not; but they wear no ſwords. The doge, who muſt be at leaſt fifty years of age, is ſtiled his ſerenity. The ſenators, their excellencies, and the noblemen, moſt illuſtrious, a title of no great moment in Italy. The power of the doge, is as much limited as that of the doge of Venice. Beſides, at the end of every two years, deputies are always ſent to his ſerenity, to inform him that his time being expired he muſt leave the palace.

We once ſaw the whole Senate in their formalities at the proceſſion on the feaſt of Corpus Chriſti, where the Doge appeared in a crimſon robe, with a kind of ſquare bonnet on his head. Before him were carried two battle-axes, and a ſword in the ſcabbard. A Senator marched on each ſide of him in a black gown, made like that of the Doge's: the ſtreets were ſtrewed with green herbs, and lined on both ſides with tapeſtry. In the windows we obſerved the ladies in their richeſt dreſſes, with baſkets full of flowers, which they threw among thoſe who followed the proceſſion, according to their ſeveral inclinations, the gentlemen receiving theſe favours with low bows, from the hands of the fair diſtributers.

The trade of Genoa chiefly conſiſts in velvets, gloves, anchovies, dry confections, and various ſorts of fruits; but their trade is much decayed, for though ſome private perſons are ſtill exceeding rich, yet the generality grow poor. The government monopolizes the trade of corn and wine, ſo that the bakers fetch their corn from the public granaries, and the ta-

vern and innkeepers buy their wines out of the cellars of the ſtate.

Proceeding from Genoa towards Caſal, we returned back the ſame way as we went as far as Novi, where hiring a coach to Turin, we dined the next day at Alexandria, a ſmall city provided with ſlender fortifications. Caſal is a ſtrong city ſeated at the Po. Beſides the old caſtle, it has a new citadel fortified with ſix royal baſtions, with half-moons before the curtains, and a large and deep ditch full of water; the arſenal is ſtored with arms for 10,000 men. The French, while they had the citadel in their poſſeſſion, conſiderably improved the fortifications.

From Caſal we paſſed the Po a fourth time, and having proceeded along the banks for a conſiderable time, paſſed in ſight of Terni, a ſmall fortified place in Montferrat, under the juriſdiction of the duke of Savoy. Having travelled eight miles from Caſal, we entered Piedmont, and ſoon after found ourſelves among the mountains in a large and flat valley, almoſt ſurrounded with the Alps. In ſome parts of this plain the land is exceeding rich; but in ſome others very indifferent. In our paſſage through it we ſaw two or three large ſpots of ground, where two days before had ſtood the fineſt corn in the world; but it was now laid quite waſte by the hail-ſtones, the very ſtraw being beaten into the ground, and the vines, walnut, and other trees, broken to pieces.

The city of Turin is ſeated in a plain upon the river Doire, 300 paces from the Po, and not only the town, but the avenues leading to it are very pleaſant; but what appears moſt agreeable to ſtrangers, is the frank converſation of the inhabitants, after they have been almoſt tired with the ſtarched civilities and jealous reſerve of the Italians; for it may be ſaid without the leaſt exaggeration, that the court of Savoy is as ſprightly and gay as any in Europe. The old part of Turin is, indeed, but

indifferently built; but on the other hand, the new part has broad, ſtraight ſtreets; the houſes are large, high, and pretty uniform, and the ſtreet that paſſes through the two ſquares, and reaches from the caſtle to the new gate, is one of the fineſt in Europe. The houſes in the new ſquare, are adorned with large porticos, that incloſe them on all ſides, and though the duke's palace is not very magnificent on the outſide, it has good apartments, but the palace of the Jeſuits, and of the prince of Carignan are both magnificent ſtructures.

Turin is but of an indifferent bigneſs. It is incloſed with a regular fortification; but the citadel exceeds the reſt both in ſtrength and beauty. The walks ſhaded with oaks on the ramparts appear very delightful at a diſtance, and thoſe who walk there have a moſt agreeable proſpect; but the general meeting place of the gentry is near Valentia, a country ſeat of the duke's upon the banks of the Po, about a mile from Turin. Beſides which, the duke has ſeven or eight more, all of them well furniſhed.

Before we leave Turin, it is proper to mention the chapel in the cathedral, dedicated to the Holy Handkerchief, which is a glorious piece of workmanſhip; but that it excels the chapel of St. Lawrence at Florence, as is pretended, is far from being true. Upon this occaſion I muſt obſerve, that inſtead of one, there are at leaſt five or ſix of theſe pretended holy handkerchiefs, two of which are at Rome, in St. Peter's and John de Lateran; one at Cadoin in Perigot; one at Beſancon, one at Compeigne, one at Milan, and another at Aix la Chapelle; they all produce papal bulls to maintain their titles, in which point the handkerchief of Cadoin has the advantage, from its being authorized by no leſs than fourteen bulls; whereas that of Turin has only four.

Since we are going to leave Italy, it may be proper to mention ſome remarks in relation to the country in general. I am unable to give an account of the academies of the virtuoſi, eſtabliſhed in almoſt all the towns in Italy, from my not having had time to enquire particularly about them; but the affected oddneſs of their titles are very whimſical. We were treated with much civility by the Italians, but their complaiſance is a mixture of flattery and deſign, yet we found them by experience to be a very ſober people. The inns in the little towns, eſpecially on ſome roads, are ill furniſhed with proviſions. The firſt courſe called the A tipaſto, is a diſh of gibblets boiled with ſalt and pepper, and mixed with whites of eggs, after which come two or three ſmall diſhes, one after another, of different ragouts. Between Rome and Naples, the traveller is ſometimes regaled with buffaloes and crows; but the buffaloe's fleſh is black and hard, and that beaſt muſt be hunted, otherwiſe it is impoſſible to chew its fleſh. They have all the various kinds of wine in Italy; but the beſts ſorts are ſcarce. The Greco of Naples, and the Lacryma Chriſti are ſtrong, but at Florence and Monteſiaſcone, the richeſt wines are pleaſant, and have no more fire than what is convenient for ordinary drink, but there is no great quantity of them. The great duke's delicate Moſcadello grows in a little vineyard conſecrated to his own uſe, or to be ſent in preſents; but is never diſperſed through the country. There are alſo ſome good ſorts of wine near Verona, and in the ſtate of Genoa. About Loretto the caſks are made ſhort and broad like a Dutch cheeſe; but towards Pavia, their length is about ſeven times their diameter.

Towards Parma and Placentia, where there are excellent paſtures, they make cheeſe of all their milk. As butter is ſcarce in Italy, they uſe oil in all their ragouts, and fricaſees; but though they draw it

from their own olive-trees, it is frequently worſe than in thoſe countries where none of thoſe trees grow, for what will yield a price and keep longeſt is always exported for the ſake of gain. The Riviera di Genoa is peculiarly famous for excellent fruit.

In all our travels through Italy, we never ſaw either a hare or a partridge in the fields; and I might alſo add, that we ſaw none in the inns, which is the more extraordinary, as there are large ſpots of ground in Italy that are almoſt uninhabited, and conſequently might be expected to abound with game like other places of the ſame kind, in other parts of the world; beſides, the lords of theſe grounds ſeldom reſide upon them, and yet are as jealous of their rights as thoſe of other countries. Quails, however, are not ſuch rarities, for on the approach of ſpring, they come in ſuch flocks from Africa as to cover the whole country, at which time they are ſo tired with their long paſſage, that they throw themſelves into ſhips, and wherever they can find a place to repoſe themſelves, they may be caught in heaps without the leaſt ſtruggle; but as they are extremely lean, thoſe who take them uſually feed them for ſome time before they eat them.

I ſaw but one ſcorpion in Italy, and I could not learn that they are very miſchievous in this country. There are, however, ſeveral ways to guard againſt them, but I never ſaw any of thoſe hanging beds which ſome have repreſented as common here. The people about Verona make uſe of iron bedſteads, which they place at ſome diſtance from the walls, that thoſe inſects may neither breed in them nor be able to come upon the beds; and for the ſame reaſon the feet of the bedſteads are filed and poliſhed.

There are two ſorts of animals to which the Italians give the name Tarantula, one is a kind of lizard, whoſe bite is reputed mortal. This is particularly

found about Fondi, Cajeta, and Capua; but what other nations call the Tarantula is a field ſpider, many of which are in Abruzzo and Calabria, and they are alſo found in ſome parts of Tuſcany. Thoſe who are ſtung by this creature throw themſelves into a thouſand different geſtures, for they weep, dance, tremble, laugh, grow pale, ſwoon away, and after a few days of torment, expire if not aſſiſted in time: they find ſome relief by ſweating and antidotes, but muſic is the great ſpecific remedy.

There are ſeveral plants and trees in Italy not to be found in England; as palm-trees, which produce excellent dates, but are not very common: and here I cannot help obſerving, that we went to the pope's chapel on Palm-Sunday, where all the Cardinals were aſſembled, and he who officiated for the pope preſented a palm branch to every one of the reſt, theſe branches were almoſt five feet long, and the leaves were with great art woven into knots of ſeveral figures. We ſaw that which was ſent to the pope. All the prelates and other eccleſiaſtics had alſo branches, which were greater or ſmaller, according to the dignity of thoſe who bore them, but the laics have only olive-branches. The citrons of Florence are the moſt excellent of this kind of fruit. Oranges, lemons, pomegranates, olives, myrtles, Indian figs, caper trees, and many others are planted in the open fields, and the roads are in ſeveral part of Italy lined with white mulberry-trees for the nouriſhment of ſilk-worms.

I gathered ſome ſponges on the ſea-ſide towards Terracina, two of which were in a manner rooted on very hard flints, but the reſt lay looſe on ſhore. I ſpent ſome time to no purpoſe in ſearching for pumice-ſtones on mount Veſuvius, though it is generally ſaid, and even by very learned men, to be full of them, but this is a very great miſtake. There are indeed many porous and calcined ſtones that have ſome reſemblance to them; but the pumice-ſtone is

a production of nature, and grows in a little iſland over-againſt the cape of Mycæne, and when the ſea is agitated by a ſtorm, it looſens and carries ſome of them away, and the wind drives a great many ſmall pieces on ſhore between Puzzoli and Cumæ, eſpecially towarks Baiæ, where I have gathered ſome that were very fine.

The mountains of Italy abound with metals, mineral waters, cryſtal, alabaſter, a kind of agate, and ſeveral ſorts of marble, but the marble of the Archipelago has brighter colours; the white marble of Cararo is one of the fineſt ſorts in Italy, and a great deal of it is exported.

At our entrance into moſt cities our piſtols were taken from us, but we always found them at the other gate at our departure. This, however, is attended with ſome trouble, and at the end of the journey the charge amounts to as much as the piſtols are worth. It is not lawful to wear ſwords either at Genoa or Lucca; but this privilege is readily granted to the ſtrangers who deſire it, and both this and the former cuſtom are daily declining, ſo that in all probability they will be very ſoon out of date. The bayonet is prohibited in cities, but in the country every one may wear what arms he pleaſes, and even thoſe who travel on horſeback frequently carry fuſees.

The Stillettos at Milan are famous for doing their work effectually. Love and jealouſy are the two furies that ſhed moſt blood in Italy. The Italians are ſaid to be jealous without reaſon, and the leaſt ſuſpicion fills them with implacable rage. Not only at Venice, but every where elſe, the girls are ſent to nunneries in their infancy, and are uſually married, or at leaſt contracted, without ſeeing their future huſbands.

In all Italy we obſerved but one wind-mill, or rather the ruins of one at Leghorn. They uſe no tin veſſels in this country, on account of the ſcarcity

of that metal; all their veſſels being made of earthen ware. It is remarkable that the Italians begin the day immediately after ſun-ſet, and their clocks always ſtrike twenty-four hours from one ſun-ſetting to another. According to this manner of computation the hour of noon varies daily, for when the ſun ſets at four o'clock according to our calculation, they reckon one when we count five, and conſequently it is noon at twenty hours; and in like manner, when the ſun ſets at eight on our dials, it is one o'clock with them when we reckon nine, and juſt noon at ſixteen hours; and yet with reſpect to the artificial day between ſun riſing and ſun ſetting, they, like us, uſe the words yeſterday and to-morrow.

After we had left Turin, we lodged the firſt night at Veillano, and the next morning paſſing near the gates of the ſmall city of Suſa, which is ſeated among the mountains, we dined at Novaleſa, at the foot of Mount Cenis, over which there is a paſſage; but the reader muſt not imagine it to be as high as Caucaſus, or as piked as Teneriff; nor that its paſſage is over the top. For on coming to the higheſt part of this road, the traveller finds himſelf in a plain, or rather a valley, with reſpect to the lofty mountains with which it is ſurrounded.

At Novaleſa we took the mules that carried us over the mountain. The way is broad enough without any precipices, but is uneven and ſtony. On the higheſt acceſſible part of it is a croſs, which is the common boundary between Piedmont and Savoy. In the middle of the plain already mentioned is a lake of a full mile in compaſs, which according to common report is bottomleſs. The ſnow was almoſt melted on the hill, though not on the mountains on both ſides, which falling down at certain ſeaſons of the year, is the only thing that renders this paſſage dangerous. That ſide of the hill next Savoy being much rougher than the other,

we were carried in ordinary chairs by four men, who relieved one another by turns; we were thus brought ſafely and commodiouſly to the foot of the hill, where we paſſed the river Arche over a wooden bridge, which brought us to the village of Laſnebourg.

[It is remarkable, that the chairmen of theſe parts, without the leaſt panting or reſting, run directly up a mountain, whoſe height is a good day's journey, and then on the plain above out ſtrip us; and as ſoon as they have fitted their chairs, which is done in a few minutes, carry the company over the worſt part of the way for two hours together, making only four ſhort pauſes: ſuch is the effect of cuſtom and ſimple diet, to which they alſo owe their uncommon longevity, many of them attaining to an hundred years of age. Their uſual drink is milk, and they ſeldom taſte any wine. The machines, in which travellers are carried down hills, are a kind of ſtraw chairs with low banks, two arms, and inſtead of feet, a little board hanging by cords for the traveller to place his feet on. The ſeat, which is made of bark and ropes twiſted together, is faſtened to two poles and carried like a ſedan, with broad leather ſtraps.

The plain on the top of mount Cenis is properly a long uneven valley between very high mountains, whoſe tops, even in ſummer, are covered with ſnow. In winter and ſpring vaſt quantities of ſnow often fall into the valleys, which in thoſe ſeaſons make the journey not a little dangerous. It has been obſerved, that people buried in the ſnows have lived ſome days, and when near periſhing with cold and hunger, have often been relieved by the neighbouring villagers.]

Chambery is the capital of Savoy, and was formerly the reſidence of the dukes, though it is ſmall and but indifferently fortified. It is ſituated at the very foot of the mountains, at the conflux of two

navigable rivers, the Leſſa and Orbana; and if we may credit the inhabitants, the people are extremely obliging to ſtrangers, and the ladies very handſome.

St. John de Maurienne is ſeated in a very pleaſant valley of the ſame name, but it being an inconſiderable place, we did not think fit to go out of our way to view it, though we paſſed within two hundred paces of it; neither did we make any ſtay at Montmelian, a ſmall city on the right bank of the river Iſera ſtrengthened by a good citadel.

The river Arvo ſeparates the territories of Geneva from Savoy, and the wooden bridge built over it leads almoſt to the gates of the city of Geneva. The Arvo is indeed rather a brook than a river, and falling down from among the mountains, carries ſome gold-duſt along with it; but with all the care that can poſſibly be taken, a perſon can ſcarce produce ſo much gold out of it, as is ſufficient to pay the labour of an ordinary man, which was the reaſon of its being neglected.

The river Rhone, on its leaving the lake of Geneva, forms a little iſland. On the right ſide of the river the grounds are low and level, but on the other ſide it riſes inſenſibly to a ſmall hill, on which the chief part of the city of Geneva is built, the reſt being ſeated in the iſlands and on the other ſide of the Rhone; the whole is incloſed with ſuch fortifications as may preſerve them from being ſuddenly ſurpriſed. They do not want good ſtore of cannon, and in their arſenal they ſhew, among other things, the ladders with which the Savoyards intended to have ſcaled the walls of the city, and the petard that was to have been applied to burſt open the new gate in 1602. In remembrance of this deliverance, they ſtill celebrate an annual feſtival on the 22d of December, with ſermons ſuited to the occaſion, and feaſting their friends and relations,

when they never part without ſinging a particular ſong, which contains moſt of the circumſtances of that affair.

Though the city of Geneva is neither large nor magnificent, it may be juſtly eſteemed a delightful place. It having the advantage of pleaſant walks, and of the engaging converſation of the better ſort of inhabitants, and even the common people, by their honeſty, make amends for their clowniſhneſs. The academy is provided with learned profeſſors, and the pulpit with able miniſters; but the government allows only very moderate ſalaries.

Though the late perſecution of the Proteſtants in France leſſened the number of the ſtudents in divinity in this city, yet all exerciſes that are proper for the accompliſhment of young gentlemen are taught here in perfection, many of the Proteſtants in Germany chuſe rather to have their ſons educated here, than in France. The miſerable exiled and half-ſtarved Vaudois were received by the inhabitants with all the marks of compaſſion, and the French refugees alſo met with a kind reception.

It is remarkable, that the arms of Geneva, long before the reformation, had this motto, Poſt tenebras ſpero lucem, I hope for light after darkneſs. Which, ſince the reformation, they have changed into Poſt tenebras lux, Light ſucceeded darkneſs. Geneva, it muſt be confeſſed, is the pattern of ſobriety and moderation to other cities, not that they are here free from vicious perſons; but debauchery is not ſo triumphant as in many other places. They uſed formerly to puniſh adultery with hanging and drowning, as is ſtill done in ſome parts of Swiſſerland.

The waters of the lake, which are very pure and tranſparent, afford ſeveral ſorts of fiſh, and among the reſt trouts, ſome of which weigh fifty pounds each, and ſome are conſiderably larger. Their uſual way of catching theſe fiſh is pretty ſingular. The

fiſhermen who know exactly the time of the year when they ſwim down the lake into the Rhone, and when they return back, fix poles a-croſs the river where they come out of the lake, at ſuch a diſtance that the great fiſh cannot paſs through them, unleſs at certain open places, at which receptacles are made for them of wire, where they remain till they are taken out*.

Four ſmall leagues from Geneva, between the fort of Sluys and mount Credo is a cata[illegible], where the Rhone falls from a high precipice among the rocks, and is, as it were, ſwallowed up for ſome time, when ſuch as intend to go by water from Geneva to Lyons, are obliged to take water at Seſſel below the cataract, and the riſing up again of the river.

All the way between Geneva and Lauſanne, is one continued well peopled and well cultivated hill, where the road lies for the moſt part of the way along the lake, and at the ſame time affords a delightful proſpect of the lofty piles of forked mountains. The ſituation of Lauſanne is very rough and uneven, and being an inconſiderable place we did not ſtop here †.

Bern, the capital city of the moſt powerful Canton among the Swiſs, is of no large extent. Its buildings are generally of ſtone; but they are more ſolid than beautiful §.

[Baſil is the largeſt of all the towns of Swiſſerland, it having 220 ſtreets, ſix market-places, and ninety-nine wells. Its ſituation is uneven, moſt of the ſtreets being crooked and paved with ſharp ſtone, that the horſes carrying heavy loads up hill may

* See a more particular account of Geneva, and of this beautiful Lake in Mr. Addiſon's Travels.

† For a more particular deſcription of Lauſanne, ſee Mr. Addiſon's Travels.

§ See a ſuccinct account of this city, ibid.

have the ſurer footing. The bridge over the Rhine is 250 paces in length, and makes a good appearance. On a tower which ſtands on the ſide, is a crowned Moor's head, which every minute thruſts out its long red tongue: this droll figure does not, however, give ſuch diſguſt as a filthy repreſentation in a little cabin ſtanding on the middle of the bridge, before which the public proſtitutes, at their being baniſhed the town, are brought to undergo ſome ridiculous ceremonies. The city which lies on the German ſide of the Rhine, is called the leſſer town, and had its own juriſdiction; but is ſubordinate to the great town. It has no fortifications, and thoſe of the great town are very inconſiderable.]

[A great trade is carried on at Baſil in ribbons. The police is under good regulations; moſt of the offices being beſtowed by lot, and none but qualified perſons admitted candidates; but a perſon can ſeldom hold a lucrative employment above five years. No perſon is to wear lace, or ſilver or gold, under the penalty of three guilders for every offence; and all unmarried women are prohibited wearing ſilk clothes.] Here are ſeveral good libraries, in which there are ſome ancient manuſcripts, and cabinets of curioſities. In the cabinets of Eraſmus and Amerback, which belong to the univerſity, there are no leſs than twenty original pieces of Holbein: for one of which, repreſenting a dead Chriſt, 1000 ducats have been offered. Thoſe who are admirers of painting, muſt not neglect to take a view of the valuable pictures in the town-houſe, and particularly of the Dance of Death, painted by the famous Holbein on the wall of the French church, repreſenting a long train of perſons of all ſorts, holding one another by the hand, Death leading the dance. Holbein was a native of Baſil, and having learned his art without any inſtructor, had a particular turn in all his pieces. Among the rarities of this city the magiſtrates, with

their long beards, and odd dreſs, appear none of the leaſt.

It is a general cuſtom in the cities and towns of Swiſſerland, to preſent ſtrangers who paſs that way with wine, eſpecially if they are perſons of diſtinction. Thoſe who bring it have but one ſpeech, which they addreſs to all indifferently, with ſome variation of the titles, which they ſometimes find it difficult enough to place properly, and their courteſy muſt be returned with a preſent of money.

From Baſil, we paſſed by an eaſy deſcent, along the bank of the Rhine to Hunningen, which the French have been at a great expence in fortifying. The waters of the Rhine fill the ditches, and there lies a ſmall iſland directly over againſt it, which is joined to both ſides by the two bridges, built over both the arms of the river, and theſe bridges are well fortified, both in the iſle and on the German ſide.

From Hunningen we travelled to Friburgh, the capital of the territory of Briſgaw, four leagues diſtance from the Rhine, and ſeated in a plain at the foot of the hills. It is of a conſiderable extent, notwithſtanding which its fortifications are very good and regular. Several toys are made here of a ſort of gate found in that neighbourhood*.

About four hours journey from Friburg is Briſca, which is ſeated on a ſmall hill that ſeems as if raiſed on purpoſe, the whole country about it being as level as a bowling-green. On one end of this hill ſtands the town, and on the other the citadel, with ſtrong fortifications at the foot of the hill. There is alſo a ſtone bridge over the Rhine, which is well fortified on the French ſide. From hence we proceeded

* The reader will ſee a particular account of this city in Mr. Addiſon's Travels.

to Schleſtadt, a city of the lower Alſace, ſituated about three leagues from the Rhine, and four from Briſca. It is exceeding ſtrong, both by its fortifications, and its ſituation in a flat country, where there is not the leaſt eminence to annoy the town.

We next arrived at Straſburgh, which was a free imperial city; and the Lutheran religion was eſtabliſhed there, when it fell into the hands of the French, on the 30th of September, 1682. [This city has very few fine houſes; but the ramparts are extremely pleaſant, and planted round with trees. The cathedral deſerves ſeeing above any thing Straſburg affords; and the whole building being finiſhed in the year 1549, the Proteſtants are not chargeable with the ſatyrical ſculptures, which a few years ago were to be ſeen on the cornices and pedeſtals, repreſenting monkies, aſſes, hogs, &c. in monkiſh habits, and among the reſt a monk in an indecent poſture with a nun. I ſhall not examine whether the artificers took theſe liberties of themſelves, or whether it was done by order of the ſecular clergy, to be revenged on the monks for the ill offices they are always doing them. The furniture and ornaments which Lewis XIV. preſented to this church are extremely rich and magnificent; fifty perſons are ſaid to have been employed on them during eleven years, and they coſt that prince 600,000 dollars. To this church belongs a large clock, famous for exhibiting the ſeveral motions of the planets; the images ſtepping forth, and a cock crowing, though but hoarſly, highly divert the populace. The ſteeple of the cathedral is juſtly reckoned among the higheſt in all Europe, its altitude being computed at 574 feet, though others reduce it to 500.

Among the remarkable buildings muſt be reckoned the ropal hoſpital for invalids, and the Jeſuits college, which beſides a fine library, has alſo a college of antiquities.]

Being obliged, for preſſing reaſons, to make what haſte he could to Bruſſels, we embarked upon the Rhine, and in our way took a view of fort Lewis, which belongs to the French, and is ſituated between Straſburgh and the little city of Germerſheim. Its fortifications are not inferior to the other French fortreſſes upon the Rhine. Upon this river there is an iſland, which is here defended with a fort compoſed of four regular baſtions, and the two bridges on each ſide are covered by certain redoubts raiſed on the banks of the two arms of the river.

Night overtaking us ſooner than we expected, we were obliged to go on ſhore, and take up with a little ſtraw in a barn for our night's lodging, in a miſerable village; where, beſides the want of food, we were ſufficiently peſtered with the gnats.

From hence we proceeded to Spires, a free Imperial city, though of no large extent, and no trade. It being only conſiderable at preſent for the Imperial chamber being fixed there by Charles V. This is the chief court of Judicature of the empire, from whence there lies no appeal, except in ſome few caſes. The chief Judge, who muſt always be a Roman Catholic, repreſents the emperor's perſon, for which reaſon the Imperial ſceptre is always laid before him when he appears in court. There are beſides two preſidents, one a Proteſtant and the other a Roman, and fifteen aſſeſſors, ſeven of whom are Proteſtants, and the reſt of the Romiſh religion.

We now proceeded to Cologne, which we have already deſcribed; and then leaving the Rhine, travelled through a very delightful country to Aix la Chapelle, which was formerly a very pleaſant city, and though it has loſt moſt of its ancient luſtre, is ſtill large and handſome, and enjoys the freedom of its own government; only the dukes of Juliers, in whoſe territories it lies, have the nomination of one burgomaſter. This city was quite deſtroyed by At-

tila, but four years after was rebuilt by Charlemagne, who beſtowed many privileges upon it, conſtituted it the metropolis of Gaul beyond the Alps, and kept his conſtant reſidence here, where his tomb is ſtill ſhewn. The emperor is always a canon of Aix, and in that quality takes an oath at the time of his coronation.

We paſſed haſtily through Maeſtricht, which is a pretty large city, well built and ſtrongly fortified, and the ſame evening arrived at Liege, where we found that city ſo crouded with people, on account of the election of a new biſhop, that we were forced to take up with very indifferent lodgings. The city of Liege is of great extent, pretty populous, and has ſome handſome ſtructures, among which the cathedral and epiſcopal palace challenge the precedence. The Maeſe divides the whole city into two parts, the chief of them is ſituated on the left ſide, and joined to the other by an handſome ſtone bridge, the arches of which afford a free paſſage to large barks, wherein all ſorts of commodities are either imported or exported. The coal-miners have drawn thither a great number of armourers. The vineyards and the adjacent hills afford them a tolerable ſort of wine, which is not very ſtrong; and theſe hills alſo produce plenty of fine black marble.

From Liege we paſſed in ſight of Tongres and Saintron, and took up our quarters that night at Tilmont or Tirlemont. We dined the next day at Louvain, which is a ſpacious and pleaſant city, and the ſecond in the province of Brabant. It has ſeveral handſome churches, a town-houſe, phyſick-college, and ſome other public ſtructures; but it is chiefly remarkable for the univerſity founded by John IV. duke of Brabant, in 1425, which has no leſs than 45 endowed colleges, with divinity, law, and phyſic ſchools.

The ſame night we reached Bruſſels, the capital city of Brabant, a large populous city of an oval figure, ſeated partly in a plain, and partly on the brow of a ſmall hill. The lower part of the town being watered by ſeveral canals filled with the little river Senne, which has a communication with the Scheld, they are able to bear barks of a good burden.

The air of Bruſſels is exceeding good. The ſtreets are pretty broad, and well paved, the houſes large and commodious; moſt of the public ſquares are beautified with fountains, and the adjacent country is very delightful. The inhabitants of the city are free, and obliging. The governor's palace is neither regular nor magnificent, its chief advantage being its admirable proſpect into the park. On that ſide of the palace near the little garden is a great gun, the hiſtory of which is given in an inſcription on a piece of marble underneath it, containing in ſubſtance, that one of the enemy's ſhips being blown up, that cannon with a young girl were carried through the air into the palace, and that Iſabella Clara Eugenia, who was then governeſs of the Netherlands, ordered this cannon to be preſerved, and the maid to be educated.

The park, which is behind the flower garden, is well planted with oaks, beech and walnut trees. and ſtored with ſeveral ſorts of deer. The viſtos are here very delightful, and even their ramparts are planted with a double row of trees. Beyond the park is the pleaſure houſe, built by Charles V. in which he ſtaid five or ſix months after he had reſigned the throne of Spain to his ſon Philip. Not far from it is a gallery furniſhed with arms and inſtruments for tournaments, beſides ſuits of armour that belonged to ſeveral emperors, princes and great generals. Here we were alſo ſhewn the ſkins of three famous horſes ſtuffed, and ſo artfully joined,

that the horſes ſeemed alive. The firſt we were told belonged to King Philip II. and coſt twelve thouſand crowns; the ſecond bore on his back the Infanta Iſabella, when ſhe made her ſolemn entry into Bruſſels, and the third was preſerved for having ſaved the life of the archduke Albert at the ſiege of Oſtend.

It is remarkable that the filth of the city is carefully gathered and ſold at a good price; for the Flemmings and Dutch being great lovers of flowers, uſe this ſoil in particular for their flower beds.

It muſt be confeſſed that few cities in Europe can compare with Bruſſels for good company; as abundance of people of quality either live in, or reſort to, this city, who are eaſy of acceſs, eſpecially to ſtrangers. Every night, both in winter and ſummer, they take a tour in their coaches, where the men, as is practiſed at Rome, never go in the ſame coaches with the women, but for a very different reaſon; for as in Italy it is done to avoid the converſation of both ſexes, they ſeparate here out of a mere piece of gallantry; for the gentlemen always keeping one circle, and the ladies another, they meet continually, and thus have the opportunity of talking to, or ogling, one another at pleaſure; but the worſt of it is, that their continual ſalutations as often as they meet is no ſmall interruption to this general ſociety.

There is another pleaſant cuſtom obſerved among the citizens of Bruſſels on the 19th of January, when the women undreſs their huſbands and carry them to bed, and the huſbands are obliged to treat their friends the next day. They give two reaſons for the original of this cuſtom. The firſt is, that the city being reduced to ſuch extremity, as to be obliged to ſurrender to the enemy, the women only were allowed to eſcape, and to carry with them what they eſteemed moſt valuable, when, inſtead of their ornaments, they all marched out with their huſ-

bands on their backs. Others allege that a great number of the citizens of Bruſſels following St. Lewis in his firſt cruſade, moſt of them had the good fortune to eſcape the general rout, and afterwards coming home in a body, their wives rejoicing at their return, met and caught them in their arms, and carried them home.

The principal churches of Bruſſels are thoſe of St. Gudula and of the Jeſuits, which enjoy the peculiar privilege of uſing great bells like the pariſh churches, at which the other Monks are not a little jealous. At St. Gudula's church, particular notice is taken of the chapel of the holy ſacrament of miracles, where are preſerved certain hoſts in a gold ſhrine, which it is pretended were conſecrated by a prieſt, and afterwards bought by ſome Jews, who ſtabbing them with a knife, a great quantity of blood iſſued from them, upon which the Jews were burnt on the higheſt tower of the city walls. The whole ſtory is painted on the wall near the choir.

In the Jeſuits library they ſhew, among other curioſities, the chair covered with gilt leather, in which Charles V. reſigned the crown to his ſon. The Capuchins' church is perhaps the fineſt belonging to that order.

I was informed by ſome credible people that of 35,000 acres, which the province of Brabant contains, 29,000 belong to the Eccleſiaſtics. Some few Proteſtants live at Bruſſels; but ſcarcely dare own themſelves to be ſuch, though the inquiſition was never introduced into the Netherlands. The chief manufactures of this city are bone-lace and tapeſtry.

From Bruſſels we embarked on the canal, and in five hours came to the village called Little Villebroek, where taking boat upon the Rupel, we came with a fair wind and tide in two hours to Antwerp, which is ſituated in a ſmooth and level track of ground, upon the eaſtern bank of the Scheld, in the

form of a creſcent, and is ſaid to be 3635 geometrical paces in compaſs. The ſtreets are generally large, ſtraight, and well paved; but the houſes are built in a manner peculiar to itſelf, half of brick and half of wood, with a kind of battlements on the top, and very high roofs, which give them an antique appearance. The fortifications are not ſo much celebrated for their ſtrength as their beauty; the ramparts being almoſt every where adorned with double rows of trees, which in ſummer afford delightful and ſhady walks. The citadel, however, is a ſtrong and regular fortreſs. Formerly the ſtatue of the famous duke of Alva in braſs ſtood in the middle of the place of arms in the citadel, in complete armour, but without a head piece, extending his right arm towards the city, trampling under his feet a monſter with two heads and ſix arms. The Scheld, both at Antwerp and two leagues above and below it, is very deep and broad, which greatly contributed to the flouriſhing ſtate of this city in former times, when it had the reputation of being the richeſt, and moſt frequented port in Europe. The records of this city mention a certain merchant named John Deans, who having lent a million of gold to Charles V. afterwards invited that emperor to dinner, where after a noble entertainment, he threw the emperor's bond into the fire, which was of cinnamon. But the face of affairs is now much altered here, for the port of Antwerp is without ſhips, and the exchange without merchants, though the city has not quite loſt its ancient beauty, and there are ſtill many rich families left. Antwerp and Lyons were indeed once the chief of the Hans towns, and in this city was a handſome ſpacious edifice, called the Eaſterlin's houſe.

The bourſe or exchange of Antwerp is ninety feet long and ſeventy broad, including the breadth of the porticos that ſurround it on both ſides. It was firſt built in 1531, and got the name of bourſe

from a houſe, which ſtood in the ſame place, that had an eſcutchon with three purſes upon it; whence they ſay that the public places where merchants meet have ſince retained the name of bourſe. The town-houſe of Antwerp is a noble ſtructure.

When I was firſt at Antwerp, I was much ſurpriſed at the magnificence of its churches, eſpecially of that belonging to the Jeſuits, where nothing is ſeen but curious marble, and excellent pictures. But I afterwards found them infinitely ſurpaſſed by a hundred churches in Italy. However, though the Italians have their dome and towers ſeparate from the bodies of the churches, they cannot boaſt of ſuch pyramids, as the ſteeple of Antwerp cathedral, which has 33 bells, and is 420 feet high, approaching pretty nearly to that of Straſburgh, and is more finely wrought.

At about thirty paces diſtance from this church, is a well, the iron branches of which whereon the pully hangs are adorned with foliage work wrought by a famous ſmith, named Quintin Methys, who being in love with a painter's daughter, would have made her his wife; but notwithſtanding his being in good circumſtances, the painter abſolutely refuſed to marry his daughter to a blackſmith. Upon which the ſmith laid aſide his hammer, and taking up the pencil, became one of the beſt maſters of Antwerp, and had the young woman as the reward of his ingenuity.

The water of the Scheld near Antwerp is brackiſh, and as the fountains of the city could not ſupply the brew-houſes with a ſufficient quantity of water, they were forced to bring another ſupply by a canal, which emptying itſelf into a large ciſtern, from thence raiſed by an engine into a baſon, from which it is conveyed by forty pipes to the ſame number of brew-houſes.

Ghent is a large, pleaſant, and neat city. It enjoys the benefit of an excellent air and convenient ſitua-

tion, and receives no ſmall advantage from its neighbourhood to the Scheld and the Lys. Upon the bridge built over the latter ſtand two braſs ſtatues, repreſenting a man ready to cut off the head of another. The ſame figures are alſo painted in the town-houſe. The ſtory of which is thus related: A father and ſon being both condemned to death, a pardon was afterwards offered to either of them that would be the others executioner. After a long conteſt, the father prevailed on the ſon to ſave his own life by taking away his: but juſt as the ſon was ready to give the fatal blow, the blade either broke in the air, or flew out of the handle, which being conſidered as a moſt ſingular inſtance of the interpoſition of providence, they were both pardoned.

The ancient ſtructure, known by the name of the Prince's Court, was formerly the palace of the counts of Flanders. Here they ſhewed us the chamber where Charles V. was born, which was ſo little, that it would ſcarce hold a bed, notwithſtanding which, an ancient inſcription to be ſeen here proves, beyond contradiction, that this was certainly the place where that great prince firſt ſaw the light. The cathedral is a vaſt pile of building dedicated to St. Bevon.

Leaving Ghent, we paſſed along the canal to Bruges, a very large and handſome city: for though it is of leſs extent than Ghent, yet it is much more populous, and its houſes more uniform. Ships of five hundred tons may come up to the city by the canal; but Holland has drawn the trade from thence, as well as from Antwerp. The town-houſe, water-houſe, and market place: the epiſcopal palace, the cathedral, the colleges of the four nations of Flanders, the Jeſuits church, and the magnificent tombs in the collegiate church of our lady, are all very fine and worthy the obſervation of a traveller. The order of the Golden Fleece was inſtituted

by Philip the good duke of Burgundy in 1430. There are various opinions, in relation to its inſtitution, but the moſt probable opinion is, that this prince was induced to create this order from the great increaſe of his revenue by the importation of Engliſh wool.

At Bruges embarking again on the canal, we came in three hours to Oſtend, and proceeded from thence to Newport, which put an end to our travels; theſe had been extremely agreeable, and unimbittered with any accidents, notwithſtanding which, we found the higheſt ſatisfaction on our return home.

TRAVELS

THROUGH

ITALY AND SWISSERLAND,

BY

JOSEPH ADDISON, Esq.

Containing an account of the different cities he viſited; with whatever was ſeen remarkable or curious;—alſo a deſcription of the government, laws, cuſtoms and manners of the inhabitants of thoſe countries.

I SET out from Marſeilles on the 12th of December, 1699, in a tartane for Genoa, and late the ſame night arrived at Caſſis, a ſmall French port, where, to my great ſurprize, notwithſtanding it being the depth of winter, I obſerved all the mountains round the town covered with green olive-trees, or adorned with beautiful gardens, which afforded a variety of agreeable proſpects; the moſt uncultivated of them produce myrtle, balm, roſemary, lavender, and wild thyme; and I was here ſhewn at a diſtance, deſerts rendered famous by the penance of Mary Magdalene; who, after her arrrival with Joſeph of Arimathea, and Lazarus at Marſeilles, is ſaid to have wept away the reſt of her life among theſe ſolitary

mountains and rocks, which here afford a moſt romantic ſcene.

We continued our voyage the next day, until we were forced by contrary winds into the port of St. Rhemo, a pretty town in the territories of Genoa. The front to the ſea is ſmall, but there are a great number of houſes built behind, up the ſide of the mountain, to avoid the ſea winds and vapours. Here were ſeveral perſons who had nothing over their ſhoulders but their ſhirts, without complaining of the cold, and were not the poorer ſort free from the greateſt inconveniencies that attend thoſe of the northern nations, the extreme miſery and poverty in moſt of the Italian governments would be inſupportable. Near this city there are many plantations of pine-trees, which are not to be found in the other parts of Italy.

Sailing from thence, we ſteered directly for Genoa, with a fair wind that carried us ſtraight into the gulph, which is remarkable for tempeſts and ſcarcity of fiſh. We were forced to lie here two days, and the captain apprehended his ſhip to be in ſuch danger, that he fell upon his knees, and confeſſed himſelf to a capuchin who was on board; but at laſt taking the advantage of a ſide wind, we were driven back in a few hours as far as Monacho, which has a ſpacious harbour ſheltered on the weſt and north by a range of rocks; but the the ſhips are expoſed to the ſouth winds. The town of Monacho now ſtands on a promontary, where was formerly the temple of Hercules Monæchus, from which this ſmall principality takes its name.

In the dominions of the prince of Monacho there are only three towns, the chief of which is ſituated on a rock that runs out into the ſea, and is ſtrongly fortified by nature. It was formerly under the protection of the Spaniards; but the natives driving out the Spaniſh garriſon, received a French one, which at this time conſiſted of 500 men, and was

paid and officered by the French king. The palace has handſome apartments that are hung with pictures of the moſt celebrated beauties in the court of France.

We next took a ſmall boat, and proceeded ſlowly along the ſea-ſhore, in order in this manner to reach the city of Genoa; but finding the ſea too rough at Savona, we made the beſt of our way by land, and proceeded over rugged mountains and precipices, through a road much more difficult than that over mount Cennis.

The Genoeſe, like the old Ligurians, are eſteemed extremely artful, and addicted to knaviſh cunning; they are more induſtrious and inured to hardſhips than the reſt of the Italians; and while the barrenneſs of their country continues, there is no wonder that the manners of the inhabitants are the ſame, ſince nothing renders men ſharper than want. "The Genoeſe, ſays the Italian proverb, have a ſea without fiſh, land without trees, and men without faith."

On both ſides of Genoa are many beautiful palaces, which, to thoſe who ſail by it make the town appear much longer than it is. The city itſelf has the nobleſt appearance of any in the world. Moſt of the houſes being painted on the outſide, look remarkably gay and lively, and they are, beſides, eſteemed the higheſt in Europe. The new ſtreet is a double range of palaces from one end to the other, built with extraordinary magnificence and fit for the greateſt princes. I cannot, however, be reconciled to the manner in which ſeveral of their houſes are painted; indeed, figures, hiſtorical pieces, and perſpectives are very ornamental when drawn on walls, that would otherwiſe appear too naked and uniform; but inſtead of theſe, the front of a palace is often covered with painted pillars of different orders, which only ſhew, that there is ſomething wanting, and that the palace, which, without theſe counterfeit pil-

lars, would be beautiful in its kind, might have been more perfect by the addition of such as are real.

At the distance of a mile from Genoa is the Villa Imperiale, the front of which, without having any thing of this paint, consists of a Doric and a Corinthian row of pillars, and is much the handsomest of any I saw there. The duke of Doria's palace has the best outside of any in Genoa, as that of Durazzo is the best furnished within. In the first of these there is one room hung with tapestry, in which are wrought the figures of the great persons produced by the family; and perhaps there is not a house in Europe, that can shew a longer line of heroes, who have acted for the good of their country. A statue is erected to Andrew Doria*, at the entrance of the doge's palace with the glorious title of Deliverer of the Commonwealth, and one of his family has another that calls him Its Preserver. In the doge's palace are the rooms where the great and little council, with the two colleges, hold their assemblies; but the state of Genoa being very poor, though several of its members are extremely rich, infinitely more splendor and magnificence may be observed in the houses of particular persons, than in those that belong to the public. But in most of the states of Europe, the people shew the extremest marks of poverty, while the governors live in the greatest magnificence. The churches are here very fine, particularly that of the Annunciation, which makes a most beautiful appearance on the inside; all but one corner of it being covered with statues, paintings, and gildings.

* Andrew Doria was one of the greatest admirals and generals of his time, and particularly distinguished himself in the year 1528, by freeing his country from the tyranny of the French and Spaniards, and settling their government in the present form.

Nothing is more remarkable in the government of Genoa, than the bank of St. George, which is formed of ſuch branches of the revenues as have been appropriated to the diſcharging of ſeveral ſums that have been borrowed from private perſons, during the exigencies of the commonwealth; and whatever inconveniences the ſtate have laboured under, they have never alienated any part of theſe revenues to other uſes. The adminiſtration of this bank is for life, and partly in the hands of the principal citizens, which gives them a great authority in the ſtate. Thus, though this bank is generally thought the greateſt load on the Genoeſe, it diſtributes the power among particular members of the republic, and is no ſmall check upon the ariſtocracy; this may be one reaſon why the Genoeſe Senate behave with greater moderation towards their ſubjects than the Venetians.

Happy would it have been for the republic of Genoa, had ſhe followed the example of her ſiſter of Venice, in not allowing her nobles to purchaſe lands or houſes in the dominions of a foreign prince; for at preſent the greateſt among the Genoeſe are, in part, ſubjects to another crown, on account of their eſtates which lie in the kingdom of Naples, whoſe ſovereign taxes them very high, and is always ſo ſenſible of the advantage this gives him over the republic, that he will never ſuffer a Neapolitan to purchaſe the lands of the Genoeſe. This has rendered them under the neceſſity of being in the intereſt of the French, and they would probably continue ſo, though all the other ſtates of Italy entered into a league againſt them. It is eaſy for thoſe powers who are ſtrong at ſea, to bring them to what terms they pleaſe; for having but very little arable land, they are obliged to fetch all their corn from Naples, Sicily, and other foreign countries. Their fleet, which once gained ſuch a number of victories over the Saracens, Piſans, Venetians, Turks and Spaniards; that made

them maſters of Malta, Leſbos, Crete, Negropont, Sardinia, Majorca and Minorca; that ſettled them in Achaia, Theodoſia, Smyrna, Scio, and ſeveral towns on the eaſtern confines of Europe, is now reduced to ſix gallies. On their making an addition of only four new ones, the French king ſent his orders to forbid it, telling the republic, that he knew very well, how many they had occaſion for, This little fleet ſerves only to fetch them corn and wine, and in the ſummer ſeaſon to give the ladies an airing.

The republic of Genoa adorns its doge with a crown and ſceptre, on account of the conqueſt of Corſica, which had formerly a Saracen king; but though this gives their ambaſſadors a more honourable reception at ſome foreign courts, it may teach the people to have a mean opinion of their own form of government, and is a tacit acknowledgment, that monarchy is the more honourable. On the contrary, the old Romans practiſed a very barbarous kind of politics to inſpire a contempt of kings, whom they treated with the utmoſt infamy, and dragged at the wheels of their triumphal chariots.

From Genoa I took a chaiſe for Milan, and by the way ſtopped at Pavia, once the metropolis of a kingdom, though now a poor town. I there ſaw a convent of Auſtin monks, who about three years before pretended to have found the body of the Saint, by whoſe name their order is diſtinguiſhed. In a corner of one of the cloyſters of this convent are buried Sir Richard de la Poole, who took upon himſelf the title of duke of Suffolk, and the duke of Lorain who were both killed in the famous battle of Pavia. A monument is erected to them by Charles Parker an Engliſh eccleſiaſtic, who was himſelf interred in the ſame place.

In this city is an univerſity of ſeven colleges, one of which called the college of Boromeo, is a very large

and neat edifice. There is likewiſe an equeſtrian ſtatue in braſs of Marcus Antoninus, which the people of the place call Charles V. and ſome learned men Conſtantine the Great.

Pavia is the Ticinum of the ancients, which was ſo named from the river Ticinus, now called the Teſin. This river falls into the Po, and is exceſſively rapid. Biſhop Burnet ſays, that with the help of one rower, he ran down with the ſtream thirty miles in an hour.

Between Pavia and Milan I ſaw a convent of Carthuſians, which is a very ſpacious beautiful edifice, and their church, though a Gothic ſtructure, is extremely fine and curiouſly adorned.

I could not ſtay long in Milan, without viſiting the great church, of which I had heard the higheſt commendations; but was much deceived in my expectations at my firſt entering it, for I then ſaw only the front which was not half finiſhed, and the inſide was ſo ſmutted with duſt and the ſmoke of lamps, that neither the ſilver, the braſs work, nor the marble appeared to advantage. This vaſt Gothic ſtructure is all of marble, except the roof, which would have been built of the ſame ſubſtance with the reſt, had not its weight rendered it improper for that part of the building. The outſide of the church appears much whiter and freſher than the inſide, from its being often waſhed with rain: this renders the marble more beautiful and unſullied, than in thoſe parts that are not at all expoſed to the weather. It is generally ſaid that there are 11,000 ſtatues about the church; but they reckon into the account every particular figure in the hiſtory pieces, and ſmall images that make up the equipage of thoſe that are larger. There are indeed a prodigious multitude of ſuch as are bigger than the life; I reckoned above 250 on the outſide of the church, though I only told three ſides of it, and theſe were not half ſo thick ſet

as was then intended. The ſtatues are all of marble, and generally well cut; but the moſt valuable is a St. Bartholomew new flead, with his ſkin hanging over his ſhoulders. This is eſteemed worth its weight in gold.

Juſt before the entrance of the choir, is a little ſubterraneous chapel, dedicated to St. Charles Berromeo, where his body, in epiſcopal robes, is ſeen lying upon the altar in a ſhrine of rock cryſtal. This chapel is adorned with abundance of ſilver work. He was but twenty-two years of age when he was choſen archbiſhop of Milan, and forty ſix at his death; but made ſuch good uſe of his time by his charity and munificence, that his countrymen bleſs his memory, which is ſtill freſh among them. He was canonized about 100 years before, and if this honour was ever due to any man, ſuch public ſpirited virtues ſurely lay a juſter claim to it, than a ſour retreat from mankind; a ſet of chimerical viſions, or whimſical penances, the uſual qualifications of Roman ſaints.

The great church of Milan has two noble pulpits of braſs, each of which incircles a large pillar like a gallery, and is ſupported by huge figures of the ſame metal. The hiſtory of our Saviour, or rather of the bleſſed Virgin; (for it begins with her birth and ends with her coronation in heaven, while that of our Saviour only comes in by way of epiſode) is finely cut in marble by Andrew Biffy. The church is alſo very rich in relics, which run up as high as Daniel, Jonas, and Abraham; among the reſt, they ſhew a fragment of our countryman Becket, and indeed there are but few treaſuries of relics in Italy, that have not a tooth or bone of this ſuppoſed Saint. It would be an endleſs taſk to reckon up the riches in ſilver, gold, and precious ſtones that are amaſſed together in this and ſeveral other churches of Milan.

In this city there are ſaid to be 60 convents of women, 80 of men, and 200 churches. At the Celeſtines is a picture in freſco of the marriage of Cana, which is very much eſteemed, but the painter has put ſix fingers to the hand of one of the figures. There is ſhewn the gates of the church that St. Ambroſe ſhut againſt the emperor Theodoſius, for his barbarouſly maſſacring the inhabitants of Theſſalonica; and out of theſe gates ſeveral have picked ſplinters of wood for relics. There is a ſmall chapel lately rebuilt, where the ſame Saint is ſaid to have baptized St. Auſtin, and an inſcription upon the wall ſays, that it was in this chapel, and on this occaſion, that he firſt ſung Te Deum, and that his great convert anſwered him verſe by verſe. In one of the churches is a pulpit and a confeſſional, very finely inlaid with lapis lazuli, and ſeveral kinds of marble by a father of the convent; and indeed there are often found particular members of convents, who have excellent mechanical genuiſes, and divert themſelves at their leiſure hours with painting, ſculpture, architecture and other arts.

In the Ambroſian library is ſhewn the Italian genius; for they have ſpent more money on pictures than on books; but among the heads of ſeveral learned men, there is no Engliſhman to be met with except biſhop Fiſher, whom Henry VIII. cauſed to be beheaded for not owning his ſupremacy. Books are indeed the leaſt part of the furniture which people uſually go to ſee in an Italian library; for theſe are generally ſet off, after the example of the old Greeks and Romans, with pictures, ſtatues, and other ornaments, where they can afford them.

In an apartment behind the library are ſeveral rarities often mentioned by travellers, as a head of Titian by his own hand; Brugeal's Elements, an ancient Latin manuſcript of Joſephus, and another of Leonardus Vincius, which king James I. could not

procure, though he offered to give 3000 Spaniſh piſtoles for it. Settala's cabinet is always ſhewn to ſtrangers among the curioſities of Milan: among theſe is a piece of cryſtal that incloſes a couple of drops, which when ſhaken look like water, though perhaps they are nothing more than bubbles of air. Such a rarity as this is ſhewn at Vendome in France, which they there pretend is a tear that our Saviour ſhed over Lazarus, and was gathered up by an angel, who put it in a little cryſtal vial, and made a preſent of it to Mary Magdalene; and Claudian has celebrated another curioſity of the ſame kind.

The citadel of Milan is eſteemed by the Italians a very ſtrong fort, it formerly held out after the conqueſt of the reſt of the dutchy, and its governor is independant on the governor of Milan.

At the diſtance of two miles from Milan, there ſtands a building that would have been a maſter piece in its kind, had it been deſigned by the architect for an artificial echo; upon a piſtol's being diſcharged, the ſound returned upon us above fifty-ſix times, though the air was very foggy. The firſt repetitions follow very thick; but are heard more diſtinctly in proportion as they decay. They are cauſed by two parallel walls which beat the ſound back on each other, till the undulation is quite worn out, like the ſeveral reflections of the image from the oppoſite looking-glaſſes.

*[The city contains many other churches richly adorned, and abounding in relics. But what appears very ſingular, both here and in other churches in the Milaneſe, the entrances are crouded with old women ſpinning, or buſy about ſome other employment: but as they do not beg, they poſſibly conceive it to be a work of merit, to ſpend the whole day as it were in the houſe of God.]

* The ſentences incloſed thus [ ] are obſervations of Mr. Keyſler.

The ſtate of Milan reſembles a vaſt garden ſurrounded by a noble mound of rocks and mountains: and, indeed, if a man conſiders the face of Italy in general, he would be apt to conclude, that nature had laid it out into that variety of ſtates and governments that are found in it; for the Alps at one end, and the long range of Appenines that paſſes through the body of it, branch out on all ſides into different diviſions, that ſerve as ſo many natural boundaries and fortifications to the little territories that lie among them. We accordingly find the whole country cut into a number of particular kingdoms and commonwealths, in the oldeſt accounts we have of it, till the power of the Romans, like a torrent that overflows its banks, bore down all before it, and ſpread into its remoteſt corners. But this exorbitant power becoming unable to ſupport itſelf, the government of Italy became again broken into ſuch a variety of ſubdiviſions, as are pointed out by the ſituation of the country.

In this and in ſeveral other of the Italian courts, many fall in with the dreſs and carriage of the French, but the people have, however, a kind of aukwardneſs, which diſcovers that the airs they give themſelves are not natural. It is indeed very ſurpriſing, there ſhould be ſuch a diverſity of manners where there is ſo ſmall a difference in the air and climate. The French are always open, familiar and talkative; while the Italians, on the contrary, are ſtiff, ceremonious and reſerved. In France a gaiety and ſprightlineſs of behaviour is eſteemed a compliment; but the Italians, notwithſtanding their natural fierineſs of temper, always affect to appear ſober and ſedate; ſo that one ſometimes meets young men walking through the ſtreets with ſpectacles on their noſes, that they may be thought to have impaired their ſight by cloſe ſtudy, and to appear more grave and judicious than their neighbours. This difference

of manners chiefly proceeds from difference of education. It is usual in France to bring their children into company, and to encourage from their infancy, a kind of forwardness and assurance. They apply themselves more universally to their exercises than any other nation, and a young gentleman is seldom seen, that does not fence, dance and ride in some tolerable perfection; which not only gives them a free and easy carriage, but has a kind of mechanical operation on the mind, by keeping the animal spirits always awake and in motion. But what most contributes to this light and airy humour is the free conversation allowed them with their women, which gives them a certain vivacity of temper, and makes them endeavour after such a behaviour as is most agreeable to that sex. On the contrary, the Italians being excluded from making their court this way, endeavour to recommend themselves to those with whom they converse, by their gravity and wisdom. In Spain, therefore, where there are fewer liberties of this nature allowed, there is something still more serious and composed in the manners of the inhabitants.

I travelled from Milan, through a very pleasant country to Brescia, which is famous for its iron-works. The town and province, have a freer access to the senate of Venice; and have their injuries sooner redressed, than any other part of their dominons; and having always a mild and prudent governor, live much more happily than their fellow subjects. For as they were once a part of the Milanese, and are now on its frontiers, the Venetians are afraid of exasperating them, by laying on them the same load of taxes as on the other provinces, for fear of a revolt.

A small day's journey brought me to Verona, after having passed by the lake Benacus, now called Lago di Garda, which is thirty-five miles in length, and

twelve in breadth, and was at this time extremely rough with tempeſts; for this lake perfectly reſembles a ſea, when worked up by ſtorms.

The river Adige runs thrugh Verona, and is the only great river in Lombardy, that does not fall into the Po. At Verona is to be ſeen a famous amphitheatre, which, with a few modern reparations, has all the ſeats intire. There is ſomething very noble in it, though the high walls and coridors, with which it was ſurrounded, are almoſt intirely ruined, and the area is quite filled up to the lower ſeat, though it was formerly ſo deep, as to let the Spectators ſee in ſafety, the combats of the wild beaſts, and gladiators. There are ſome other antiquties in Verona, the principal of which is the ruins of a triumphal arch erected to Flaminius.

I had not yet ſeen any gardens in Italy worth notice; for the Italians fall as far ſhort of the French in this particular, as they excel them in their palaces. However, it muſt be ſaid to the honour of the Italians, that the French took from them, the firſt plans both of their gardens and their waterworks, ſo that their ſurpaſſing them at preſent, is rather to be attributed to the greatneſs of their riches, than the excellence of their taſte.

Among the churches of Verona, that of St. George is the handſomeſt. Its chief ornament is the martyrdom of that Saint, drawn by Paul Veroneſe. A ſtranger is always ſhewn the tomb of Pope Lucius, who lies buried in the dome.

From Verona to Padua, I travelled through a very pleaſant country, planted thick with rows of white mulberry trees, whoſe leaves furniſh food for great quantities of ſilk worms, while the ſwine and poultry, conſume the fruit. The trees themſelves ſerve at the ſame time as ſo many props for their vines, which extend all along like garlands, from tree to tree, and between the ſeveral ranges lie fields of corn, which in theſe warm countries ripens much

better among the mulberry ſhades, than if it were expoſed to the open ſun. I arrived ſo late at Vicenza, that I had not time to take a full view of the place, and the next day brought me to Padua.

St. Antony, who lived about 500 years before this time, is the great Saint to whom the people of this laſt city pay their devotions. He lies buried in a church, that is at preſent dedicated to him, though it was formerly conſecrated to the Bleſſed Virgin. It is extremely magnificent, and very richly adorned, and it is remarkable, that there are narrow clifts in the monument that ſtands over him, where good Catholics rub their beads, and ſmell his bones, which they ſay have a natural perfume; and indeed the ſmell is very like that of apoplectic balſam; and what would make one ſuſpect, that the marble is rubbed with it, is its being obſerved that the ſcent is ſtronger in the morning, than at night. A great number of pictures and inſcriptions are hung up by his votaries, in ſeveral parts of the church. For thoſe who are in any ſignal danger implore his aid, and if they come off ſafe, call their deliverance a miracle, and perhaps hang up a deſcription or picture of it in the church, a cuſtom that ſpoils the beauty of ſeveral of the Romiſh churches, and often cauſes the walls to be covered with impertinent inſcriptions, wretched daubings, and hands, legs, and arms of wax.

The church of St. Juſtina deſigned by Palladio is a handſome, luminous, and diſencumbered building, and is eſteemed by many artiſts, one of the fineſt works in Italy. The long nave conſiſts of a row of five cupolas, the croſs one half on each ſide a ſingle cupola, deeper and brooder than the other; and over the altar is a piece performed by Paul Veroneſe, repreſenting the martyrdom of St. Juſtina.

The univerſity of Padua, is much more regular than it was formerly, though it is not yet ſafe walk-

ing the ſtreets after ſun-ſet. In the great town-hall of the city ſtands a ſtone ſuperſcribed *Lapis Vituperii*, and any debtor who will ſwear he is not worth five pounds, and is ſet by the bailiffs thrice, with his bare buttocks on this ſtone, in a full hall, clears himſelf of any farther proſecution from his creditors. But this is a puniſhment that nobody has ſubmitted to for twenty-four years paſt.

At Padua there is a manufactory of cloth, which has brought very great revenues into the republic; but the Engliſh have not only gained upon the Venetians in the Levant, which uſed chiefly to be ſupplied from this manufactory, but have great quantities of their cloth in Venice itſelf, few of the nobility wearing any other ſort, though the magiſtrate of the pomps is obliged by his office to ſee that nobody wears the cloth of a foreign country.

From Padua I went down the river Brent in the ordinary ferry, which brought me in a day's time to Venice. Having frequently heard this repreſented as one of the moſt defenſible cities in the world, I took care to inform myſelf of the particulars in which its ſtrength conſiſts, which I found, is chiefly owing to its advantageous ſituation, for though it has neither rocks nor fortifications, it is perhaps the moſt impregnable town in Europe. It ſtands at leaſt four miles from any part of the main land, and the ſhallows that lie about it are never frozen hard enough to bring over an army from the land-ſide, and on that expoſed to the Adriatic, the entrance is ſo difficult, that they were obliged to mark it out with ſeveral ſtakes driven in the ground, which they could cut out upon the firſt approach of an enemy's fleet. For this reaſon the little iſlands that lie at the entrance are not fortified to the beſt advantage; though theſe might very eaſily be made to command all the paſſes that lead to the city from the Adriatic; nor could an ordinary fleet with bomb veſſels hope to

ſucceed againſt a place that has always in its arſenal a conſiderable number of men of war and gallies ready to put to ſea on a very ſhort warning. If therefore we would ſuppoſe them blocked up on all ſides, by a power too ſtrong for them both by ſea and land, they would be able to defend themſelves againſt every thing, but famine, and even this would be greatly mitigated by the vaſt quantities of fiſh, with which their ſeas abound, and that may be taken up in the midſt of their very ſtreets; which is ſuch a natural magazine, as few other cities can boaſt.

Our writers of voyages repreſent this city as being in great danger of being left, within an age or two, on the Terra Firma, from the ſea's inſenſibly ſhrinking from it, and retiring into its channel. But the ſea ariſes as high as ever, though the ſand it brings along with it is apt to choak up the ſhallows; and they are in no danger of loſing the benefit of their ſituation, while they are at the expence of removing theſe banks of ſand and mud; indeed they are at a great charge in keeping the deep channels free and open.

The city is conveniently ſituated for commerce, and in its neighbouring territories it has ſeveral navigable rivers, that run up into the heart of Italy, by which they might ſupply many countries with fiſh, and other commodities; and beſides they have the greateſt opportunities of carrying on a trade to each ſide of the Adriatic, and to the Levant: but notwithſtanding theſe advantages, their trade is far from being in a flouriſhing condition; and there are high duties laid on merchandize: Their nobles think it beneath them to engage in traffic: Their merchants who are grown rich, buy the honour of nobility, and generally give over trade: Their manufactures are ſilk, cloth, and glaſs, which were formerly the beſt in Europe, but are now excelled by thoſe of other countries: They are tenacious of their old

laws and cuſtoms, while a trading nation ſhould be always making new changes, as different emergencies ariſe.

At a diſtance, Venice reſembles a great town half floated by a deluge. It is every where croſſed by canals, ſo that a perſon may go to moſt of the houſes either by land or water. This is a very great convenience to the inhabitants; for at Venice a gondola with two oars is as magnificent as a coach and ſix with a large equipage in other countries. It beſides makes all other carriages extremely cheap. The ſtreets are generally paved with free-ſtone or brick, and always kept very neat, for no carriage is permitted to paſs through them. There is an innumerable multitude of very handſome bridges all of one arch, and without any fence on either ſide, which would be a very great inconvenience to a city of leſs ſobriety. It is indeed ſurpriſing that the Venetians ſhould be ſo little addicted to drinking, ſince they are in a moiſt air, and a moderate climate, and have no ſuch diverſions as riding, hunting, walking, bowling, and the like exerciſes, to employ them without doors: but the nobles are not to converſe too much with ſtrangers, and are therefore in no danger of learning it from them, and they are commonly too diſtruſtful of each other, to allow of the freedoms uſed over the bottle.

In Venice there are many noble palaces; but their furniture is not commonly very rich, if we except the pictures, which are more numerous here than in any other place in Europe, and done by the beſt maſters of the Lombard ſchool, as Titian, Paul Vernoſe, and Tintoret. The rooms are generally hung with gilt leather, which on extraordinary occaſions, they cover with tapeſtry, and hangings of greater value. The flooring is formed of a kind of red plaſter made of bricks ground to powder, and worked into mortar, and being rubbed with oil, form a ſmooth, ſhining, and beautiful ſurface. Theſe

particularities are principally owing to the moiſture of the air, which would have an ill effect on other kinds of furniture, as is too viſibly ſeen in many of their fineſt pictures.

The arſenal of Venice is an iſland of about three miles in compaſs, which contains all their ſtores and proviſions for war that are not actually employed. There are docks for their men of war and galleys, as well as workhouſes for all preparations both by ſea and land. The building in which the arms are depoſited, makes a great ſhew, and about 100 years ago was a very extraordinary place, but great part of its furniture is now grown uſeleſs. There ſeemed to be near as many ſuits of armour as there are guns, many of the ſwords are old faſhioned and unwieldy, and the fire arms fitted with locks that are not to be compared with thoſe that are now in uſe. The Venetians pretend, they could in caſe of neceſſity fit out thirty men of war, 100 galleys, and ten galeaſſes; but it is not eaſy to conceive how they could man half the number.

The Venetian ſenate is one of the wiſeſt councils in the world, though according to the reports of ſeveral who have been well verſed in their conſtituton, a great part of their politics is founded on maxims, which are far from being honourable; but nothing is more admirable than the great ſecrecy that reigns in their publie councils. If we reckon only the ſitting members, the ſenate is generally as numerous as the houſe of commons, and yet its reſolutions are carried ſo privately, that they are ſeldom known till they diſcover themſelves in the execution. Not many years ſince they had great debates, relating to the puniſhment of one of their admirals; and though they laſted a month together, and concluded in his condemnation, none of his friends, nor any of thoſe who had warmly engaged in his defence, gave him the leaſt intimation of what was paſſing againſt him, till he was actually ſeized and in the hands of juſtice.

Monſieur Amelot computes, that in his time there were 2500 nobles who had voices in the great council; but I was told, that they did not now exceed 1500. However, each of theſe think themſelves equal at leaſt to the electors of the empire, and but one degree below kings. The nobility ſpreads equally through all the brothers, and they generally thruſt the females of their families into convents, the better to preſerve their eſtates. Hence the Venetian nuns are famous for the liberties they allow themſelves. They have operas within their own walls, and if they are not much miſrepreſented, often go out of their bounds to meet their admirers.

The great diverſions at Venice during the carnival, as well as on other extraordinary occaſions, is maſking; for though the Venetians are naturally grave, they love to give into the follies and entertainments of ſuch ſeaſons, when diſguiſed in a falſe perſonage; and indeed they are under a neceſſity of finding out ſuch diverſions as may agree with their ſituation, and make them ſome amends for the loſs of thoſe pleaſures which may be met with upon the continent. Theſe diſguiſes occaſion abundance of love adventures, and there is ſomething more intriguing in the amours of Venice than in thoſe of other countries. Operas are another great entertainment at this ſeaſon; but the poetry is generally as extremely bad as the muſic is good. The comedies at Venice, and in all other parts of Italy, are alſo very indifferent; for as their poets have no notion of genteel comedy, when they have a mind to make their audience merry, they fall into the moſt filthy double meanings, but no part is generally ſo wretched as that of the fine gentleman, particularly when he converſes with his miſtreſs; for the whole dialogue is then an inſipid mixture of romance and pedantry. But it is not ſurpriſing that the poets of ſo reſerved and jealous a nation ſhould fail in ſuch converſations on the

ſtage, where there are no patterns in nature. There are four ſtanding characters which regularly enter into every piece that is acted: the Doctor, Harlequin, Pantaloon, and Coviello. The doctor is a complete pedant, who with a deep voice, and magiſterial air, breaks in upon converſation; backs every thing he ſays, with quotations out of Galen, Hippocrates, Plato, Virgil, or any other author: and all anſwers from his companions are conſidered by him as impertinencies or interruptions. Harlequin's part is made up of abſurdities and blunders; he miſtakes one name for another, forgets his errand, ſtumbles over queens, and runs his head againſt every poſt that ſtands in his way: and all this is attended with ſomething ſo comical in his voice and geſtures, that a perſon ſenſible of the folly of the part, can ſcarcely forbear being pleaſed with it. Pantaloon is commonly an old cully, and Coviello a ſharper.

Among the ſeveral ſhews that are annually exhibited, there is one performed on Holy Thurſday which is peculiar to the Venetians. A ſet of artizans, by the help of ſeveral poles laid acroſs each other's ſhoulders, build themſelves up into a kind of pyramid, ſo that there is ſeen a pile of men in the air of four or five rows riſing one above another, and yet the weight is ſo equally diſtributed, that every man is able to bear his part of it. The ſtories, if they may be ſo called, growing leſs and leſs in proportion as they advance higher, until a little boy repreſents the point of the pyramid, who, after ſtanding there a ſhort time, leaps with great dexterity into the arms of one who catches him at the bottom: and in the ſame manner the whole edifice falls to pieces. This trick was, however, practiſed by the Romans.

At Venice I took a bark for Ferara, and in my way ſaw ſeveral mouths of the Po, which diſcharged themſelves into the Adriatic. Ferrara is very large, but

extremely thin of people; yet, though it has a citadel, and is ſurrounded by ſomething like a fortification, it requires more ſoldiers to defend it than the pope has in his whole dominions. The ſtreets are extremely beautiful, both on account of their length, breadth, aud regularity. The fineſt convent in the place belongs to the Benedictines, who ſhew in the church the monument of Arioſto.

I now proceeded down a branch of the Po as far as Alberto, within ten miles of Ravenna. All which ſpace is miſerably uncultivated, till coming near Ravenna the ſoil is rendered extremely fruitful, and ſhews what a great part of the reſt might be, were there hands ſufficient to manage it to the beſt advantage. It is now very marſhy, and generally overgrown with ruſhes on both ſides the river, which made me fancy that it was once floated by the ſea, that lies within four miles of it; an opinion that was confirmed by ſeeing Ravenna, almoſt at the ſame diſtance from the Adriatic, though it was formerly the moſt famous of all the Roman ports, and is repreſented by the old geographers, as ſituated among ſhallows and marches. The place ſhewn for the haven is on a level with the city, and has probably been ſtopped up by the heaps of ſand thrown into it by the ſea; for all the ſoil on that ſide of Ravenna has been inſenſibly left there by the ſea's diſcharging itſelf upon it for many ages. The remains of the Pharos, which ſtand about three miles from the ſea, and two from the city, have their foundations covered with earth for ſome yards. It was a ſquare tower of about 12 yards in breadth, as appears from the part which yet remains entire; ſo that its height, to have preſerved a juſt proportion, muſt have been very conſiderable.

On the other ſide of the city, where the ſea is ſuppoſed to have formerly flowed, is a little church called the Rotunda, at the entrance of which is a ſquare

piece of marble, that ſhews it to have been a little pagan monument of two perſons who were ſhipwrecked, perhaps in the very place where this monument now ſtands. The chancel of the church is vaulted with a ſingle ſtone four feet in thickneſs, and 124 in circumference. On the outſide of this cupola there ſtood a great tomb of porphyry, and the ſtatues of the twelve Apoſtles; but in the war carried on in Italy by Lewis XII. the tomb was broken in pieces by a cannon ball, and, perhaps, the ſame blow made the flaw in the cupola, though the inhabitants ſay it was cracked by thunder, that deſtroyed the ſon of one of their Gothic princes, who having been foretold what kind of death he was to die, took ſhelter under it to ſave himſelf. I aſked an Abbot that was in the church, what was the name of this Gothic prince, when after a little recollection he anſwered, he could not tell preciſely; but thought it was one Julius Cæſar.

In a convent of Theatines, they ſhew a little window in the church, through which the Holy Ghoſt is ſaid to have entered in the form of a dove, and to have ſettled on one of the candidates for the biſhoprick. This dove is repreſented in the window, and in ſeveral other places in the church, and is in great reputation all over Italy.

In the large ſquare of the town ſtands the ſtatue of Alexander VII. which is caſt in braſs, and is in the ſame poſture that is always given the figure of a pope. His arm is extended, as if bleſſing the people.

In another ſquare is placed on a high pillar, the ſtatue of the bleſſed Virgin, dreſſed like a queen, with a crown upon her head, and a ſcepter in her hand, for having delivered the town from a raging peſtilence. The cuſtom of crowning the Virgin Mary is ſo much in faſhion among the Italians, that there is often ſeen in their churches a little tinſel crown,

or, perhaps, a circle of ſtars glued to the canvas over the head of the figure, which ſometimes ſpoils a good picture.

From Ravenna I proceeded to Rimini, paſſing by the way of the Rub con, now called the Piſcatello, a river that is not ſo very contemptible as it is generally repreſented. Rimini has nothing modern to boaſt of. Its antiquities are a triumphal arch raiſed by Auguſtus, which makes a noble gate to the town; the ruins of an amphitheatre, a marble bridge of five arches, built by Auguſtus and Tiberius, and the Suggeſtum, on which Julius Cæſar is ſaid to have harangued his army after his having paſſed the Rubicon. It is built of hewn ſtone, like the pedeſtal of a pillar: but ſomething higher than ordinary, and is but juſt broad enough for one man to ſtand upon it.

At the diſtanne of twelve miles from Rimini ſtands the little republic of St. Marino, which though it lies out of the common road of travellers, and has exceſſively bad ways to it, I could not forbear viſiting in order to enjoy the pleaſure of ſeeing ſomething in it more ſingular than can be found in great governments.

The town and little republic of St. Marino ſtands on the ſummit of a very high and craggy mountain, where it is generally hid among the clouds, and when I ſaw it, lay under the ſnow, though it was clear and warm weather in all the country around it. I could not hear of a ſpring or fountain in the whole dominions; but the people are well provided with large ciſterns and reſervoirs of rain and ſnow-water. The wine that grows on the ſides of this mountain is extremely good, and much better than any on the cold ſide of the Appenines, and theſe are depoſited in cellars, moſt of which have a natural advantage, that in the hotteſt ſeaſons renders them extremely cold; for in the ſides of them there are generally deep

holes that run into the hollows of the hill, whence there conſtantly iſſues a breathing kind of vapour, ſo very chilling in the ſummer time, that a man can ſcarce ſuffer his hand in the wind of them.

This mountain, with a few neighbouring hillocks ſcattered about the bottom of it is the whole extent of theſe dominions. They have what is called three caſtles, five churches, and three convents, and reckon about 5000 perſons in their community. Both the inhabitants and the hiſtorians who mention this little republic, give the following account of its original. St. Marino, by birth a Dalmatian, and by trade a maſon, was employed above 1300 years ago in the reparation of Rimini, and having finiſhed his work retired to this ſolitary mountain, finding it very proper for the life of a hermit, which he led in the greateſt rigours and auſterities of religion. He had not been long here before he wrought a reputed miracle, which joined with his extraordiary ſanctity, gained him ſuch eſteem, that the princeſs made him a preſent of the mountain, to diſpoſe of it at his own diſcretion. His reputation occaſioned its being ſoon peopled, and gave riſe to the republic, which calls itſelf after his name; ſo that the commonwealth of Marino may at leaſt boaſt of a nobler original than that of Rome; the one having been at firſt an aſylum for robbers and murderers, and the other a reſort of perſons eminent for their piety. To this ſaint the beſt of their churches is dedicated, and there his aſhes are depoſited. His ſtatue ſtands over the high altar, holding in its hands a mountain crowned with three caſtles, which are alſo the arms of the commonwealth; to his protection they attribute the long duration of their ſtate, and conſider him as the greateſt ſaint next the bleſſed Virgin; and ſo high is their veneration for him, that by a law in their ſtatute book, ſuch as ſpeak diſreſpectfully of him are to be puniſhed in the ſame manner as thoſe who are convicted of blaſphemy.

This inconſiderable republic has laſted 1300 years, in which time all the other ſtates of Italy have frequently changed their maſters, and forms of government. Their whole hiſtory is compriſed in two purchaſes made of a neighbouring prince, and in a war in which they aſſiſted the pope againſt the Lord of Rimini. In the year 1100 they bought a caſtle in the neighbourhood, and another in the year 1170. The papers of the conditions are preſerved in their archives, and it is remarkable that the name of the agent for the commonwealth, of the ſeller, of the notary and the witneſſes, are the ſame in both the inſtruments, though drawn up at 70 years diſtance from each other, which cannot proceed from a miſtake in the date, becauſe the names of the popes and emperors, with the years of their reſpective reigns are ſet down in both. About 290 years after this, they aſſiſted Pope Pius II. againſt Malateſta, lord of Rimini, and having helped to conquer him, received from the pope, as a reward for their aſſiſtance, four little caſtles. They repreſent this as the flouriſhing time of their commonwealth, when their dominions reached half way up a neighbouring hill, however, they are now reduced to the ancient limits. But were they to be attacked, would probably ſell their liberty as dear as poſſible; for there is but one road to climb up to them, and they have a very ſevere law againſt any of their own people, that enters the town by another path, leſt a new one ſhould be worn out on the ſides of their mountain, and all who are capable of bearing arms are not only exerciſed, but ready at a moment's call.

The ſovereign power was originally lodged in what they called the Arengo, a great council, in which every houſe had its repreſentative: but finding too much confuſion ariſing from ſuch a multitude of ſtateſmen, they devolved their whole authority into the hands of the council of ſixty. The Arengo is ſtill called together in caſes of extraordinary import-

ance, and if after due ſummons any member abſents himſelf, he is to be fined to the value of about a penny Engliſh, which the ſtatute ſays, he ſhall pay *fine aliqua diminutione aut gratia*, that is, without diminution or favour. However, in the ordinary courſe of government, the council of ſixty, which notwithſtanding the name, only conſiſts of forty perſons, has the adminiſtration of affairs. They are made up half out of the noble families, and half out of the plebeians, but are not admitted till they are twenty-five years of age. Theſe decide every thing by balloting, and chuſe the officers of the commonwealth. They thus far agree with the great council of Venice, but enjoy a much more extenſive power; for no ſentence can ſtand that is not confirmed by two thirds of this council, into which no perſon can be admitted during the life of his father, nor two be in it of the ſame family, nor any one enter but by election.

The chief officers of the commonwealth are the two capitaneos, whoſe power reſembles that of the old Roman conſuls; but they are choſen every ſix months. Some have ſerved this office ſix or ſeven times, but the ſame perſon never enjoys it twice ſucceſſively. The third officer is a commiſſary, who judges in all civil and criminal affairs, but as the many alliances, intermarriages, and friendſhips, and alſo perſonal feuds, and animoſities, might, in ſo ſmall a ſtate, obſtruct the courſe of juſtice, if this office was in the hands of one of their own number, the commiſſary is always a foreigner, who is choſen for three years, and maintained out of the public ſtock. He muſt be a doctor of law, and a man of known integrity; he is joined in commiſſion with the capitaneos, and acts much in the ſame manner, as the recorder of London, under the lord mayor. Thus the commonwealth of Genoa, while that republic was divided by the Guelphs and Gibbelines, was obliged to make uſe of a foreign judge. The fourth

man in the ſtate is the phyſician, who muſt alſo be a ſtranger: he is maintained at the public expence, and is obliged to keep a horſe to viſit the ſick, and to inſpect all the drugs that are imported. He muſt be at leaſt thirty-five years of age, a doctor of the faculty, and eminent for his honeſty and piety; and that the commonwealth may not be depopulated by his raſhneſs or ignorance, and that they may not ſuffer long under a bad choice, he is elected only for three years. Another perſon, who makes no ordinary figure, is the ſchool-maſter, and there are ſcarce any perſons in the place who have not ſome tincture of learning. The ſtatutes of the republic are printed in one large volume in folio, and in the chapter on the public miniſters it is ſaid, that when an ambaſſador is diſpatched from the republic to any foreign ſtate, he ſhall be allowed out of the treaſury to the value of a ſhilling a day.

In ſhort, theſe people are eſteemed very honeſt and rigorous in the execution of juſtice, and ſeem to enjoy more content and happineſs among their rocks and ſnows, than others of the Italians in the pleaſanteſt vallies in the world. Indeed nothing can be a greater inſtance of the natural love of mankind for liberty, and of their averſion to arbitrary government, than ſuch a ſavage mountain covered with prople, while in the ſame country, the Campania of Rome is almoſt deſtitute of inhabitants.

In paſſing from Rimini to Loretto, the moſt remarkable towns are Peſaro, Fano, Senigallia, and Ancona. Fano, which received its name from the fane or temple of Fortune that ſtood in it, has a triumphal arch erected to Auguſtus; but though it is very much defaced by time, the plan of it as it ſtood intire, with all its inſcriptions, is neatly cut upon the wall of a neighbouring building. In each of theſe towns is a beautiful marble fountain, where the water runs continually through ſeveral little ſpouts which look very agreeable in theſe hot coun-

tries, and give a refreſhing coolneſs to the air about them: that of Peſaro is handſomely deſigned.

On my arrival at Loretto, I inquired for the Engliſh Jeſuits lodgings, and on the ſtair-caſe that leads to them, ſaw ſeveral pictures of ſuch as had been executed in England: as the two Garnetts, Old-Corn, and thirty others; but whatever were their crimes, the inſcriptions ſay they ſuffered for their religion; and ſome of them are repreſented enduring ſuch tortures as are never uſed in Great Britain. Thoſe who ſuffered in 1679 are ſet by themſelves, and to ſhew that they were quartered, a knife is ſtuck in the boſom of each figure.

The riches ſeen in the Holy Houſe and treaſury are prodigious, and as much ſurpaſſed my expectations as other ſights generally fell ſhort of them. Here ſilver can ſcarce find admiſſion, and gold itſelf looks but poorly, among ſuch an incredible number of precious ſtones. If the devotion of its princes continues in its preſent fervour, in a few ages more, there will be here the jewels of the greateſt value in Europe. The laſt offering was made by the Queen Dowager of Poland, and coſt her 18,000 crowns.

Some have wondered that this treaſury is not attacked by the Turks, ſince it lies ſo near the ſea-ſhore, and is ſo weakly guarded; but they have formerly attempted it without ſucceſs, and the Venetians keep too watchful an eye over them to ſuffer them to enter the Adriatic. It might, however, be eaſily ſurpriſed by a Chriſtian prince who has ſhips that paſs to and fro without ſuſpicion, eſpecially if he had a party in the town to ſecure one of the gates in the diſguiſe of pilgrims; for it is generally reported that 100,000 of them are ſometimes there in a day; but the veneration for the Holy Houſe, and the horror of an action that would raiſe the reſentment of all the Catholic princes in Europe, will probably be as great a ſecurity to the place, as the ſtrongeſt fortifi-

cation. It is extremely ſurpriſing to ſee ſuch an immenſe quantity of wealth lie dead and uſeleſs in the midſt of ſuch poverty and miſery as here reign on all ſides. The pope would, doubtleſs, make uſe of theſe treaſures, which may be conſidered as the hidden reſerves and magazines of the church in caſes of the utmoſt extremity, and her laſt defence and preſervation; but if all this wealth was turned into current coin, and employed in commerce, it would make Italy the moſt flouriſhing country in Europe.

The caſe of the Holy Houſe is nobly deſigned and executed by the great maſters of Italy, who flouriſhed about a hundred years ago. The ſtatues of the Sybils, are finely wrought, each of them in a different air and poſture, as are alſo thoſe of the prophets underneath them. The roof of the treaſury is painted with the ſame kind of device. At the upper end of it there ſtands a large crucifix very much eſteemed. Our Saviour is repreſented upon it in the laſt agonies of death, and amidſt all the ghaſtlineſs of the viſage, it has ſomething in it extremely amiable. The gates of the church are ſaid to be of Corinthian braſs, and have many ſcripture ſtories wrought upon them in baſſo relievo. The pope's ſtatue, and the fountain by it, would make a noble ſhew in a place leſs adorned with ſo many other excellent pieces of art. The ſpicery; the cellar and its furniture; the great revenues of the convent, and the ſtory of the Holy Houſe, are too well known to be here particularly mentioned.*

From Lorretto I paſſed in my way to Rome through Recanati, Marcerata, Tolentino and Poligni. In the laſt of which towns is a convent of nuns, called La Conteſſa, that has in its church an incomparable Madona, of Raphael. At Spoletto, the next town

* See Miſſon's Travels.

on the road, are ſome antiquities, the moſt remarkable of which is an aqueduct of a Gothic ſtructure for conveying the water from mount St. Francis to Spoletto, which is not to be equalled for its height by any other in Europe. From the foundation of the loweſt arch to the top, is computed to be 230 yards.

In proceeding from thence to Terni, I ſaw the river Clitumnus, celebrated by ſo many of the poets, for making the cattle white that drinks its waters. The inhabitants of the country have ſtill the ſame opinion, which is confirmed by their having many oxen of a whitiſh colour. This breed was probably firſt ſettled in the country, and continuing ſtill the ſame ſpecies, has made the inhabitants impute it to a wrong cauſe. Yet they may as well fancy their hogs turn black for ſome ſuch reaſon, becauſe there are none in Italy of any other breed.

I went out of my way to ſee the famous cataract about three miles from Terni, formed by the fall of the river Velino, mentioned by Virgil. The channel of this river lies very high, and is on all ſides ſhaded by a green foreſt made up of ſeveral kinds of trees that preſerve their verdure all the year, and with theſe the neighbouring mountains are covered. The river runs extremely rapid before its fall, and then ruſhes down a precipice of 100 yards in height, throwing itſelf into the hollow rock, which has been probably worn with ſuch a conſtant fall of water. It is is impoſſible to ſee the bottom on which it breaks, on account of the thickneſs of the miſt that riſes from it, which at a diſtance looks like clouds of ſmoke aſcending from a vaſt furnace, and diſtils in perpetual rains on all the places that lie near it. The river, after having found its way out from among the rocks where it falls, runs into the Nera: the channel of this laſt river is white with rocks, and the ſurface for a conſiderable diſtance covered with froth and bubbles, from its running all along upon

the fret, and its ſtill breaking againſt the ſtones that oppoſe its paſſage.

From this river I proceeded to another called Narni, but ſaw nothing remarkable there except Auguſtus's bridge, which ſtands half a mile from the town and is one of the ſtateſieſt ruins in Italy; for though it has no cement, it looks as firm as one intire ſtone. One of the arches was unbroken, and was the broadeſt I had ever ſeen, though its great height prevented its appearing ſo. The middle one was ſtill much broader. They joined two mountains together, and, doubtleſs, belonged to the bridge of Narni mentioned by Martial, though Mr. Ray ſuppoſes them to be the remains of an aqueduct.

The fatigue I felt in croſſing the Appenines, and in my whole journey from Loretto to Rome, was very agreeably relieved by the variety of ſcenes I paſſed through. Not to mention the rude proſpects of rocks riſing above each other; the deep gutters worn in their ſides by torrents of rain and melted ſnow, or the long channels of ſand that wind about their bottoms, which are ſometimes filled with ſo many rivers; we ſaw in ſix days travelling, the ſeveral ſeaſons of the year in their utmoſt beauty and perfection. I was ſometimes ſhivering on the top of a bleak mountain, and ſoon after baſking in a warm valley covered with violets, and ſurrounded with almond trees in bloſſom, the bees already ſwarming over them, though but in the month of February. The road ſometimes led through groves of olive-trees or by gardens of oranges, or into ſeveral hollow apartments among the rocks and mountains, that reſembled ſo many natural green houſes, from their being always ſhaded with a great variety of trees and ſhrubs, which perpetually retain their verdure.

Upon my arrival at Rome, I took a view of St. Peter's, and the Rotunda, leaving the reſt till my

return from Naples*. St. Peter's ſeldom anſwers the expectation of the traveller on his firſt entering it; but inſenſibly enlarges itſelf on all ſides, and every moment mends upon the eye. The proportions are ſo nicely obſerved that nothing appears diſtinguiſhed above the reſt; and it ſeems neither extremely high, nor long, nor broad; becauſe it is all of them in a juſt equality. On the contrary in our Gothic cathedrals, the narrowneſs of the arch makes it riſe in height or run out in length. The lowneſs frequently opens it in breadth, or a defect in ſome other particular makes a ſingle part appear in great perfection. Though every thing in this church is admirable, the moſt aſtoniſhing part of it is the cupola. It is not eaſy to conceive a more glorious ſhew in achitecture than what a man meets with when he ſtands under the dome. If he looks upward, he is aſtoniſhed at the ſpacious hollow, and has a vault on every ſide of him, that affords one of the beautifulleſt viſtos that the eye can poſſibly paſs through. Upon my going to the top of it, I was ſurprized to find that the dome ſeen in the church, is not the ſame with that ſeen without doors; the laſt being a kind of caſe to the other, the ſtairs lying between them both, by which one aſcends into the ball.

I went next to ſee the Rotunda, which is ſo much changed from the ancient Pantheon as deſcribed by Pliny, that ſome have imagined that it is not the ſame temple; but Fontona has fully ſatisfied the world in this particular, and ſhewn how the ancient figure and ornaments of the Pantheon have been changed into what they are at preſent. The profeſſed admirers of the ancients find abundance of chimerical beauties in this ſtructure, the architects themſelves never thought of; as one of the moſt famous of the

* See a more particular deſcription of theſe ſtructures in Miſſon's Travels.

moderns in that art tells us, the hole in the roof of the Rotunda is ſo admirably contrived, that it makes thoſe who are in the temple look like angels, by diffuſing the light equally on all ſides of them.

All the old highways that lead from Rome, have ſeveral little ruins on each ſide of them; for the ancient Romans generally interred their dead near the great roads, and none but a few of very great quality were buried within the walls of the city.

In paſſing from Rome to Naples, I found nothing ſo remarkable as the beauty of the country, and the extreme poverty of the inhabitants. The preſent deſolation of Italy is, indeed ſurpriſing, when we conſider the incredible multitudes of people with which it abounded during the reigns of the Roman emperors, and notwithſtanding the removal of the imperial ſeat, the irruptions of barbarous nations, and the civil wars in which it has been involved, one can ſcarcely imagine how ſo fertile a ſoil ſhould become ſo miſerably depopulated: for by a very moderate computation, there were more inhabitants in the Campania of old Rome than are now in all Italy. This deſolation is no where more viſible than in the territories of the pope; and yet ſeveral reaſons might induce a man to expect that theſe dominions would be the beſt regulated, and the moſt flouriſhing of any in Europe. Their prince is in general a perſon of learning and virtue, mature in years and experience, who has ſeldom any pleaſure to gratify at his people's expence, and is neither incumbered with a wife, children or miſtreſs, and the ſanctity of his character ought to oblige him in a more particular manner to conſult the good and happineſs of mankind. The direction of church and ſtate being lodged entirely in his hands, his government is free from thoſe principles of faction, that are mixed in the compoſition of moſt others; his ſubjects are more at his

diſpoſal than thoſe of the moſt abſolute government, ſince they have a higher veneration for his perſon, and not only court his favour, but his bleſſing: his country is extremely fertile, and has good havens both in the Adriatic and Mediterranean ſeas; an advantage which he and the Neapolitans enjoy above the reſt of the Italians; and, in ſhort, he has a privilege ſuperior to all other princes, in drawing large ſums out of Germany, Spain, and other countries, which it might be imagined would be a great eaſe to his own ſubjects. But notwithſtanding all theſe favourable circumſtances, there is not a more miſerable people in Europe than the ſubjects of the pope. His dominions are thin of inhabitants, and a great part of the ſoil uncultivated. His ſubjects are wretchedly poor and idle, and have neither ſufficient manufactories nor traffic to employ them. Theſe ill effects are, perhaps, chiefly to be aſcribed to the very genius of the Romiſh religion, which here ſhews itſelf in its utmoſt perfection. A country muſt needs be half depopulated, where a great proportion of the inhabitants of both ſexes are debarred the uſe of marriage, and bound by the ſtricteſt vows of chaſtity; there muſt needs be great poverty and want in a country which invites into it ſuch prodigious ſwarms of vagabonds, under the name of pilgrims, and confines in cloyſters an incredible multitude of young and luſty drones, who, inſtead of increaſing the common ſtock by their induſtry and labour, lie as a dead weight on their fellow ſubjects, and conſume the charity that ought to ſupport the old, the decrepid and the ſickly. The numerous hoſpitals every where erected, ſerve rather to encourage the people in idleneſs than to ſet them at work; not to mention the immenſe riches which lie uſeleſs in churches and religious houſes, with the multitude of feſtivals that are never to be violated by trade or buſineſs. In reality they are here ſo entirely taken up with men's ſouls, that they neglect the good of

their bodies ; and when there is added to theſe evils an avaricious pope, who is reſolved to raiſe a family it is no wonder if the people ſink under ſuch a complication of diſtempers. Yet it is to the pope's enriching their nephews that Rome owes its preſent ſplendour and magnificence. For it would have been impoſſible to have erected ſo many glorious palaces with ſuch a profuſion of pictures and ſtatues, and the like expenſive ornaments, had not the riches of the people fallen at ſeveral times into the hands of particular perſons, and into many different families.

On my arrival at Naples, I was for ſome days employed in ſeeing public proceſſions, which are always very magnificent in the holy week. It would be tedious to give an account of the various repreſentations of our Saviour's death and reſurrection ; of the figures of himſelf, the virgin Mary, and the apoſtles, carried about on this occaſion, with the cruel penances with which ſome perſons torment themſelves, and the multitude of ceremonies that attend thoſe ſolemnities. I ſaw, at the ſame time, a very ſplendid proceſſion for the acceſſion of the duke of Anjou to the crown of Spain, in which the viceroy rode on the left hand of Cardinal Cantelmi. To grace this ceremony the blood of St. Januarius was expoſed, which liquified at the approach of the ſaint's head, though it was ſaid to be hard congealed before. I had twice an opportunity of ſeeing this performed, and muſt confeſs, that I am ſo far from thinking it a real miracle, that I look upon it as one of the moſt bungling tricks I ever ſaw.

Though I had lived above a year in a Roman Catholic country, I was ſurpriſed to ſee many ceremonies and inſtances of ſuperſtition at Naples, that are not ſo much as thought of in France ; but as there has been a kind of ſecret reformation made, though not publickly owned in the Romiſh church, ſince the ſpreading of the Proteſtant religion, ſo

ſeveral nations are recovered out of their ignorance, in proportion as they converſe more or leſs with thoſe of the reformed churches. Hence the French are more enlightened than the Spaniards or Italians, and many of the Roman Catholic gentlemen of our country will not ſcruple to laugh at the ſuperſtitions they ſometimes meet with in other nations.

I ſhall avoid a particular deſcription of the grandeur of the city of Naples, the beauty of its pavement, the magnificence of its churches and convents, the multitude of its inhabitants, and the delightfulneſs of its ſituation, ſince theſe have been given by many others with great exactneſs.* But muſt obſerve, that ſhould a war break out, the town would have reaſon to apprehend the exacting of a large contribution, or a bombardment, ſince it has only ſeven gallies, a mole, and two little caſtles, capable of obſtructing the approaches of an enemy. Beſides, the ſea, which lies near it, is not ſubject to ſtorms, has no ſenſible flux or reflux, and is of ſuch depth, that a veſſel of burden may come up to the very mole.

Statues, pictures, and pieces of antiquity, are not ſo common at Naples, as might be expected, in ſo great and ancient a city of Italy, becauſe the viceroys took care to ſend whatever was moſt valuable of this nature into Spain. Two of their fineſt modern ſtatues are thoſe of Apollo, and Minerva, placed on each ſide of Sanazarius's tomb. On the face of this monument, which is all of marble, and very neatly wrought, Neptune is repreſented in baſs relief among the Satyrs, to ſhew that this poet was the inventor of piſcatory eclogues.

There are ſeveral delightful proſpects about this city, eſpecially from ſome of the convents; for there is ſeldom to be found in Italy, a ſpot of ground

* See Miſſon's Travels.

peculiarly delightful, but a convent is placed upon it. The many cupolas of this city do not appear to the beſt advantage, when ſeen at a diſtance, from their being generally too high and narrow. The marquis of Medina Sidonia, during his viceroyalty erected a ſhell of a houſe, which had he had time to have finiſhed, would have been a very noble building, and have commanded a view of the whole bay. This houſe ſtands on the ſide of a mountain, and would have had a garden to every ſtory, by the help of a bridge which was to have extended over each of the gardens.

The bay of Naples is extremely delightful, it lies in almoſt a circular figure, of about thirty miles in diameter, and three parts of it are covered with a noble ſhelter of woods and mountains. It is divided from the bay of Salernum, by the high promontory of Surrentum, between the utmoſt point of which, and the iſle of Caprea, the ſea enters by a ſtreight of about three miles in breadth. This iſland, like a vaſt mole, ſeems to have been planted there purpoſely to break the violence of the waves that run into the bay, and extends in length, almoſt in a parallel line to Naples, while the exceſſive height of its rocks ſecures a great part of the bay from winds and waves, which enter again between the other end of this iſland, and the promontory of. Miſeno. Thus the old geographers call the bay of Naples, the Crater, probably from its thus reſembling a round bowl half filled with liquor. In the boſom of this bay ſtands Naples, which has the moſt delightful ſituation in the world, though the weſtern mountains deprive it of an advantage which Vitruvius would have to the front of his palace, of ſeeing the ſetting ſun.

[The inhabitants of Naples have been always notorious for leading a life of lazineſs, and pleaſure, which partly ariſes from the wonderful fertility of the country, that does not make labour ſo eſſentially

neceſſary as in other countries, and partly from the nature of the climate, that relaxes the fibres of their bodies, and diſpoſes the people to a life of indolence.]

At about the diſtance of eight miles from Naples, is a noble ſcene of antiquities. What is called Virgil's tomb is the firſt we meet with. This poet was certainly buried at Naples, but I think it almoſt as certain, that his tomb ſtood on the other ſide of the town towards Veſuvius. By this tomb is the entrance into the grotto of Pauſilypo, which the common people of Naples believe to have been formed by magic, and that Virgil was the magician. They have an higher opinion of him for having formed the grotto than the Æneid.

To form a juſt idea of this place, the reader muſt imagine a vaſt rock undermined with a paſſage, and highway through it, near as long and as broad as the mall in St. James's park. This ſubterraneous paſſage is much improved, ſince Seneca gave ſo bad a character of it. The entrance at both ends is higher than the middle, and ſinks by degrees to throw in more light upon the reſt. Towards the middle are two large funnels, bored through the roof of the cavern, to let in light, and freſh air. There are no vaſt heaps of ſtones to be ſeen about the mountain, though the great quantities of them could not certainly be concealed, had they not been conſumed in the moles and buildings of Naples. This confirmed me in a conjecture which I made at the firſt ſight of this ſubterraneous paſſage; that it was originally not ſo much deſigned for a highway, as for a quarry of ſtone; but that the inhabitants finding a double advantage by it, hewed it into the preſent from. The ſame deſign was perhaps the original of the Sybil's grotto, conſidering the prodigious multitude of palaces, that ſtood in its neighbourhood. When I was at Chateaudun in France, I met with a very curious perſon, a member of one of the uni-

VIRGIL'S TOMB.

verſities of Germany, who had ſtaid a day or two in the town longer than ordinary, to take the meaſures of ſeveral empty ſpaces cut in the ſides of a neighbouring mountain: ſome of them were ſupported with pillars formed out of the rock; ſome reſembled galleries, and ſome were not unlike amphitheatres. The gentleman had formed ſeveral ingenious hypotheſes relating to the uſe of theſe ſubterraneous apartments, and from thence made ſeveral obſervations on the magnificence and luxury of the ancient Chateaudunois; but communicating his thoughts on this ſubject to one of the moſt learned perſons of the place, he was not a little ſurpriſed to hear, that theſe ſtupendous works were only ſo many quaries of free-ſtone wrought into different forms according as the veins of it directed the work men.

About the diſtance of five miles from the grotto of Pauſilypo, lie the remains of Puteoli, and Baiæ, in a delightful ſituation; but the country about them has been miſerably torn by earthquakes, ſo that the whole face of it is changed from what it was formerly. The ſea has overflowed a multitude of palaces, which in a calm day may be ſeen at the bottom of the water

The Lucarine lake, in compariſon of what it once was, is but a puddle; its ſprings having been ſunk in an earthquake, or ſtopped up by the mountains that have fallen upon them. The lake of Avernus, one ſo famous for its poiſonous ſtreams, is now plentifully ſtocked with fiſh, and fowl. Mount Gaurus, from being one of the moſt fruitful parts of Italy, is become one of the moſt barren. Several fields, which were once laid out in beautiful groves and gardens, are now naked plants, ſmoking with ſulphur, or incumbred with hills throwing up by fiery eruptions.

The works of art lie in no leſs diſorder, than thoſe of nature; for what was once the fineſt ſpot in Italy, covered with palaces, and temples, adorned by the

greateſt perſons of the commonwealth, embelliſhed by many of the Roman emperors, and celebrated by the beſt of their poets, has now only the ruins of its former ſplendor.

Several authors have miſtaken the mole of Puteoli for Caligula's bridge, into which error they have been led from its ſtanding on arches. It would have been very difficult to have made a mole, like this in a place where they had not the earth of Puzzuola, which immediately hardens in the water, and after lying in it for ſome time, reſembles ſtones rather than mortar. This it was that gave the ancient Romans an opportunity of making ſo many encroachments on the ſea, and of laying the foundations of their palaces, and villas, within its very borders.

After having ſurveyed the antiquities about Naples and Rome, I cannot help thinking, that our admiration ariſes leſs from the greatneſs, than the uncommonneſs of theſe objects, and that though there are many extraordinary ruins, the traveller would not be ſo much aſtoniſhed, did he find any works of the ſame kind in his own country. Triumphal arches, amphitheatres, rotundas, baths, catacombs, grottos, high-ways paved for a prodigious length, bridges, of an amazing height, ſubterraneous buildings for the reception of rain and ſnow water, are moſt of them now out of faſhion, and only to be found among the antiquities of Italy. We are therefore ſurpriſed at ſeeing conſiderable ſums laid out on any thing of this nature; though there is many a Gothic cathedral in England, that has coſt more pains and money than ſeveral of theſe celebrated works.

Among the ruins of the old heathen temples, I was ſhewn, what is called the chamber of Venus, which ſtands a little behind her temple. It is entirely dark, and has ſeveral figures on the ceiling in ſtucco, that ſeem to repreſent ſtrength and luſt, by the emblems of naked Jupiters and Gladiators, Cetaurs

and Tritons, whence one would imagine, that it has formerly been the ſcene of many leud myſteries.

The catacombs are on the other ſide of Naples. Theſe muſt have been extremely loathſome, and full of ſtench, if, as an eminent author of our country imagines, the dead bodies that lay in them were left to rot in open niches. But upon examining them, I found that they were doubtleſs ſtopped up as ſoon as the bodies were laid in them; for at the mouth of the niche, I always found the rock cut into little channels to faſten the board or marble, that was to cloſe it up, and did not ſee one, which had not ſtill ſome mortar ſticking in it. In ſome I found pieces of tiles, that exactly fitted the channel, and in others a wall of bricks, that ſometimes ſtopped up above a quarter of the niche, the reſt having been broken down. St. Proculus's ſepulchre appears to have had a kind of moſaic work on its covering, for I obſerved at one end of it ſeveral ſmall pieces of marble ranged together, after that manner. It is probable that they were all adorned, according to the quality of the dead. It is indeed ſurprizing to find ſuch a multitude of niches unſtopped; but they were probably opened by thoſe who were in queſt of ſome ſuppoſed treaſure.

The natural curioſities about Naples are no leſs numerous and extraordinary than the artificial. The grotto Del Cani is famous for the poiſonous ſteams, which riſe a foot above its ſurface. The ſides of the grotto are marked with green as high as the vapour reaches. The common experiments are, holding a dog with his noſe in the vapour, by which means he ſoon looſes all ſigns of life; but on his being carried into the open air, or thrown into a neighbouring lake, if he is not quite dead, he immediately recovers. A torch dipped into the vapour, goes out in a moment, ſnuff and all; and a piſtol cannot take fire in it. I ſplit a reed, and laid a train of gunpowder in the channel of it, and then placing

one end of the reed above the vapour, and the other at the bottom, found, that though the ſteam was ſtrong enough to extinguiſh a lighted torch, and to hinder a piſtol from taking fire, it could not intercept the train, nor hinder it from running to the very end; and by repeating the experiment, I ſo far diſſipated the vapour that I could eaſily let off a piſtol in it. I obſerved how long a dog was in loſing his ſenſes the firſt time, and after his recovery, but found no ſenſible difference. The firſt time a viper was put in, it bore the vapour nine minutes, and ten the ſecond; but on its being brought out after the firſt trial, it took ſuch a vaſt quantity of air into its lungs, that it ſwelled nearly twice as big as before, and upon this extraordinary ſtock of air it perhaps lived a minute longer the ſecond time. Doctor Connor, in a diſcourſe on this grotto, attributes the death of animals, and the extinction of lights to the great rarefaction of the air cauſed by the heat and eruption of the ſteams. This heat is, however, very inconſiderable; but to ſatisfy myſelf, I placed a thin vial well ſtopped with wax within the ſmoke of the vapour, which certainly would have burſt in an air ſo rarefied as to kill a dog or quench a torch; but nothing followed upon it. However, to remove all further doubt, I borrowed a weather-glaſs, and fixed it in the grotto in ſuch a manner that the ſtagnum was intirely covered with the vapour; but after half an hour's ſtanding in it, I could not perceive that the quick-ſilver ſunk. It is generally ſuppoſed that this vapour is ſulphureous, but I could ſee no reaſon for ſuch a ſuppoſition: upon my dipping my hand into it, it left no ſmell upon it, and though I put a whole bundle of lighted brimſtone matches into the ſmoke, they all inſtantly went out, as if immerſed in water. Whatever be the compoſition of the vapour, let it have but one quality of being very viſcous or gluey, and I believe it will mechanically ſolve all theſe phænomena. Its unctuouſneſs will render it

heavy, and unfit for mounting, unleſs the heat of the earth was much greater than it is, to rarify and ſcatter it. It will be too thick and groſs to keep the lungs in play for any time, ſo that animals will die ſooner or later, in proportion as their blood circulates ſlower or faſter. Fire is as ſoon extinguiſhed in it as in water, from its wrapping itſelf in the ſame manner about the flame, and hindering, by its continuity, any quantity of air and nitre from approaching it; but as its parts are leſs compact than thoſe of liquors, they are not ſo tenacious as to intercept the fire that has once caught a train of gunpowder, on which account they may be quite broken and diſperſed by repeating this experiment.

There would be no end in enumerating the different baths to be found in a country that ſo much abounds in ſulphur; for there is ſcarcely a diſeaſe which has not one adapted to it. A traveller is generally conducted into that called Cicero's bath, and ſeveral authors pretend that a cold vapour riſes from the bottom, which refreſhes thoſe who ſtoop into it. Indeed the heat is much more ſupportable to one who ſtoops, than to one who ſtands upright, becauſe the ſulphureous ſteams gather about a man's head in the hollow of the arch, and are, therefore in that part much thicker, and warmer than at the bottom.

The three lakes of Avernus, Agnano, and the Lucrin, have nothing remarkable in them. As to the mountains, the Monte Novo, was raiſed by an eruption of fire, in the place where that mountain now ſtands. The Sulfatara is very ſurpriſing to thoſe who have not ſeen Mount Veſuvius; but there is nothing about Naples nor in any part of Italy, that ſo much deſerves our admiration as this laſt mountain.

Veſuvio, or, as it is commonly called, Veſuvius, is ſituated about ſix Engliſh miles from Naples, though its great height makes it ſeem much nearer

to thoſe who ſurvey it from the city. In our way to it, we paſſed by what was one of the rivers of burning matter that ran from it in a late eruption, which at a diſtance reſembles new ploughed land; but on a nearer approach, you ſee nothing but a long heap of heavy disjointed clods one upon another, with innumerable cavities and interſtices, among the ſeveral pieces, ſo that the ſurface is all irregular and broken. Sometimes a great fragment ſtands like a rock above the reſt; ſometimes the whole heap lies in a kind of channel; yet in other places has nothing like banks to confine it; but riſes four or five feet high, without ſpreading abroad on either ſide, whence I concluded that the huge unwieldy lumps that lie one upon another, as if thrown together by accident, remained unliquified in the melted matter, floating in it like cakes of ice in a river.

Having quitted the ſide of this long heap, which was once a ſtream of fire, I came to the foot of the mountain, and had a very troubleſome walk to gain the top of it. It is on all ſides covered with a kind of dry burnt earth, which crumbled into powder. It is very hot under foot, and mixed with ſeveral burnt ſtones and cakes of cinders that had been thrown out at different times, and a man ſinks almoſt a foot in the earth, and generally loſes half a ſtep by ſliding backwards. Having climbed this mountain, we diſcovered on the top of it a wide naked plain, which in ſeveral places was ſmoaking with ſulphur, and was probably undermined by fire; for it appeared to be hollow, by the ſound made with our feet. In the midſt of this plain ſtands a high hill in the form of a ſugar loaf, but ſo very ſteep, that there would be no mounting it, were it not formed of the looſe crumbly earth before mentioned. The air is here much impregnated with alt-petre; for a ſtone can ſcarcely be found that has not the top white with it. Having with much difficulty conquered this laſt hill, we ſaw in the

midſt of it the mouth of Veſuvius, that goes ſhelving down on all ſides, until it reaches about a hundred yards deep. The mouth itſelf ſeemed perfectly round, and to be about three hundred yards in diameter. This vaſt hollow is generally filled with ſmoke, but having the advantage of the wind, we had a very diſtinct ſight of it. The ſides ſeemed all over ſtained with mixtures of red, green, yellow, and white, and have ſeveral rocks projecting out of them like pure brimſtone. The bottom was entirely covered; and though we looked very narrowly, we could ſee nothing like a hole in it; the ſmoke in many places breaking through ſeveral imperceptible cracks. The middle was firm ground, as we concluded from the ſtones we ſaw flung upon it; and I do not doubt but that a perſon might then have croſſed the bottom, and have gone up the other ſide with very little danger. In the late eruptions this vaſt hollow was like a prodigious cauldron filled with melted and glowing matter, which on its boiling over in any part, ran down the ſides of the mountain, and formed five ſuch rivers as that before mentioned. As the heat ſlackened, this matter muſt have ſubſided within the bowels of the mountain, and ſinking very leiſurely had time to cake together, and form the bottom which covers the mouth of that dreadful vault that lies underneath it. The whole mouth, ſhaped like a ſugar-loaf, has been formed at ſeveral times with a prodigious quantity of earth and cinders, that have been thrown up out of the mouth that lies in the middle of it, and increaſes in bulk at every eruption, the aſhes falling down its ſides, like the ſand in an hour-glaſs, ſo that in length of time it will cover the whole plain, and make one mountain, with that on the top of which it is placed.

In the ſea near the foot of this mountain, is ſometimes found a very fragrant oil, which is ſold at a high price, and makes a rich perfume. During the

time that it riſes, the ſurface of the ſea is for a little ſpace covered with its bubbles, which they ſkim off into their boats, and afterwards ſet a ſeparating in pots and jars; but its ſources are ſaid never to run but when the weather is warm and calm. Perhaps they may be hindred from diſcovering them by the agitations of the water.

It is proper to mention among the natural curioſities of Naples, the manner of furniſhing that city with ſnow, which they there uſe inſtead of ice, becauſe they ſuppoſe it ſooner cools any liquor. There is a great quantity of it annually conſumed; for they drink very few liquors, and not even water without it: thus it is uſed by every body from the higheſt to the loweſt, ſo that a ſcarcity of ſnow would occaſion a mutiny, as much as a dearth of corn in any other country. To prevent this the king of Spain ſold the monopoly of it to certain perſons, who are obliged to furniſh the city with it all the year round at ſo much the pound. For this purpoſe they make uſe of an high mountain at about eighteen miles diſtance, in which they have ſeveral pits. There they employ many poor people at the proper ſeaſon of the year, to roll in vaſt balls of ſnow, which they ram together and cover from the ſun ſhine. Out of theſe reſervoirs of ſnow they cut ſeveral lumps, as they have occaſion for them, and ſend them on aſſes to the ſea-ſide, where they are carried off in boats, and diſtributed to ſeveral ſhops at a ſettled price, from which the whole city of Naples is ſupplied. While the banditti continued their diſorders in this kingdom, they frequently put the ſnow merchants under contribution, and threatened them, if they proved tardy in their payments to deſtroy the magizines, which, it is ſaid, they might eaſily have done, by the infuſion of ſome barrels of oil.

I could not diſpenſe with myſelf from paying a viſit to the iſle of Caprea before I left the kingdom of Naples, on account of its having been the place to

which Auguſtus had for ſome time retired, and its being the reſidence of Tiberius for ſeveral years. The iſland extends four miles in length from eaſt to weſt, and about one in breadth. The weſtern part is, for about two miles, a continued rock, vaſtly high and inacceſſible next the ſea, yet Ano-Caprea, the largeſt town in the iſland, is ſituated here, and in this part there are ſeveral places covered with a very fruitful ſoil. The eaſtern end of the iſland alſo riſes up in precipices that are nearly as high, though not quite ſo long as the weſtern. Between the rocky mountains at each end lies a ſlip of lower ground, which runs acroſs the iſland, and is one of the pleaſanteſt ſpots that can be imagined. It is covered with myrtles, olives almonds, oranges figs, vineyards, and corn-fields, which look extremely freſh and beautiful, and afford a moſt delightful little landſcape, when viewed from the tops of the neighbouring mountains. Here is ſituated the town of Caprea two or three convents, and the biſhop's palace. In the midſt of this fertile tract riſes a hill, which in the reign of Tiberius was probably covered with buildings. Several ruins are ſtill ſeen on its ſides, and about the top are two or three galleries low built, and covered with maſon's work, though they at preſent appear over-grown with graſs. On my entering one of them, that is 100 paces in length, I obſerved ſome of the countrymen digging into the ſides of the hill, and found that what I had taken for ſolid earth, was heaps of brick, ſtone, and other rubbiſh ſkinned over with a covering of vegetables. But the moſt conſiderable ruins are thoſe on the very extremity of the eaſtern promontory, where there are ſtill ſome apartments that are very high, and arched at the top. Theſe ruins ſtand deep in the earth, and have nothing like windows or chimneys, whence I conclude that they were formerly either bathing-places, or reſervoirs of water. From this place there is a very noble proſpect; on one ſide of it the ſea extends far-

ther than the eye can reach; juſt oppoſite is the green promontory of Sarentom, and on the other ſide the bay of Naples. But this proſpect, according to Tacitus, was ſtill more agreeable before the burning of Veſuvius; for that mountain, which after the firſt eruption appeared like a great pile of aſhes, was probably, in Tiberius's time, ſhaded with woods and vineyards. There are ſtill to be ſeen on the bendings of theſe mountains the marks of ſeveral ancient ſcales of ſtairs, by which they uſed to aſcend them. What recommended this iſland to Tiberius was its wholeſome air, which is cool in ſummer and warm in winter, and its inacceſſible coaſts, which might be defended by a handful of men againſt a powerful army.

The whole iſland was probably cut into ſeveral eaſy aſcents, adorned with variety of palaces, and planted with as great a number of gardens and groves as the ſituation of the place would allow, yet the works under ground were more extraordinary than thoſe on the ſurface; for the rocks were undermined with highways, grottos, galleries, bagnios, and other ſubterraneous retirements, that ſuited with the brutal pleaſures of the emperor. It would appear ſurprzing, that ſo few remains of theſe many works of art, are now to be ſeen, were we not informed that after Tiberius's death, the Romans ſent thither an army of pioneers, purpoſely to deface the beauties of the iſland.

In ſailing round this iſland, I was entertained with many rude proſpects of rocks and precipices, which in ſeveral places riſe half a mile in perpendicular height, and at the bottom are caves and grottos formed by the continual breaking of the waves upon them. In entering one, called by the inhabitants Grotto Oſcuro, after the light was a little worn off my eyes, I could diſtinctly ſee all the parts of it, by a glimmering reflection that played upon them from the ſurface of the water. The mouth is low and

narrow, but after having entered pretty far in, the cavern opens on both ſides in an oval figure of 100 yards from one extremity to the other. The roof is vaulted, and diſtils freſh water from every part, which fall as faſt as the firſt droppings of a ſhower. Thoſe of the inhabitants and Neapolitans who have heard of Tiberius's grottos, maintain, that this was one of them; but many reaſons ſhew it to be natural, for beſides the little uſe of ſuch a dark cavern of ſalt waters, it has no marks of the chiſſel. The ſides are of a ſoft mouldering ſtone, and there are ſeen many of the like hollow ſpaces worn in the bottoms of the rocks as they are more or leſs able to reſiſt the force of the water that beats againſt them.

To avoid ſeeing the ſame objects over again, I took a felucca at Naples to carry me to Rome. In my journey from that city to Naples, I had Horace for my guide, ſo I had now the pleaſure of ſeeing my voyage from Naples to Rome deſcribed by Virgil, and of tracing the way, he has marked out by capes and iſlands, which are not ſo ſubject to change as cities, towns, and the works of art. Mount Pauſilypo affords a beautiful proſpect on paſſing by it, and near it lies the little iſland Niſida adorned with a variety of plantations, riſing above each other, in ſo beautiful an order, that the whole iſland reſembles a large terrace-garden .It has two ſmall ports, and is not at preſent troubled with thoſe noxious ſteams mentioned by Lucan. We rowed from Niſida to Cape Miſena, the extremity of which has a long cliſt which was enlarged and cut into form by Agrippa, who made this the great port of the Roman fleet that ſerved in the Mediterranean ; as that of Ravenna contained the ſhips deſigned for the Adriatic and Archipelago. To thoſe who ſurvey this cape from the land, its higheſt end riſes in the form of a ſepulchral monument. A few of the ruins of old Miſenum are ſtill viſible ; but the moſt conſiderable antiquity of the place is a ſet of galleries hewn into the rock,

which ſome imagine to have been a reſervoir of water, while others, with greater probability, ſuppoſe them to have been Nero's baths.

I lay the firſt night in the iſle of Procita, which is pretty well cultivated, and contains about 400 inhabitants, who are all vaſſals to the Marquis de Vaſto. In the morning I went to ſee the iſle of Iſchia, which ſtands farther out into the ſea. The ancient poets give it the name of Inarime, and repreſent Typhœus as lying under it, on account of its fiery eruptions; but there had been none of theſe for near 500 years. The laſt was very terrible, and deſtroyed a whole city: but at preſent there are ſcarce any marks of a ſubterraneous fire; for the earth is cold, and where the rocks will ſuffer it, over run with ſhrubs and graſs. There are indeed, ſeveral ſmall cracks through which a ſmoke conſtantly iſſues; but it probably ariſes only from the warm ſprings that feed the many baths with which this iſland is plentifully ſtored, for about one of theſe breathing paſſages, a number of myrtles flouriſh within the ſteam of the vapours, and have continual moiſture hanging upon them.

On the ſouth of Iſchia lies a round lake about three quarters of a mile in diameter, ſeparated from the ſea by a narrow tract of land, and this was formerly a Roman port. On the north end of this iſland the town and caſtle ſtand upon an exceeding high rock, divided from the body of the iſland, and on all ſides inacceſſible to an enemy.

The next morning going through a very pleaſant path, by the Mare Mortuum and the Elyſian Fields, I ſaw in my way, many ruins of ſepulchres and other ancient edifices. Cumæ is at preſent entirely deſtitute of inhabitants; but there is ſhewn there the remain of Apollo's temple, which all the writers of the antiquities of that place ſuppoſe to have been the ſame Virgil deſcribes as built by Dædalus. Among other ſubterraneous works, there is the beginning of a paſſage which is ſtopped up within leſs than 100

yards of the entrance, by the earth falling into it. This is ſuppoſed to have been the other mouth of the Sybil's grotto, and indeed it lies in the ſame line with the entrance near the Avernus, and has ſtill the marks of chambers cut into its ſides. Among the many fables and conjectures made on this grotto, I think it highly probable, that it was once inhabited by a people who thought it a better ſhelter againſt the ſun than any other kind of building, or that it was at leaſt made with leſs expence and trouble; as for the moſaic and other works that are found in it, they may have been added in later ages, according as people thought fit to put the place to different uſes.

At Cajeta I ſaw a rock of marble, ſaid to be cleft by an earthquake at our Saviour's death; and over the door of the chapel that leads into the crack, is written the words of the Evangeliſt, "Ecce terra-"motus factus eſt magnus." Every one who ſees this vaſt rent in ſo high a rock, and obſerves how exactly the convex parts of one ſide tally with the concave of the other, muſt be convinced of its being produced by an earthquake; but I make no queſtion of its happening either long before the time of the Latin writers, or in the darker ages, otherwiſe I cannot but think they would have taken notice of its original.

I next touched at Monto Cerceico, called by Homer the iſle of Æea, from its being formerly an iſland, or its being thought ſo by the Greek ſailors of his time. Indeed they might have been eaſily deceived by its appearance, it being a very high mountain joined to the main land by a narrow iſthmus of many miles in length, and almoſt of a level with the ſurface of the water. The end of the promontory is very rocky, and much expoſed to winds and waves, which, perhaps, firſt gave riſe to the howling of wolves, and the roarings of lions that uſed to be heard from thence, and of this I had a very lively

idea from my being forced to lie under it a whole night.

I next touched at Nettuno, where I found nothing remarkable, except the extreme poverty and laziness of the inhabitants At the diſtance of two miles from thence are the ruins of Antium, ſpread over a great compaſs of ground. There ſtill appear the foundations of ſeveral buildings, and what are always the laſt parts that periſh, many ſubterranean grottos, and paſſages of great length. There are ſtill to be ſeen the foundation of Nero's port, which was entirely artificial, and compoſed of huge circular moles, except where the ſhips were to enter. The making of this port coſt prodigious ſums of money. The laſt pope was at conſiderable expence in making a ſmall harbour in this place, and in conveying freſh water to it, which was one of the artifices of the Grand duke to divert his holineſs from the project of making Civita Vecchia a free port. Between Antium and Nettuno, is a cardinal's villa, remarkable for the pleaſantneſs of the walks, fountains, ſhades and proſpects.

We now arrived at the mouth of the Tiber, which we entered with ſome danger, the ſea being generally very rough in theſe parts where that river ruſhes into it. The ſeaſon of the year, the muddineſs of the ſtream, and the many green trees hanging over it, reminded me of the delightful images given by Virgil, when Æneas took the firſt view of it; and now half a day more brought me to Rome.

It is a general obſervation, that modern Rome ſtands higher than the ancient, and ſome have computed it, about fourteen or fifteen feet one place with another. The reaſon alleged is, that the preſent city ſtands upon the ruins of the former, and indeed I have often obſerved, that where any conſiderable pile of building anciently ſtood, there is found a riſing ground, which was doubtleſs formed of the

fragments and rubbiſh of the ruined edifice. Another cauſe may alſo be aſſigned for raiſing the ſituation of ſeveral parts of Rome; this is the great quantities of earth waſhed off from the hills by the violence of ſhowers, of which any one may be ſenſible upon obſerving how far ſeveral buildings that ſtand at the foot of mountains are ſunk deeper in the earth than thoſe on the tops of hills or in open plains; whence Rome appears much more level than formerly; the very cauſe that has raiſed the low grounds having contributed to ſink thoſe that were higher.

In Rome there are two ſets of antiquities, the Chriſtian and the Heathen; but though the former are of a later date, they are ſo intermingled with fable and legend, that little ſatisfaction can be found from ſearching into them. While the other affords a high degree of pleaſure to thoſe who have before found them deſcribed in ancient authors. For here a man can ſcarce ſee an object that does not recal to his mind a paſſage of a Latin poet or hiſtorian. Among the remains of old Rome, the grandeur of the commonwealth is chiefly ſhewn in works that were either neceſſary or convenient, as walls, bridges, aqueducts, temples, and highways; while the magnificence of Rome under the emperors, proceeded rather from oſtentation or luxury, than any real uſe, as in amphitheatres, circuſes, baths, obeliſks, triumphal pillars arches and mauſoleums; for what was added by them to the aqueducts was rather to ſupply their baths and naumachias and to embelliſh the cities with fountains, than out of any real neceſſity there was for them. All theſe remains, have, however, been ſo copiouſly deſcribed by a multitude of travellers, that it is very difficult to make any new diſcoveries; and yet it is impoſſible to ſurvey ſo ſpacious a field of antiquities without receiving new hints, and raiſing different reflections.

Of all the antiquities of Rome, none pleaſed me ſo much as the ancient ſtatues, the workmanſhip of which is frequently the moſt exquiſite of any thing in its kind, and it is ſurpriſing how it were poſſible, for ſo much life to enter into marble, as may be diſcovered in ſome of the fineſt of theſe figures, and even the meaneſt affords the ſatisfaction of ſeeing the faces, poſtures, airs and dreſs of thoſe who lived ſo many ages before.

Though the ſtatues found among the ruins of old Rome are very numerous, poſterity will have the pleaſure of ſeeing many noble pieces of ſculpture yet undiſcovered, ſince there are, doubtleſs, greater treaſures of this nature under ground than are yet brought to light, and they have often dug into lands deſcribed in old authors as the places where particular ſtatues ſtood, and often with good ſucceſs. There are frequently undertakers in Rome, who purchaſe the privilege of digging up fields, gardens, and vineyards, where they find any likelihood of ſucceeding; by which means ſome have arrived at great eſtates. They pay according to the dimenſions of the ſurface they are to break up, and after having made eſſays, by ſearching as they do in England for coal, they rake into the moſt promiſing parts, tho' they frequently have the diſappointment of finding that others have been there before them, yet they generally gain enough by the rubbiſh and bricks, which are valued by the preſent architects much beyond thoſe of a modern make, to defray the charges of their ſearch.

Next to the ſtatues, there is nothing in Rome more ſurpriſing than that amazing variety of ancient pillars of ſo many kinds of marble. As moſt of the old ſtatues may be ſuppoſed to have been purchaſed at a lower price by the firſt owners, than they are bought for by a modern purchaſer, ſeveral of the pillars are now rated much lower than they were of old. For not to mention what a huge column of porphyry,

granite, or ſerpentine, muſt have coſt in the quarry, and its carriage from Egypt to Rome, it will be ſufficient to conſider the great difficulty of hewing it into any form, and of giving it the proper turn, proportion or poliſh. Theſe ſorts of marble reſiſt the inſtruments now in uſe; and though there was at this time a Milaneſe at Rome working on them, his advances were ſo extremely ſlow, that he conld ſcarce live upon what he gained. He ſhewed me a piece of porphyry worked into an ordinary ſalver, which had coſt him four months continual application. The moſt valuable pillars about Rome for the marble of which they are made, are the four columns of oriental jaſper in St. Paulina's chapel at St. Maria Maggiore; two of oriental granite in St. Pudenziana's; one of tranſparent oriental jaſper in the Vatican library; four of Nero-Bianco in St. Cecilia Tranſtevere; two of Brocatello, and two of oriental agate in Don Livio's palace; two of Giallo Antico in St. John Lateran, and two of Verdi Antique in the Villa Pamphilia. All theſe are ſolid entire pillars made of ſuch kinds of marble as are no where to be found but among antiquities; for either the veins of theſe kinds are undiſcovered, or they were quite exhauſted in adorning the ancient buildings.

Among theſe pillars, I cannot forbear reckoning a a great dart of an alabaſter column found in the ruins of Livia's portico. This is of the colour of fire, and may be ſeen over the high altar of St. Maria in Campitello, for it is cut into two pieces, and placed in the form of a croſs, in a hole of the wall purpoſely made to receive it, ſo that the light paſſing through it from without, makes it appear to thoſe in the church like a huge tranſparent croſs of amber. Among the pillars, thoſe of Trajan and Antonine are juſtly eſteemed the two nobleſt in the world. Nothing can be more magnificent than the deſign of Trajan's pillar; for where could the aſhes of an emperor have been ſo nobly lodged as in the midſt of

his metropolis, and on the top of ſo exalted a monument, with the greateſt of his actions underneath him? Or, as ſome will have it, his ſtatue was on the top; his battles in the midſt, and his urn at the foundation. The moſt remarkable piece in Antonine's pillar is the figure of Jupiter Pluvius in the clouds, ſending down rain on the fainting army of Marcus Aurelius, and thunderbolts on his enemies.

Among the triumphial arches, that of Conſtantine is the nobleſt in the world; but the greateſt parts of the ornaments were taken from Trajan's arch, and haſtily ſet up to the new conqueror by the ſenate and people of Rome. This triumphal arch, and ſome other buildings of the ſame age, ſhew that architecture held up its head after all the other arts of deſigning were in a very weak and languiſhing condition, and it was probably the firſt among them that revived. I was much diſappointed at not ſeeing the figure of the temple of Jeruſalem on Titus's arch, where are repreſented the golden candleſtick, the table of ſhew bread, and the river Jordan. Some, however, are of opinion that the compoſite pillars of this arch were made in imitation of the pillars of Solomon's temple, and that theſe are the moſt ancient of any that are found of that order.

It is almoſt impoſſible to form an idea of any thing ſo beautiful and glorious as ſeveral of the Romiſh churches and chapels; for having a prodigious ſtock of ancient marble within the city, and ſo many different quarries in the bowels of the country, moſt of their chapels are overlaid with ſuch a vaſt variety of incruſtations as cannot poſſibly be found in any other part of the world, and notwithſtanding the incredible ſums already laid out in this way, the ſame work is ſtill going forwards in different parts of Rome, the laſt ſtill endeavouring to outſhine thoſe that went before them.

[Notwithſtanding the ſplendor of the buildings of Rome, the ſtreets are not lighted; and the people have the diſagreeable cuſtom of drying linen out of the windows, and on ropes hung acroſs the ſtreet.

The pretender to the Britiſh crown, is, by order of the pope, ſtiled king of England; but this is no more than an empty title, which the Italians themſelves make a jeſt of. He has an annual income of 12,000 ſcudi, or crowns, out of the pope's treaſury, which is only 3000*l.* ſterling, and though the clandeſtine remittances of his adherents in England may amount to as much more, it falls very ſhort of what is neceſſary to keep up the ſtate required in a king. He generally appears abroad with three coaches, and his houſhold conſiſts of forty perſons: but at his coming into an aſſembly, no Engliſh proteſtant riſes up, and even the Roman Catholics pay him their compliments in a very ſuperficial manner: for it is certain, his puſilanimity, and the licentiouſneſs of his amours, have leſſened him in every body's eſteem. His lady ſeldom ſtirs abroad except to viſit a convent; and ſhe allows her ſervants no gold or ſilver lace on their liveries.]

I ſpent three or four days at Tivoli, Freſcati, Palæſtrina, and Albano. In my way to Tivoli, I ſaw the rivulet of Salforata, formerly called Albula, and ſmelt the ſtench that ariſes from its waters, ſome time before I ſaw them.

The ſmall lake that gives riſe to this river, with its floating iſlands, is one of the moſt extraordinary curioſities in the neighbourhood of Rome. It is ſituated in the flat of Campania, and being the drain of theſe parts, it is not ſurprizing that it ſhould be greatly impregnated with ſulphur, of which there is ſo thick a ſediment at bottom, that upon throwing in a ſtone, the water boils for a conſiderable time over the place, and at the ſame time little flakes of ſcurf ariſe up, which are probably the parts that

compoſe the iſlands, for they frequently mount of themſelves, though the water is not troubled. I make no doubt, but that this lake was formerly much larger than it is at preſent, and the banks have, by degrees, grown over it in the ſame manner as the iſlands have been formed upon it; and it is not improbable, that as the iſlands enlarge themſelves, and the banks cloſe in upon them, that the whole ſurface may in time be cruſted over. All about the lake where the ground is dry, I found it to be hollow by the trampling of my horſe's feet.

Tivoli is ſeen at a diſtance ſituated on the brow of a hill. The Villa de Medicis, with its water-works; the caſcade of the Teverone, and the ruins of the Sybil's temple, have been frequently deſcribed. But I was moſt pleaſed with a beautiful proſpect at about the diſtance of a mile from the town. On one ſide it opens into the Roman Campania, where the eye loſes itſelf on a ſmooth, ſpacious plain. On the other ſide it appears a more broken and interrupted ſcene, compoſed of an infinite variety of inequalities and and ſhadowings, that naturally ariſe from an agreeable mixture of hills, groves, and valleys; but the moſt enlivening part is the river Teverone, which is ſeen at about the diſtance of a quarter of a mile, throwing itſelf down a precipice, and falling from one rock to another, till it gains the bottom of the valley, where the view of it would be quite loſt, did it not ſometimes diſcover itſelf through the breaks and openings of the woods that grow about it.

At Freſcati I had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing the firſt ſketch of the walks and water-works of Verſailles; but the proſpect from this place was doubtleſs formerly much more delightful, when the Campania was thick ſet with towns, villas and plantations.

On the road to Palæſtrina I ſaw the lake of Regillus, and at ſome diſtance from it, had a view of the lake Gabinus, which is much larger than the

former. I then left the road for about half a mile, to obſerve the ſources of a modern aqueduct, and had the pleaſure of obſerving how the little ſprings and rills that break out of the ſides of the mountain, are taken up and conveyed through ſmall covered channels, into the hollow of the aqueduct. It was certainly very happy for Rome, that there was ſuch a range of mountains within its neighbourhood; for by this means they could take up their water from what height they pleaſed. Thus the Claudian aqueduct ran thirty-eight miles, and by the advantage only of a high ſource, and the low ſituation of Rome, ſunk after the proportion of five feet and a half every mile.

Palæſtrina, like moſt other towns in Italy, ſtands very high for the advantage of the cool breezes. There are ſtill to be ſeen in that city large pillars of granite, and other fragments of the ancient temple of Fortune; but the moſt conſiderable part that remains, is a very beautiful moſaic pavement formed of marble, all the parts of which are ſo well joined together, that the whole piece reſembles a continued picture. There are in it the figures of a rhinoceros, of elephants, and other animals, with ſmall landſcapes, which though made out of the natural colours and ſhadows, of the marble, look very lively, and as if well painted. The Italians now form moſaic work of ſmall pieces of clay half vitrified, and prepared at the glaſs-houſes, to which they give the name of Smalte. Theſe are a modern improvement of the art, and being made of what colour and figure the workman pleaſes, enables thoſe who are employed in this art, to make much finer pieces of moſaic work than were formerly done.

In an excurſion to Albano, we went as far as Nemi, where the whole country is ſtill over-run with woods and thickets. The lake of Nemi is ſituated in a very deep bottom, and being ſurrounded on all ſides with mountains and groves, is never ruffled

with the leaſt breath of wind, which, together with the clearneſs of its waters, occaſioned its being formerly called Diana's looking-glaſs.

There is nothing at Albano ſo remarkable as the proſpect from the capuchine's garden, which from its extent and variety is extremely delightful: it takes in the whole Campania, and terminates in a full view of the Mediterranean. At the ſame time it affords a ſight of the Alban lake, which lies at a ſmall diſtance, in an oval form of about ſeven miles round, and on account of the continued circuit of high mountains that encompaſs it, appears like the area of ſome amphitheatre. This, with the ſeveral green hills and naked rocks within the neighbourhood, makes the moſt agreeable confuſion imaginable.

Albano ſtill keeps up its credit for wine, which, perhaps, would be as good as it was formerly, was it preſerved to as great an age; but as for olives there are now very few here, though they are in great plenty at Tivoli. The above places were formerly the cool retreats of the ancient Romans, where they concealed themſelves among the woods and mountains during the exceſſive heats of ſummer. On the contrary, Rome is now never fuller of nobility than in the ſummer ſeaſon; for the country towns are ſo infeſted with unwholeſome vapours, that while the heats laſt, they dare not truſt themſelves in them. However, the Campania would now, doubtleſs, be as healthful as formerly, were there as many inhabitants to manure the land, and as many fires burning.

Leaving Rome about the latter end of October, in order to proceed to Sienna, I ſaw the lake Bacca, which gives riſe to the Chremera, and afterwards the lakes of Vico and Bolſena. The laſt is reckoned twenty-one miles in circumference, and is plentifully ſtocked with fiſh and fowl. In this lake there are a couple of iſlands that are, perhaps, the two floating

iſles mentioned by Pliny, with the improbable circumſtance of their appearing ſometimes like a circle and at others like a triangle; but never like a quadrangle. It is not difficult to conceive how they might become fixed, though they once floated; and it is not very probable that the naturaliſt could be deceived in his account of a place that lay as it were in the neighbourhood of Rome.

On the ſide of the lake ſtands Bolſena, in the church-yard of which is an antique funeral monument very entire, and what is particular, engraven on all ſides with a curious repreſentation of a Bacchanal; but had the inhabitants obſerved a couple of lewd figures at one end of it, they would have found it a very improper ornament for the ſpot in which it is now placed.

Having travelled from thence to Aquapendante, which ſtands in a very pleaſant ſituation, we came to the little brook which ſeparates the pope's dominions from thoſe of the great duke. The frontier caſtle of Radicofani, is ſituated on the higheſt mountain in theſe parts, and as well fortified as the place will permit. We here found the natural face of the country quite changed, and none of the beauties left with which we had been entertained in the pope's dominions. For inſtead of the many delightful ſcenes of verdant mountains, and fertile vallies, with which we had been preſented for ſome days before, we now ſaw nothing but a wild, naked proſpect of barren rocks and hills, and not a tree or ſhrub to be met with in a circuit of ſeveral miles. This put us in mind of the Italian proverb, that the pope has the fleſh and the great duke the bones of Italy. In a large extent of theſe barren mountains we ſaw but one ſingle ſpot that was cultivated, and on this there ſtood a convent.

Sienna is ſituated upon an eminence, and is adorned with many brick towers, which in the time of the

commonwealth were erected in honour of ſuch of the members as had diſtinguiſhed themſelves by performing ſome conſiderable ſervice for their country. Theſe towers appeared in view a great while before we entered the city, wherein there is nothing ſo extraordinary as the cathedral, which may be viewed with pleaſure after a man's having ſeen St. Peter's at Rome, though it is very different from it, and can only be conſidered as one the maſter-pieces of Gothic architecture. When one ſees the prodigious pains and expence of our fore-fathers have been at in theſe barbarous edifices, one cannot help fancying the miracles of architecture they would have left, had they been but rightly inſtructed; for the devotion of thoſe ages being much warmer than it is at preſent, and the riches of the people much more at the diſpoſal of theſe prieſts, the prodigious ſums conſumed in Gothic cathedrals, would have finiſhed a greater variety of noble buildings, than have been either raiſed before or ſince.

The vaſt labour beſtowed on this ſingle cathedral is quite amazing: the very ſpouts are loaden with ornaments, and the windows formed like ſo many ſcenes of perſpective, with a multitude of little pillars retiring one behind another. The great columns are finely covered with fruit and foliage that run twiſting about them, from the very top to the bottom. The whole body of the church is chequered with different lays of black and white marble. The very pavement is curiouſly cut into ſcripture hiſtories, and the front covered with ſuch a variety of figures and over-run with ſo many little mazes and labyrinths of ſculpture, that nothing can make a prettier ſhew to thoſe who prefer falſe beauties to a noble and majeſtic ſimplicity. Oppoſite to this church ſtands a large hoſpital erected by a ſhoemaker, who has been beatified, though never ſainted, and here ſtands his ſtatue, ſuperſcribed ſutor ultra crepidam.

From Sienna we went forward to Leghorn,* where the two ports, the Bagnio, and Donatelli's ſtatue of the Great Duke, with the four ſlaves chained to his pedeſtal, are very noble ſights. The ſquare is one of the largeſt and moſt beautiful in Italy.

The people are at a continual expence in cleanſing the ports, and keeping them from being choaked up, which is done by the help of ſeveral engines that are always at work; but whatever part of the harbour they ſcoop in, it has an influence on all the reſt, for the whole bottom is immediately worked to a level by the ſea; a double advantage is drawn from this dirt, as it clears the port, and is uſed for filling up ſeveral marſhes about the city, where it is laid from time to time. The duke of Tuſcany receives very great advantage from this ſingle city, notwithſtanding its being a free port. It brings into his dominions great numbers of people from all nations, and when I was there it was ſuppoſed to contain 10,000 Jews, many of whom were very rich, and ſuch great traders, that our Engliſh factors complained they had moſt of our trade in their hands.

Strangers pay, indeed, little or no taxes directly. But out of every thing they buy, the government has a large duty: the very ice-merchant at Leghorn paying annually above 1000l. ſterling for his privilege, the tobacco merchant 10,000l. and the very ground is ſold by the great duke at a high price. All the commodities that are ſent up into the country, of which there are great quantities, are clogged with impoſitions as ſoon as they leave Leghorn, and all the wines, oils, and ſilks that are brought from the fruitful valleys of Piſa, Florence, and other parts of Tuſcany, are obliged to pay ſeve-

* The proper name of this city is Livorno, it being called Leghorn by none but the Engliſh.

ral duties and taxes, before they can reach the port.

The canal which runs from the ſea into the Arno, affords a convenient paſſage for all goods that are to be ſhipped off, which does not a little enrich the owners; but in proportion as private men grow wealthy, their legacies and law-ſuits increaſe, and the great duke comes in for a conſiderable ſhare.

From Leghorn I went to Piſa, whence many of the inhabitants having removed to Leghorn for the ſake of trade, this is now only the ſhell of a large city. The great church, baptiſtry, and leaning tower, are well worth ſeeing, and are built in the ſame taſte with the cathedral of Sienna.

Leaving this laſt city after half a day's journey, I reached the republic of Lucca, when it afforded a very agreeable ſight, to obſerve that there is not the leaſt ſpot of ground in this little eſtate, that is not made to contribute to the owner's advantage. In all the inhabitants there appears an air of chearfulneſs and plenty, ſeldom to be found among thoſe of the neighbouring countries. That it may be exactly known what numbers of ſtrangers are in the town, there is but one gate by which they are allowed to enter it, and over it is written in letters of gold, Libertas.

This republic, for the extent of its dominions, is eſteemed the richeſt and beſt peopled ſtate of Italy. The whole adminiſtration of government paſſes into different hands every two months, which is the greateſt ſecurity to their liberty, and in a ſurpriſing manner contributes to the quick diſpatch of all public affairs; but in any remarkable exigence of ſtate, it certainly requires a much longer time to conduct any great deſign calculated for the good of the commonwealth, to its maturity and perfection. This republic is ſurrounded by the dominions of the duke of Florence.

There are ſeveral beautiful palaces in the city of Florence, and as Tuſcan pillars and ruſtic work owe their original to this country, the architects of Tuſcany always give them a place in great edifices. The duke's new palace, which is a very noble pile, is built after this manner, whence it looks extremely ſolid and majeſtic. In the court is an antique ſtatue of Herculus lifting Antæus from the earth, which was found at Rome, and brought hither under the reign of Leo X. and there are a multitude of pictures in the ſeveral apartments performed by the greateſt maſters.

The famous gallery of the old palace is adorned with admirable pieces of ſculpture, both ancient and modern; and has, perhaps, the nobleſt collection of curioſities that are to be met with in any part of the world. Among the buſts there are ſeveral that deſerve to be taken notice of for the excellence of the ſculpture, as a beautiful buſt of Alexander the Great caſting up his face to heaven, with a noble air of grief in his looks; and thoſe of Auguſtus, Veſpaſian, Adrian, Marcus Aurelius, Lucius Verus, Septimus, Severus, Caracalla and Geta. There is alſo in porphyry, the head of a fawn, and of the god Pan. Among the entire figures, is a veſtal virgin, with the holy fire burning before her, and a fine ſtatue of Morpheus in touchſtone under the figure of a boy aſleep, with a bundle of poppies in his hand. At one end of the gallery ſtand two antique marble pillars, curiouſly wrought, with the repreſentation of the old Roman arms and inſtruments of war.

After a full ſurvey of the gallery, I was led into four or five chambers of curioſities that ſtand on the ſide of it; the firſt was a cabinet compoſed chiefly of idols, taliſmans, lamps, and hieroglyphics. The two next chambers contain ſeveral artificial curioſities in cryſtal, marble, amber, ivory, and precious ſtones. In the chamber that is laſt ſhewn, ſtands the

celebrated Venus of Medicis, which ſeems much leſs than the life, from its being perfectly naked, and in company with others of a larger make. It is, however, of the ordinary ſize of a woman, as appeared from meaſuring her wriſt; for from the bigneſs of any one part, it is eaſy, in a figure of ſuch nice proportions, to gueſs at all the reſt. The ſoftneſs of the fleſh, the delicacy of the ſhape, air and poſture, and the correctneſs of deſign in this ſtatue are inexpreſſible; in the ſame chamber is a Roman ſlave whetting his knife and liſtening, which from the ſhoulders upwards is incomparable. In ſhort, Florence for modern ſtatues ſeems to excel even Rome itſelf; but thoſe I paſs over in ſilence, that I may not tranſcribe from others.

The way from Florence to Bolonia runs over ſeveral ranges of mountains, and ſeems the worſt road of any over the Appenines. After a very tedious journey over theſe mountains, we came at laſt to the river that runs at the foot of them, formerly called the little Rhine, and following its courſe arrived in a ſhort time at Bolonia, where I ſoon perceived the difference between the northern and ſouthern ſides of the mountains, both in the coldneſs of the air, and the badneſs of the wine.

Bolonia is famous for the richneſs of the ſoil that lies about it, and the magnificence of its convents. It is alſo eſteemed the third city of Italy for pictures, as being the ſchool of the Lombard painters. I here ſaw three rarities of different kinds, which gave me greater pleaſure than any thing elſe. One of theſe was a ſilver medal of the younger Brutus, in which the character of the perſon appears in the features of the face, which is cut with exquiſite art. On the reverſe is the cap of liberty, on each ſide of which is a dagger ſubſcribed Id. Mar. for the ides of March, the date of Cæſar's murder. The ſecond was a picture of Raphael's, which is extremely well preſerved. St. Cecilia is painted with an inſtrument of muſic in

her hands, with St. Paul and St. John on one ſide of her, and on the other Mary Magdalene and St. Auſtin. There is ſomething wonderfully divine in the air of this picture. The third curioſity is a new ſtair-caſe which ſtrangers are carried to ſee, where the eaſineſs of the aſcent within ſo ſmall a compaſs, the diſpoſition of the lights, and the convenient landing-places are admirably contrived.

The ſeaſon of the year, together with the wars of Italy, made me paſs through the dutchies of Modena, Parma, and Savoy, with more haſte than I would have done at any other time. The ſoil of Modena and Parma is extremely rich and well cultivated, and the palaces of the princes magnificent. I procured a licence of the duke of Parma to enter the theatre and gallery, which as well deſerve to be ſeen as any thing of the ſame kind in Italy. The theatre, though very ſpacious, is ſo admirably contrived, that from the very depth of the ſtage the loweſt ſound may be heard, as in a whiſpering place, very diſtinctly by the audience who are at the greateſt diſtance, and yet if the voice be raiſed ever ſo high, there is nothing like an echo, to cauſe the leaſt confuſion. The gallery contains a numerous collection of pictures, all performed by celebrated maſters. On one ſide of it is a large room adorned with inlaid tables, cabinets, works in amber, and other pieces of great art and value, and from this room I was led into another furniſhed with idols, buſts, medals, old inſcriptions, and the like antiquities.

The principalities of Modena and Parma are nearly of the ſame extent, and each of them have two large towns, and many little villages; but the duke of Parma is much richer than the duke of Modena. The ſubjects of theſe princes would enjoy great plenty from ſo rich and well cultivated a ſoil, were not their taxes and impoſitions extremely exhorbitant, Theſe courts are, indeed much too ſplendid and magnificent for the narrow limits of the territories that lie

about them, and it is amazing to ſee the profuſion of wealth expended in coaches, trappings, tables, cabinets and other precious toys of the ſame kind, in which they excel moſt of the princes of Europe, when at the ſame time they had not the generoſity to erect bridges over their rivers for the convenience of their ſubjects, and of travellers, who, upon the leaſt riſing of the waters, are obliged to pay an unreaſonable exaction at every ferry. In theſe ſmall governments a man might reaſonably expect a much greater regulation of affairs for the eaſe and benefit of the people, than in thoſe over-grown ſtates, where the rules of juſtice, beneficence, end mercy, may be eaſily put out of their courſe, in paſſing through the hands of a long ſubordination of officers.

I left the road of Milan on my right hand, on account of my having before ſeen that city, and having paſſed through Aſti, the frontier town of Savoy, came in ſight of the Po, which is, even at Turin, a fine river, though within ſix miles of its ſource. It has been made the ſcene of two or three poetical ſtories, and Ovid has made choice of it to throw his phæton into, after all the ſmaller rivers had been dried up in the conflagration. This river gives its name to the chief ſtreet of Turin, which fronts the duke's palace.

[The walls and baſtions of Turin, are all lined with free-ſtone, and it takes up an hour and a half to walk round the fortifications, which afford the moſt delightful proſpects. The city, though not large is populous; but if it continues to increaſe in ſize and beauty as it has done, it will have the nobleſt ſtreets of any city in Europe. I here ſpeak of the new city, in which are the royal palace, New ſtreet, and the ſtreet of the Po, which are remarkably fine. From the gate of the palace is a direct proſpect of 1700 paces over the palace court, St. Charles's ſquare, along New ſtreet, to the new bridge; and all the way the houſes have arched piazzas, that

afford ſhelter in the heavieſt rains. There are 48 churches and monaſteries within the walls, and ſeventeen more in the neighbourhood; but the churches, though old and in the Gothic taſte, are richly adorned with fine marble pillars, ſtatues and paintings.]

Turin has one convenience that is, perhaps, not to be found in any other city; and by means of a river that runs along the upper ſide of the town, they can convey a little ſtream of water through all the moſt conſiderable ſtreets, which ſerves to clean the gutters, and to carry away all the filth that is ſwept into it, and every night the manager opens his ſluice, and diſtributes the water into what quarter of the town he pleaſes. Hence, when a fire happens to break out, they have in a few minutes a ſmall river running by the very walls of the houſes that are burning.

[The palace of Turin is a noble ſtructure, that has a fine gallery of painting, and another that contains about 300 marble ſtatues, moſt of them antiques. The king of Sardinia has ſeveral other fine palaces; but that he is moſt fond of is a league from Turin, and named La Venerie: here the court is generally kept from ſpring to December.]

The court of Turin is eſteemed the moſt ſplendid and polite of any in Italy; but it being at this time in mourning, I could not ſee it in its magnificence. The common people are here more exaſperated againſt the French than even the reſt of the Italians.

On my leaving Turin, I proceeded directly to Geneva, and though it was about the beginning of December, yet as the ſnows had not yet fallen, I had a very eaſy journey over mount Cenis, on the top of which is a large plain, that has in the middle of it a beautiful lake, which would appear very extraordinary, were there not ſeveral mountains in the neighbourhood riſing over it. The inhabitants of

the adjacent places pretend that this lake is unfathomable, and I make no doubt that the water filled up a deep valley before it came to a level with the ſurface of the plan. Though this lake is ſaid to be covered with ice three parts of the year, it is well ſtocked with trouts.

A traveller finds nothing more delightful in the natural face of Italy, than the ſeveral lakes diſperſed among the many breaks and hollows of the Alps and Appennines. For theſe vaſt aſſemblages of mountains being thrown together in much irregularity and confuſion, form a variety of hollow bottoms that often reſemble ſo many artificial baſons, where, if any ſprings happen to ariſe, they naturally ſpread themſelves into lakes before they can find any outlet for their waters. The ancient Romans took much pains in forming paſſages for theſe lakes to diſcharge themſelves into ſome neighbouring river, either with a view of improving the air or recovering the ſoil that lay underneath them. In our whole journey through the Alps, both when we climbed, and when we deſcended them, a river ran along the road, which probably at firſt occaſioned the diſcovery of this paſſage.

At a ſmall diſtance from St. Julian, in Savoy, the Alps begin to ſpread themſelves on all ſides, and open into a vaſt circuit of ground, which when compared with the other parts of the Alps, may paſs for a plain champaign country, and which, with the Leman lake, would make one of the moſt agreeable and defenſible kingdoms in Europe was it all united into a ſingle ſtate with Geneva for its metropolis. But the greateſt part of this fruitful country, is divided among three powerful neighbours The duke of Savoy* has the Chablais, and all the country that lies beyond the Arva, as far as to the Ecluſe. The French king is maſter of the whole country of Gex;

* Now king of Sardinia.

and the canton of Bern has that of Vaud, while Geneva, and its little territories, lie in the heart of theſe three little ſtates.

The greateſt part of the city of Geneva is ſituated on a hill, and has its view bounded on all ſides by ſeveral ranges of mountains; but theſe are at ſo great a diſtance, that they leave open a ſurpriſing variety of beautiful proſpects, and from their ſituation cover the country they incloſe from all winds except the ſouth and north, and to the laſt of theſe winds the inhabitants of this city aſcribe the healthfulneſs of the air, for as the Alps ſurround the city on all ſides, forming a vaſt baſon, within which is a well watered country; there would here be a conſtant ſtagnation of vapours, did not the north wind put them in motion, and ſcatter them from time to time. From this ſituation the ſun riſes later at Geneva, and ſets ſooner, than in other places of the ſame latitude, and the tops of the neighbouring mountains are covered with light above half an hour after the ſun is down at Geneva. Theſe mountains alſo much increaſe the heats of ſummer, and form an horizon that has ſomething in it very ſingular and agreeable. On the one hand a long range of hills diſtinguiſhed by the name of Mount Jura, is covered with paſtures and vineyards, and on the other huge precipices formed of naked rocks riſe in a thouſand odd figures, and being cleft in ſome places, diſcover high mountans of ſnow, at the diſtance of ſeveral leagues behind them. To the ſouthward, the hills riſing more inſenſibly, leave the eye a vaſt uninterrupted proſpect; but the moſt beautiful view is that of the lake, and its borders, that lie north of the town.

This lake reſembles the ſea, both in the colour of its waters, in the ſtorms that are raiſed on it, and in the ravages it makes on its banks. It alſo receives different names from the coaſts it waſhes, and has in ſummer ſomething like the ebbing and flowing of the tide, occaſioned by the melting of the ſnows,

that fall more copiouſly into it at noon, than at other times of the day. It has five different ſtates bordering on it; France, the dutchy of Savoy, the canton of Bern, the biſhopric of Sion, and the republic of Geneva.

I made a little voyage round the lake, and touched at the ſeveral towns on its coaſts, which though the wind was all the way pretty fair took up near five days. The right ſide of the lake from Geneva belongs to the dutchy of Savoy, and is extremely well cultivated. The greateſt entertainment I found in coaſting it was from the ſeveral proſpects of woods, meadows, vineyards and corn fields, which lie on its borders, and run up all the ſides of the Alps, where the barrenneſs of the rocks, or the ſteepneſs of the aſcent will permit. The wine on this ſide of the lake is, however, much inferior to that on the other, on account of the vineyards being expoſed leſs to the ſun.

In this excurſion I paſſed by Yvoiry where the duke keeps his galleys, and lodged at Tonon the largeſt town on the lake belonging to Savoy. It has four convents, and about ſix or ſeven thouſand inhabitants. The lake is here about twelve miles broad. They ſhew a fountain of water much eſteemed for its wholeſomeneſs, and it is ſaid to weigh two ounces in a pound leſs than the ſame meaſure of the lake water, though this laſt is very good to drink, and as clear as can be imagined.

At a ſmall diſtance from Tonon ſtands Ripaille, where there is a convent of Carthuſians who have a large foreſt cut out into thick and gloomy walks, ſuitable to the genius of the inhabitants. It has viſtos of a great length, which terminate upon the lake, and on one ſide of the walks, there is a near proſpect of the Alps, where the rocks are broken into ſteeps and precipices, that fill the mind with an agreeable kind of horror, and form one of the moſt irregular ſcenes in the world. The

houſe now in the poſſeſſion of the Carthuſians, formerly belonged to the hermits of St. Maurice, and is famous in hiſtory for the retreat of the anti-pope, Felix V.

The next day I ſaw ſeveral ſmall towns on the coaſt of Savoy, the inhabitants of which were miſerably poor; and approaching nearer to the end of the lake, the mountains on each ſide grow thicker and higher, till they at laſt almoſt meet. On the tops of the mountains, ſharp rocks are frequently ſeen ſtanding above the reſt; for theſe mountains having been probably once much higher than they are at preſent, the rains have waſhed away abundance of the ſoil, and left the veins of ſtone ſhooting out of them; as in a decayed body, the fleſh continues ſhrinking from the bones. The natural hiſtories of Swiſſerland frequently mention the fall of theſe rocks, and the damage they have done, when the foundations have been mouldered with age, or rent by an earthquake.

I ſaw in ſeveral parts of the Alps, at a ſmall diſtance vaſt pits of ſnow, and ſeveral mountains, at a greater diſtance, wholly covered with it: when this confuſion of mountains and hollows furniſhed me with a moſt probable reaſon for thoſe periodical fountains in Swiſſerland, which only flow at ſome particular hours of the day: for as the tops of theſe mountains caſt their ſhadows upon one another, they hinder the ſun, at certain times, from ſhining on particular parts, where there are heaps of ſnow which have the ſun lying upon them two or three hours together, and are in the ſhade all the reſt of the day. If therefore any particular fountain takes its riſe from theſe reſervoirs of ſnow, it will naturally begin to flow at ſuch hours as the ſnow begins to melt; but as ſoon as the ſun leaves it to freeze and harden again, the fountain dries up, and receives no more ſupplies, till about the ſame time

the next day, when the heat of the ſun ſets the ſnow running, that falls into the ſame little canals and conduits, and conſequently break out and diſcover themſelves always at the ſame place and time.

The Rhone enters the extremity of the lake, and at this time brought along with it a prodigious quantity of water; for the rivers and lakes of this country are much higher in ſummer than in winter, on account of the melting of the ſnow. It is ſurprizing that learned men could fall into ſuch an abſurdity, as to believe that this river preſerves itſelf unmixed with the lake, for a courſe of many miles, till its going out again at Geneva. When I ſaw it, it was extremely muddy at its entrance; but as clear as rock water at its going out, and beſides brought in much more water than it carried off. The river indeed is preſerved for about a quarter of a mile in the lake, but is afterwards ſo wholly mixed, that nothing like a ſtream can be diſcovered, till within about a quarter of a mile of Geneva.

From the end of the lake to the ſource of the Rhone, lies a valley of about four days journey in length, which gives the name of Valleſins to its inhabitants, and is ſubject to the biſhop of Sion.

I lodged the ſecond night at Villa Neuva, a little town in the canton of Bern, where I met with good accomodations, and much greater appearance of plenty than on the other ſide of the lake. Having the next day paſſed by the caſtle of Chillon, I came to Verſoy, another town in the canton of Bern, and the next day I ſpent at Lawſanne, the moſt conſiderable town on the lake next to Geneva. I was there ſhewn a wall of the cathedral church that was opened by an earthquake, and ſome years after ſhut again by a ſecond, but though the crack is at preſent no more than juſt diſcernible, there were at this time ſeveral perſons in the town who had formerly paſſed through it.

Lawſanne was once a republic, but is now under the canton of Bern, and like the reſt of the dominions of that canton is governed by a bailiff ſent them by the ſenate of Bern every three years. It is remarkable that there is one ſtreet in this town, in which the people have the privilege of acquitting or condemning any one of their own body in affairs of life and death, and as every inhabitant of this ſtreet has his vote, houſes ſell better here than in any other part of the town. They told me that not many years before a cobler had a caſting vote for the life of a criminal, which he graciouſly gave on the merciful ſide.

From Lawſanne I coaſted along the country of Vaud, which is the moſt fertile and beſt cultivated of any among the Alps. It was formerly ſubject to the Duke of Savoy; but was won from him by the canton of Bern, and ſecured to that canton by the treaty of St. Julian. I ſtopped at Morge, where there is an artificial port, and the appearance of more trade than in any other town on the lake.

I next proceeded to Nyon, where the Colonia Equeſtris which Julius Cæſar ſettled in this country, is generally ſuppoſed to have been planted. Statues and old Roman inſcriptions have often been dug up here, and as I walked in the town, I obſerved on the walls of ſeveral houſes, the fragments of vaſt Corinthian columns, with ſeveral other pieces of architecture, which muſt have formerly belonged to ſome very noble edifice.

At about the diſtance of five miles from Nyon are ſtill ſhewn the ruins of Cæſar's wall, which, as he has deſcribed it in his commentaries, extended 18 miles from Mount Jura to the borders of the lake. The next town I came to was Verſoy, which belonging to the French king, I could not have an opportunity of ſeeing; but it has the reputation of being extremely poor and mean.

From hence I ſailed directly for Geneva, which affords a noble proſpect from the lake. Near this laſt city there are ſeveral quarries of free-ſtone that run under the lake; which they obtain in the following manner: when the water is at the loweſt, they make within its borders a ſmall ſquare, incloſed with four walls, and in this ſquare they ſink a pit, and dig for free-ſtone; thus when the lake riſes and runs on all ſides of them, they are preſerved from it by the walls; and the great convenience of carriage makes ſtones much cheaper than any that can be found upon firm land.

The lake on its approaching Geneva gradually decreaſes in breadth, till at laſt it changes its name into that of the Rhone, which turns all the mills in the town, and notwithſtanding its being very deep, is extremely rapid. I have ſeen great part of the courſe of this river, and cannot help thinking, it has been guided by the particular hand of Providence: it riſes in the very midſt of the Alps, and has a long valley that appears as if hewn out on purpoſe to give a paſſage to its waters, from its numerous rocks and mountains that are on all ſides. This brings it almoſt on a direct line to Geneva, where it would overflow all the country, were there not one particular clift that divides a vaſt circuit of mountains, and conveys it to Lyons, and from Lyons there is another great rent, which runs acroſs the whole country, in almoſt another ſtraight line, and notwithſtanding the vaſt height of the mountains that riſe about it, gives it the ſhorteſt courſe it could take, to fall into the ſea. Had a river like this been left to itſelf to find its way out from among the Alps, whatever windings it had made, it muſt have formed ſeveral little ſeas, and have laid many countries under water, before it had reached the end of its courſe.

On my leaving Geneva, I travelled to Lawſanne, and from thence to Fribourgh, which is but a mean town, conſidering it as the capital of ſo large a canton,

and its ſituation is ſo irregular, that the inhabitants are forced to climb up to ſeveral parts of it, of a prodigious height; but this inconvenience is counterbalanced by a ſingular advantage; for having ſeveral reſervoirs on the tops of the mountains, if a fire breaks out in any part of the town, they by opening a ſluice convey a river to the very ſpot where it is immediately wanted. There are in the town four churches, four convents of men, and as many of women. The ſmall chapel called the Salutation is a very neat edifice, and the Jeſuits college is ſaid to be the fineſt in all Swiſſerland. It is very large, and has ſeveral beautiful proſpects from the different parts of it. The Jeſuits have a collection of pictures of the fathers of their order who have diſtinguiſhed themſelves by their piety and learning, and among the reſt, many Engliſhmen whom we term rebels, and they martyrs. At the Capuchines convent, I ſaw the Eſcargatoire, which is a ſquare place boarded in, and filled with a vaſt quantity of large ſnails which when well dreſſed, are eſteemed excellent food. The floor is ſtrewed about half a foot deep with ſeveral kinds of plants, among which the ſnails neſtle all the winter. At Lent they open their magazines, and take out of them the beſt meagre food in the world; for there is no diſh of fiſh which they eſteem comparable to a ragout of ſnails.

On my leaving Fribourgh, about two leagues from thence, I ſaw an hermitage which is eſteemed the greateſt curioſity in theſe parts. It is ſituated in the moſt agreeable ſolitude imaginable, among woods and rocks, which at firſt ſight diſpoſe a man to be ſerious. In this place an hermit had lived twenty-five years, who with his own hand had formed in the rock a pretty chapel, a ſacriſty, a chamber, kitchen, cellar and other conveniences. Notwithſtanding the rooms lie very deep, his chimney is carried up through the whole rock, ſo that the ſky

may be ſeen through it. He had alſo cut the ſide of the rock into a flat for a garden, and by laying upon it waſte earth, which he found in ſeveral of the neighbouring parts, made ſuch a ſpot of it as furniſhed out a kind of luxury for an hermit. In ſhort, ſeeing drops of water diſtilling from ſeveral parts of the rock, he by following the veins made two or three fountains in the bowels of the mountain that at once ſerved his table, and watered his little garden.

[It is impoſſible to view this ſtructure, without a mixture of concern for the fate of its firſt owner, a man of ſuch contrivance and induſtry, who carrying back ſome young people, that came to viſit him on the conſecreating his chapel in the year, 1708, was drowned in the river Sane, which runs by the hermitage, and on which he uſed once a week to fetch neceſſaries from the town in a little boat.]

We had a very bad road from thence to Bern, and paſſed a great part of the way through woods of fir-trees. The great quantity of timber in this country induces the inhabitants to mend their highways with wood inſtead of ſtone. I could not help obſerving the manner in which the people here build their barns. Having made a frame of wood for the foundation, they place the four corners of it upon four huge blocks cut into ſuch a ſhape that neither mice nor any other vermin can creep up the ſides of them, and by this means the corn is alſo preſerved from the moiſture it might receive from the ground. The whole weight of the barn and every thing in it, is ſupported by theſe blocks.

[On approaching Bern, you deſcend a mountain, at the foot of which lies that city, upon another acclivity. At firſt it is very narrow, but widens in the aſcent, and at the top, where it is almoſt level, ſpreads into large ſtreets. The houſes are moſtly of

fine large free-ſtone, and along the main ſtreets are piazzas, one ſide of which is taken up with the ſhops and houſes of tradeſmen.]

But what gave me the moſt pleaſure at Bern, was their public walks by the great church. Theſe are raiſed to a prodigious height, and that their weight might not break down the walls and pilaſters which ſurround them, they are built upon arches. Though theſe walls are as high from the ſtreets and gardens that lie at the foot of them as moſt ſteeples in England, yet about forty years ago, a perſon in his drink fell down from the very top to the bottom, without doing himſelf any other hurt than breaking an arm. From this wall there is the nobleſt ſummer proſpect in the world; for it affords a full view of a prodigious range of mountains that lie in the country of the Griſons, and are covered with ſnow. Theſe are about twenty-five leagues diſtance from the town, though their height and colour make them ſeem much nearer. The cathedral ſtands on one ſide of theſe walks, it is a maſter-piece in Gothic architecture, and perhaps the moſt magnificent of any of the Proteſtant churches, thoſe of England excepted.

I viſited the arſenal, were there are ſaid to be arms for 20,000 men. There is here the figure and armour of the count who founded the town, and thoſe of the famous Tell who is repreſented as ſhooting the apple on his ſon's head. They alſo ſhew abundance of arms, which they took from the Burgundians in the three great battles which eſtabliſhed them in the poſſeſſion of their liberties, and deſtroyed the great duke of Burgundy himſelf, with the braveſt of his ſubjects.

There is no country in the world better ſupplied with water than the ſeveral parts of Swiſſerland, that I travelled through. In the town of Bern a multitude of handſome fountains are placed at ſet diſtances from one end of the ſtreet to the other, and every

where upon the roads, there are ſprings continually running into huge troughs, that ſtand underneath them, which is of ſingular advantage in a country that ſo much abounds with horſes and cattle. But there are ſuch a multitude of ſprings breaking out of the ſides of the hills, and ſuch vaſt quantities of wood, fit to make pipes, that it is no wonder they are ſo well ſupplied with fountains.

Soleurre or Solothurn which is the next conſiderable town, ſeemed to me to have a greater air of politeneſs, than any I ſaw in Swiſſerland. [The neighbourhood of Solothurn is planted with very fine walks, the Aar runs through the city, which is ſurrounded on both ſides that river, with new fortifications of free ſtone, at a vaſt expence. The Jeſuits church there is famous for its paintings, ſtucco work, and frontiſpiece, to which Lewis the XIV. gave 10,000 livres.] This is the fineſt modern building in Swiſſerland. At a ſmall diſtance from it ſtood the old cathedral, on the aſcent to which are two antique pillars, which by their proportion ſeem to be of the Tuſcan order, and belonged to an old heathen temple dedicated to Hermes. The whole fortification of Soleurre is faced with marble. Its beſt fortifications are, however, the high mountains that lie within its neighbourhood, and ſeparate it from Franche Compte.

The next day I arrived at the little town of Meldingen, and was ſuprized to find that in all the road through Swiſſerland, the wine, produced in the country of Vaud, on the borders of the lake of Geneva is extremely cheap, notwithſtanding the great diſtance between the vineyards and the towns where that wine is ſold, but the navigable rivers of Swiſſerland are, in this reſpect, of as great advantage to the inhabitants, as the ſea is to the Engliſh. The vintage is no ſooner over than they ſhip off their wine upon the lake, by which all the towns upon its

borders are furniſhed. That deſigned for other parts of the country they unload at Vevy, and after about half a day's land carriage convey it into the Aar, by which it is brought down the ſtream to Bern, Soleurre and in ſhort diſtributed through all the richeſt part of Swiſſerland. Thus providence has formed a natural communication by the rivers and lakes of this country, which is at ſo great a diſtance from the ſea.

The canton of Bern is eſteemed as powerful as all the reſt together; for it can ſend 10,000 men into the field. But the ſoldiers of the catholic cantons, who are much poorer, and on that account forced to enter oftner into foreign armies, are ſaid to be more eſteemed than the proteſtants.

I ſtaid one night at Meldingen, which is a little popiſh town with one church, and no convent. This is however, a republic of itſelf, under the protection of the eight ancient cantons. It contains 100 citizens, and about 1000 ſouls. The government is modelled after that of the other cantons, as much as it is poſſible for ſo ſmall a community to imitate thoſe of a large extent. For which reaſon, though they have but little buſineſs, they have all the variety of officers and councils that are to be found in the greater ſtates. They have a town-houſe adorned with the arms of their protectors the eight cantons, and three councils; the great council of fourteen, the little council of ten, and the privy coucil of three. The chief perſons of the ſtate are the two avoyers, and when I was there, the reigning avoyer or doge of the commonwealth, was ſon to the innkeeper, where I lodged; the father having enjoyed the ſame honour before him. The revenue of this high poſt amounts to about 30l. a year. Every Thurſday the ſeveral councils meet upon affairs of ſtate, as the repairs of a trough, the mending of a pavement, or the like important buſineſs. A river which runs through their dominions puts them to the expence of

a very large wooden bridge, which is covered over head like the reſt in Swiſſerland. All who travel over it pay a certain toll, for its maintenance, and the French ambaſſador frequently paſſing this way, his maſter allows the town a penſion of 20l. ſterling, on which account they are extremely induſtrious in raiſing all the men they can for his ſervice. The preſerving of this bridge, and the regulation of the dues ariſing from it, are the grand affairs that cut out employment for the council of ſtate. There are three other towns that have the ſame privileges and protectors.

I dined the next day at Zurich, which is agreeably ſituated on the out-let of the lake, and is accounted the handſomeſt town in Swiſſerland. The chief places ſhewn to ſtrangers are the arſenal, the library, and the town-houſe. This laſt is a very fine pile of building, and is ſo well deſigned that it would make a good figure even in Italy. But they have ſpoiled the beauty of the walls with abundance of childiſh Latin ſentences, that frequently conſiſt in a jingle of words; for the wits of Swiſſerland are not yet got out of the Anagram and Acroſtick. The frontiſpiece to this edifice has pillars of a beautiful black marble ſtreaked with white, which is found in the neighbouring mountains, and the chambers for the ſeveral councils, with the other apartments, are very neat.

The library is a very ſpacious room, and very well filled. Over it is another room furniſhed with ſeveral artificial and natural curioſities; and in particular a huge map of the whole country of Zurich drawn with a pencil, in which is inſerted every particular fountain, and ſmall hill in their dominions. The arſenal is better than that of Bern, and is ſaid to contain arms for 30,000 men.

At about a day's journey from Zurich I entered the territories of the abbot of St. Gaul, which are 12 hours riding in length, and four in breadth, and the

abbot is capable of raſing an army of 12,000 well armed and diſciplined men. He is ſovereign of the whole country, and under the protection of the cantons of Zurich, Lucerne, Glaris, and Switz. This abbot is always choſen out of the abbey of Benedictines at St. Gaul, where every father and brother of the convent has a voice in his election, which muſt afterwards be confirmed by the Pope. The abbot, before he enters on any affairs of importance, as the levying a tax, or declaring war, takes the advice and conſent of his chapter. His principal lay officer is the high ſteward of the houſhold, who is nominated by himſelf, and has the management of all affairs under him, and there are ſeveral other judges, appointed for the ſeveral parts of his dominions, from whence there always lies an appeal to the prince, who uſually reſides at the benedictine convent at St. Gaul; though the town of St. Gaul is a little proteſtant republic, entirely independant of the abbot, and under the protection of the cantons.

It is ſurpriſing to find ſuch a number of rich burgeſſes in the town of St. Gaul, and ſo few poor people in a place that has ſcarce lands belonging to it, and hardly any revenue that ariſes from its trade. But the wealth of this little ſtate conſiſts in its linen manufacture, in which people of all ages and conditions are employed. The adjacent country furniſhes them with vaſt quantities of flax, of which they are ſaid to make every year 40,000 pieces of linen cloth, reckoning 200 ells to the piece, and ſome of it is as fine and white as any that can be found in Holland. This linen they ſend upon mules into Germany, Spain, Italy, and all the adjacent countries. In the town of St. Gaul, and the houſes ſcattered about it, there are computed near 10,000 ſouls, of which there are 1600 burgeſſes; out of which body their councils and burgomaſters are choſen as in other governments of Swiſſerland, which are every where of the ſame nature, the difference only conſiſting in the numbers

of ſuch as are employed in ſtate affairs, which are in proportion to the grandeur of their reſpective ſtates. The abbey and the town have a great averſion to each other, and yet in the general diet of the cantons, their repreſentatives ſit together, and act in concert; the abbot deputing his high ſteward of the houſhold, and the town one of its burgomaſters.

About four years before my arrival there, the town and abbey were on the point of coming to an open rupture. In one of their annual proceſſions, a benedictine monk carried his croſs erected through the town, followed by a train of three or 4000 peaſants; but he had no ſooner entered the convent than the whole town was in a tumult, occaſioned by the prieſt's carrying his croſs in that manner, contrary to all precedents. Inſtantly the Burgeſſes put themſelves in arms, and drew down four pieces of their cannon to the gates of the abbey; upon which thoſe who had formed the proceſſion durſt not return by the way they came; but after the devotions of the monks were finiſhed, they went out at a back door that immediatelyl ed into the Abbot's territories, and the Abbot being much exaſperated, raiſed an army, blocked up the town on the ſide that faced his dominions, and forbad his ſubjects furniſhing it with any of their commodities. But while things were juſt ripe for a war, the cantons, their protectors, interpoſing umpires in the quarrel, ſentenced the town for appearing too forward in the diſpute, to pay a fine of 2000 crowns, and at the ſame time enacted that whenever any proceſſion entered their walls, the prieſt ſhould let the croſs hang about his neck, without ſo much as touching it with either hand, till he came within the precincts of the abbey.

The town could bring into the field near 2000 well diſciplined men armed to the beſt advantage, with which force they imagine they could make head

againſt twelve or 15000 peaſants, which the Abbot is capable of raiſing in his territories; but the Abbot's proteſtant ſubjects who are ſaid to amount to one third of the people, might in caſe of a war abandon their prince's cauſe, for that of their religion. The town has churches in proportion to the bigneſs of the ſtate; a library, town houſes, and an arſenal. It is well enough fortified to reſiſt any ſudden attack, and to give the cantons time to come to their aſſiſtance. The abbey is far from being ſo magnificent as might be expected from its endowments: the church has one large nave with a double aile to it, and at each end is a ſpacious choir, one of which is ſupported by very large ſtone pillars, caſed over with a compoſition that looks extremely like marble. On the walls and ceilings of the church are liſts of kings, queens, popes, cardinals, archbiſhops, ſaints and martyrs, who had been of the benedictine order, and there are ſeveral pictures of thoſe who have been diſtinguiſhed by their birth, ſanctity, or miracles, with inſcriptions that contain the name and hiſtory of the perſons repreſented.

The town and abbey of St. Gaul carry a bear in their arms. The Roman Catholics have the memory of this bear in very great veneration, and repreſent him as the firſt convert made by their ſaint in this country. One of the moſt learned of the benedictine monks, with tears of affection in his eyes, gave me the following hiſtory of him. It ſeems that St. Gaul, who is here called the great appoſtle of Germany, found all his country little better than a vaſt deſert, and as he was walking out on a very cold day happened to meet a bear, when inſtead of being ſtartled at the rencounter, he gravely ordered the bear to bring him a bundle of wood, and to make him a fire, upon which the bear ſerved him to the beſt of his ability, and at his departure was ordered by the ſaint to retire into the very depths of the woods, and there to ſpend the reſt of his life, without ever

hurting man or beaſt. From this time, added the monks, the bear lived irreproachably, and until his dying day obſerved the orders given him by the ſaint.

It affords a very pleaſing view to conſider the profound peace and tranquility which reigns in Swiſſerland and its alliances, and it is very ſurprizing to ſee ſuch a knot of governments ſo divided among themſelves with reſpect to religion, maintain ſuch an uninterrupted union, that no one of them attemps to invade the rights of another, but remains contented within the bounds of its firſt eſtabliſhment. This may chiefly be aſcribed to the diſpoſition of the people, and the conſtitution of their governments. Were the Swiſs animated by zeal, or ambition, ſome of their ſtates could ſoon break in upon the reſt; or were theſe ſtates ſo many principalities, an ambitious ſovereign at the head of any one of them would embroil his neighbours, and ſacrifice the repoſe of his ſubjects to his own glory. But ſince the inhabitants of theſe countries are naturally of a grave and phlegmatic temper, if any of their leading members have more ſpirit and fire than the reſt, it is ſoon tempered by the coolneſs and moderation of the others, who ſit with him at the helm. To this may be added, that they receive a conſiderable advantage, by having a great part of theſe governments naturally intrenched among woods, and thoſe ſtupendous mountains the Alps. None of the diſorders are to be found among them that might be expected in ſuch a multitude of ſtates; for no ſooner does any public rupture happen, than it is immediately cloſed by the moderation and good offices of the reſt. The conſiderable governments among the Alps are commonwealths, which is a conſtitution the moſt adapted of any to the poverty and barrenneſs of theſe countries; it is therefore the principal endeavour of the ſeveral cantons, to preſerve the greateſt plainneſs and ſimplicity of manners, and to baniſh from among them

every thing that has the appearance of pomp or ſuperfluity; for ſhould dreſſing, feaſting, and balls, once get among the cantons, their military roughneſs would be ſoon loſt; their tempers would become too ſoft for their climates, and their expences exceed their income; and as the materials of luxury muſt be brought from other nations, they would inſtantly ruin a country that is not overſtocked with money, and has few commodities of its own to export. Hence every thing is prohibited that may introduce vanity and luxury.

Beſides the ſeveral fines ſet upon plays, games, balls, and feaſtings, they have many cuſtoms which greatly contribute to the preſervation of their ancient ſimplicity. The Burgeſſes, at the head of the government, are obliged to appear at all their public aſſemblies in a black cloak and a band. The women's dreſs is extremely plain, thoſe of the firſt quality generally wearing nothing on their heads but furs, which are to be had in their own country. Indeed, perſons of different qualities of both ſexes are allowed their different ornaments; but theſe are far from being coſtly, and are merely marks of diſtinction. For inſtance, the chief officers of Bern are known by the crowns of their hats, which are much deeper than thoſe of an inferior rank. The peaſants are uſually clothed in a coarſe cloth manufactured in the country. While their holiday clothes deſcend from father to ſon, and are ſeldom worn out till the ſecond or third generation; ſo that it is not very uncommon to ſee a countryman in the doublet and breeches of his great grandfather. As Geneva is much politer than Swiſſerland, or any of its other allies, it is conſidered as the court of the Alps, and the proteſtant cantons frequently ſend their children thither for the ſake of education.

As theſe little ſtates abound more in paſturage than in corn, they are all provided with public granaries,

and in exigencies where the ſcarcity is not univerſal, have the humanity to aſſiſt one another. The adminiſtration of affairs relating to the public granaries being much the ſame in every particular government, it will be ſufficient to give the rules obſerved in theſe reſpects by the little commonwealth of Geneva. Three of the little council are deputed for this office, and obliged to keep together a ſufficient quantity of proviſions, to laſt the people in caſe of war or famine, at leaſt two years. Their magazines muſt be filled in times of the greateſt plenty, in order that they may afford to ſell cheap, and increaſe the public revenue at a ſmall expence to its members. Beſides, that the three managers may have no temptation to pay too great a price out of the public treaſury, or to impoſe upon the public by purchaſing bad corn, none of them muſt, upon any pretence, furniſh the granaries from their own fields; and that the filling of the magazines may not prejudice their market, and raiſe the price of proviſions at home, they muſt buy no corn within twelve miles of the city. In ſhort, that ſuch a quantity of corn may not ſpoil by keeping, all the inns and public houſes are obliged to furniſh themſelves out of it, by which means the moſt conſiderable branch of the public revenue is raiſed. The corn being ſold out at a much dearer rate than it was bought up, the principal income of the commonwealth, which pays the penſions of moſt of its officers and miniſters, is raiſed on travellers, or ſuch of their body as have money enough to ſpend at taverns and public houſes.

In Geneva and Swiſſerland it is cuſtomary to divide their eſtates equally among all their children, and thus every one lives at his eaſe without becoming dangerous to the republic. For an overgrown eſtate no ſooner falls into the hands of one who has many children, than it is divided into ſo many parts, that though it renders the ſharers of it rich enough, they

In theſe little republics this is abſolutely neceſſary; for as the rich merchants are obliged to live much within their eſtates, they might, by heaping up vaſt ſums every year, become formidable to the reſt of their fellow citizens, and deſtroy that equality which is ſo neceſſary in theſe kinds of governments. For inſtance, there are merchants at Geneva who are eſteemed worth 2,000,000 crowns, though there is not perhaps one of them who ſpends to the value of 500l. a year.

[Before we take leave of the Alps, it is proper to obſerve, that the part of the canton of Bern eaſtward of the lake of Geneva, likewiſe the cantons of Uri, Schwitz, Underwald, Glaris, Appenzel, part of that of Lucerne, and the country of the Griſons, conſiſt moſtly of mountains of a ſtupendous height, ſome of whoſe tops, according to Scheuchzar's barometrical meaſurements, are from nine to 12,000 feet above the ſurface of the ſea. High as theſe mountains are, which from their extraordinary elevation bear the climate of the frozen regions on the very borders of Italy, they are ſaid to be but mole hills when compared with the Andes, which extend through the countries of Peru and Chili, in South America, and are eſteemed the higheſt mountains in the world, they being covered with eternal ſnow in the midſt of the torrid zone, and almoſt directly under the equator itſelf. But hyperbolical as this compariſon juſtly appears, the difference in the height of theſe mountains is amazingly great; for according to Don Antonio de Ulloa, one of the gentlemen ſent to Peru by the king of Spain to meaſure the firſt degree of the equator, the ſummit of the mountain Catopaxi is elevated 3126 toiſes, or more than three geographical miles above the ſurface of the ſea; conſequently it riſes 6756 feet, or more than a mile and a half in perpendicular height above the higheſt of the Alps.

are not raiſed too much above the level of the reſt.

On the mountain of Grindewald is the Gletſcher, or the Ice Mountain, whoſe ice is ſaid never to melt; but to encreaſe every year on all ſides, both in height and circumference.

To this extraordinary height of the country is owing the fineneſs and ſubtlety of the air of Swiſſerland; which is ſaid to be the reaſon why the Swiſs, when abroad, feel an extraordinary kind of anxiety and longing after the freſh air, to which they were accuſtomed from their infancy, without being able to account for their diſquietude.

From St. Gaul I proceeded on horſeback to the lake of Conſtance, which lies at two leagues diſtance, and is formed by the entry of the Rhine. It takes its name from Conſtance the principal town on its banks, and is the only lake in Europe, that in point of greatneſs vies with that of Geneva. It appears more beautiful, but wants the fruitful fields that border upon the latter. This lake I croſſed in order to proceed to Lindaw, and in ſeveral parts obſerved a multitude of little bubbles of air working upwards from the very bottom, which the watermen ſaid always ariſe in the ſame places, and from thence inferred that there were ſo many ſprings at the bottom of the lake.

Lindaw is an imperial town, ſituated on a little iſland that lies about three hundred paces from the main land, to which it is joined by a very large wooden bridge. All the inhabitants were at this time under arms, being in great apprehenſions of the duke of Bavaria; and we being adviſed not to venture ourſelves in the duke of Bavaria's dominions, had the mortification of being deprived of the opportunity of ſeeing Munich, Augſburgh; and Ratiſbon, and were forced to proceed to Vienna through the Tirol, where we had very little to entertain us beſides the natural face of the country. Having therefore coaſted the Alps for ſome time, we at laſt entered them by a paſſage that leads into the long

valley of Tirol, and then following the courſe of the river Inn, arrived at Inſpruck the capital of Tirol.

Though Inſpruck is not very large it is a handſome city, and was formerly the reſidence of the archdukes, who are counts of Tirol, but the palace, where they keep their court, is rather convenient than magnificent. However, the great hall is a very noble room; the walls are painted in freſco, and repreſent the labours of Hercules, many of which make a very fine appearance, though great part of the work has been cracked by the earthquakes, which are very frequent in this country. Near this palace is another built of wood, to which it was uſual for the court to retire at the firſt ſhock of an earthquake. Here is a very large menage, at one end of which is an opera houſe. In one of the rooms of the palace, which is hung with the pictures of ſeveral illuſtrious perſons, they ſhew the portrait of Mary queen of Scots, who was beheaded in the reign of Queen Elizabeth. The gardens are very large, but ill kept. In the middle of them is a beautiful equeſtrian ſtatue in braſs of the archduke Leopold, and near it twelve figures of water nymphs and river gods, well caſt, and as big as the life.

Covered galleries lead from the palace to five different churches, and I paſſed through a very long one which reaches to the church belonging to the Capuchine convent, where the duke of Lorrain uſed frequently to aſſiſt at their midnight devotions. In this convent I was ſhewn the apartments of Maximilian archduke and count of Tirol, who at the ſame time that he kept the government in his hands, lived in this convent with all the rigour and auſterity of a Capuchine. His room of audience and antichamber are little ſquare wainſcotted rooms, faced with a kind of fret work, that gives them the appearance of little hollow caverns in a rock. This apartment they preſerve uninhabited, and ſhew in it

the altar, bed and ſtove, and alſo the picture of this devout prince.

The church belonging to the Franciſcan convent has in the middle of it the monument of the emperor Maximilian I. which was erected by his grandſon Ferdinand I. but the body of the emperor lies elſewhere. On the top of this monument is the figure of Maximilian on his knees in braſs, and on the ſides of it a beautiful baſs relief, repreſenting the actions of this prince in twenty four ſquare pannels of ſculpture. On each ſide of the monument is a row of very noble brazen ſtatues much larger than the life, moſt of them repreſenting ſuch perſons as were ſome way or other related to the emperor Maximilian. This church was erected by Ferdinand I. and is a kind of attempt at modern architecture. But though the architect has ſhewn his diſlike of the Gothic taſte, it is eaſily ſeen that in that age the people, at leaſt in this country, were not arrived at the true knowledge of that ſimplicity obſerved by the Greeks and Romans. The portal, for inſtance, conſiſts of a compoſite order unknown to the ancients, for though the ornaments are taken from them, the volutes of the Ionic, the foliage of the Corinthian, and the ovali of the Doric order are mixed without any regularity in the ſame capital. The vault of the church is incumbered with many little pieces of ſculpture, and though it is ſupported with ſingle columns, inſtead of the cluſters of little pillars found in Gothic cathedrals, theſe columns are of no regular order, and are at leaſt twice too long for their diameter.

There are other churches in the city, and two or three palaces in a more modern taſte, and among the churches there is a little Notre Dame, which is handſomely deſigned and covered with a cupola. This church was built by the contributions of the whole country, and was deſigned as an expreſſion of gratitude to the Virgin Mary, for having defended

the country of Tirol againſt the victorious arms of Guſtavus Adolphus, who was unable to enter this part of the empire, after his having over-run moſt of the reſt.

From Inſpruck we proceeded to Hall, which is ſituated at a league's diſtance on the ſame river, and is particularly famous for its ſalt works. In the neighbourhood of this town there are vaſt mountains of rock ſalt, where four or five hundred men are conſtantly employed, and as ſoon as they have hewn down a ſufficient quantity of the rock, which in colour reſembles allum, and is extremely ſolid, they let in their ſprings and reſervoirs among their works, where the water diſſolves the particles of ſalt mixed with ſtone, and is conveyed from thence through long troughs and canals to Hall, where it is received in vaſt ciſterns, and from time to time boiled off. They make here after the rate of eight hundred loaves a week, each loaf being four hundred pounds weight.

The ſalt works of this town have great convenience for fuel, that is brought down to them by the river Inn, which during its courſe through the Tirol is generally incloſed between a double range of mountains, moſt of which are covered with fir-trees. Great number of peaſants are employed in felling the largeſt of theſe trees, which after they have barked and cut into ſhape, are tumbled down from the mountains into the river, which carries them off to the ſalt works; vaſt quantities of them are alſo taken up at Inſpruck for the uſe of the convents and the public officers, who are allowed a certain portion of them by the emperor, and the reſt paſſes on to Hall: ſeveral hundred loads of this timber are generally on float, for they begin to cut twenty leagues up the river above Hall; and other rivers that flow into the Inn, bring in their contributions.

The above ſalt-works, with the mint eſtabliſhed at the ſame place, have rendered Hall almoſt as populous as Inſpruck itſelf. This mint is deſigned to work up part of the metals obtained in the neighbouring mountains, where there are ſaid to be ſeven thouſand men conſtantly employed in the mines.

At Hall we took a boat to carry us to Vienna, and the firſt night lay at Rottenberg, where there is a ſtrong caſtle above the town. The next day we dined at Cuff-ſtain, where there is a fortreſs on a high rock above the town, which is almoſt inacceſſible on all ſides; for this is a frontier place of the dutchy of Bavaria.

It was extremely pleaſant to follow the windings of the river Inn through the variety of pleaſing ſcenes to which its courſe naturally led us. We had ſometimes on each ſide a vaſt extent of naked rocks and mountains broken into a thouſand irregular ſteeps and precipices. At others we beheld a long foreſt of fir-trees, which grew ſo thick together, that it was impoſſible to diſcover any of the ſoil beneath them. Theſe roſe in ſo regular an aſcent, one above another, as to afford the view of a whole wood at once. The beauty of this proſpect was completed by its being that ſeaſon of the year when the leaves of the trees aſſume many different colours. But what affords a fine landſcape, is not always the moſt profitable to the owners, we here met with very little corn or paſturage, conſidering the extent of the country we paſſed through; for the lands of the Tirol are unable to feed the inhabitants.

The long valley of the Tirol is on all ſides encloſed by the Alps, but its dominions ſhoot into ſeveral branches among the breaks and hollows of the mountains. It is governed by three councils, which are held at Inſpruck, one of which ſits upon life and death, the other regulates the taxes, and the third

manages the affairs of juſtice: but as theſe courts are guided by the orders they receive from Vienna, there are in many caſes appeals from them to the emperor.

The inhabitants of this tract of country have many particular privileges above thoſe of the other hereditary dominions of the houſe of Auſtria. For being naturally well fortified by their mountains, and bordering upon many different governments, as the Bavarians, Swiſs, Venetians, Griſons, &c. were they treated with ſeverity, they might be tempted to ſet up for a republic, or at leaſt throw themſelves under the milder government of ſome of their neighbours. The country is, however, poor, though the emperor draws conſiderable ſums out of its mines of of ſalt and metal, and theſe mines fill the country with greater numbers of people than it would be able to ſupport without the importation of foreign corn. At the entrance of all the paſſes that lead into the Tirol, the emperor has forts and citadels ſo advantageouſly placed upon rocks and mountains, that they command all the valleys and avenues about them; and the country itſelf is cut into ſo many hills and inequalities, that a very ſmall body might defend it againſt a numerous army.

TRAVELS

THROUGH

FRANCE,

BY

SACHEVERELL STEVENS, GENT.

Containing a deſcription of the different places through which he paſſed, with a general account of the manners of the French.

I ARRIVED at Boulogne on the 15th of September, 1738, but to my no ſmall mortification, we were obliged to anchor at leaſt half a league from the ſhore, and in this ſituation continued till the next morning, when the tide being low, we had no opportunity of reaching the harbour: but ſoon a boat from the town approached the ſhip, and though we were then not above a mile from the ſhore, aſked a crown each perſon to carry us to land, which unreaſonable demand was refuſed; but ſoon another boat made towards us, and for one ſhilling each carried us in about ten minutes to Boulogne, where we were ſlightly ſearched.

The inhabitants, eſpecially the women, as I paſſed along the ſtreets to my inn, ſeemed to make a groteſque appearance. Inſtead of a cloak, they wore a piece of black cloth, which covered their head and ſhoulders, and ſome had it hanging down to the waiſt; the people in general wore wooden ſhoes.

This city is the capital of the Boulonnois, and is ſituated at the mouth of the river Liane, which forms the harbour. It has delightful public walks, which, as the town is ſeated on a hill, afford an agreeable proſpect of the ſea. The cathedral church is dedicated to the Virgin Mary, and has a fine ſtatue of her, to which the inhabitants pay the profoundeſt adoration; it is of ſolid ſilver, and placed in a ſmall chapel behind the choir, finely ornamented with a great number of ſilver lamps. There are alſo ſeveral convents for the reception of perſons of both ſexes, moſt agreeably ſituated, and adorned with paintings; but the city is very indifferently built. In the afternoon I reached Montreuil, a ſtrong fortified town, ſituated on a hill; but the private buildings are very indifferent.

The road for great part of the way to Abbeville is extremely delightful, it extending ſeveral miles through an avenue of fine ſpreading trees. The laſt mentioned city is ſeated on the river Sommo, and appears to be ſtrongly fortified. There are three draw-bridges over broad and deep moats to paſs, before you can enter the town. Here is a large manufacture of woollen ſtuffs, and ſeveral churches and convents, in ſome of which are tolerable paintings. But though it is a handſome well-built town, our accommodations were very indifferent, and the wine exceeding bad.

Between Abbeville and Beauvais is a fine open champaign country, extremely fertile, and abounding with hares, that friſk and play by the ſide of the road, which is for the moſt part paved. This city is

one of the beſt I had ſeen in France; I reckoned up twelve churches, chiefly in the Gothic taſte; one of them, called St. Peters, is a noble building, and the choir is moſt beautifully and richly ornamented. St. Stephen's church has a very fine ſteeple, and the windows are adorned with paintings that juſtly merit the attention of the curious. The market-place is ſpacious, and extremely neat, and the town enjoys a fine ſituation on the river, amidſt ſeveral pleaſant villages, country houſes, and delightful vineyards, that form on the whole a moſt agreeable proſpect.

I by this time was become fully ſenſible of the badneſs of the inns in general on this road, and of the impoſing diſpoſition of the people, who are ready to take all advantages of ſtrangers, but more eſpecially of the Engliſh, whom they imagine to be made of money.

From Beauvais I proceeded through a pleaſant road to St. Dennis, which has a moſt magnificent cathedral, where the royal family of France are interred, and a famous collection of curioſities; but being deſirous to reach Paris, I did not ſtay to ſee them. The road to Paris, which is at about ſix miles diſtant, is broad and well paved, with a row of fine ſpreading trees on each ſide, forming an agreeable viſta.

I arrived at Paris on the 23d of September, at about four in the afternoon, entering through the gate of St. Dennis, which reſembles an ancient triumphal arch, and is beautifully adorned with baſſo relievos, repreſenting the victories of Lewis XIV. It ſeems to be full ſixty feet high, and almoſt as broad. At this gate your chaiſe will be ſtopped by officers, who will want to ſearch your baggage, and have it in their power to give you a great deal of trouble; but by making them a preſent of half a crown, and ordering your ſervants to treat them with extraordinary complaiſance, they will give you but little interruption.

On paſſing through the above gate you enter the Rue St. Dennis, which is long, and almoſt as broad as Fleet-ſtreet; the houſes are high, and make a good appearance, and the ſtreet is well paved; but at night is only lighted by lantherns hung upon cords in the middle of the ſtreet, with a ſmall candle burning in each. As I did not underſtand French; I on my firſt arrival boarded and lodged in a private family on reaſonable terms, where I had a maſter to inſtruct me, and made a reſolution not to viſit any of my countrymen, till I had made a ſufficient progreſs in the language.

The firſt place I went to ſee was the royal hoſpital of the invalids, in the quarter called St. Germain's, where the Engliſh generally reſide. This celebrated hoſpital was founded by Lewis XIV. and is ſituated near the river Seine, almoſt oppoſite to the Thuilleries or royal gardens. It is built of ſtone, and conſiſts of five handſome quadrangles, in which 7000 diſabled ſoldiers are ſaid to be lodged, and decently maintained after the manner of the Chelſea penſioners. The middle ſquare is very grand, and almoſt as large as all the other four. They are ſurrounded with piazzas and galleries; on the walls are painted ſome of the battles of Lewis XIV. and in the principal apartments are ſeveral valuable pictures. The new church adjoining to it is eſteemed the fineſt piece of architecture in all Paris. The front is ſtately, and adorned with columns and pilaſters of the Doric and Corinthan orders; the dome is finely painted, and round it on the inſide are ſix chapels, in each of which is the ſtatue of a ſaint of white marble.

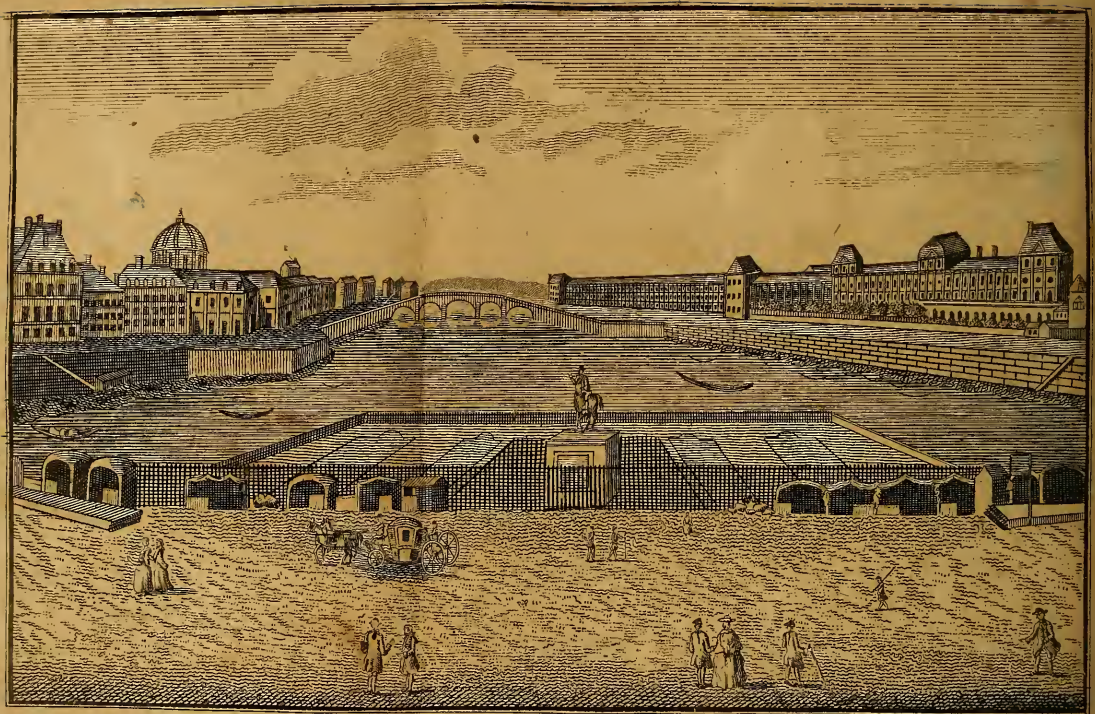
I next viſited the church of St. Sulpice, and it happening to be a feſtival of that ſaint, it was richly hung and illuminated with a multitude of lamps and wax candles: the high altar which is generally covered, was expoſed to public view, and was moſt richly decorated with precious ſtones: near it

ſtood a ſilver ſtatue of the virgin Mary as big as the life. The windows of this church are finely painted.

From hence I went to the cathedral of Notre Dame, a magnificent Gothic ſtructure, that very much reſembles Weſtminſter abbey It is ſupported by above a hundred lofty pillars, and againſt one of them is built the repreſentation of a rock, upon which is a caſtle, with the ſtatue of St. Chriſtopher of a gigantic ſize. The high altar is compoſed of fine Egyptain marble, and near it is an image of the virgin Mary, with Chriſt lying dead on her knees; this is allowed to be a maſter piece. On one ſide is the ſtatue of Lewis XIII. and on the other that of his ſon Lewis XIV. both in a poſture of adoration. There are alſo ſeveral large figures of angels, ſaid to be of ſilver. At the weſt end of this ſtructure are two towers, and in the middle ſtands a ſpire, which appears too ſmall for ſo noble an edifice. The front is adorned with the ſtatues of ſeveral of the kings of France.

At a ſmall diſtance is the hoſpital called the Hotel Dieu, or the houſe of God, in which patients are attended with the greateſt care and tenderneſs by nuns, who diſcharge the office of nurſes. To the honour of this hoſpital, all manner of patients are admitted, without regard to their country, religion, or diſeaſe, and no ſecurity is required for their burial in caſe of death; nor are thoſe who labour under any incurable diſeaſe ever diſcharged and ſuffered to periſh in the ſtreets.

In St Anthony's ſtreet is a church belonging to the Jeſuits that has a very magnificent altar: on one ſide of it ſtands a large ſilver image of an Angel with its arm extended, and holding in its hand a golden caſe in the ſhape of a heart; on the other ſide ſtands another Angel in the ſame poſition; but what is moſt extraordinary, within theſe golden hearts are the real ones of Lewis XIII. and XIV. This church is a neat elegant modern ſtructure.



Scot & Wardier

A View of PARIS from the Middle of PONT NEUF to PONT ROYAL

The palace of the Thuilleries adjoins to the Louvre, near the river ſide: the gardens are large and finely laid out. They are viſited by the quality, and all who wear a black bag and a ſword are permitted to walk here, though all their other apparel may not be worth a crown. Here is a fine terrace-walk of a conſiderable length, from whence you have a proſpect of a part of the town, the river Seine, and the adjacent country. Here are alſo ſeveral baſons, fountains, and fine ſtatues. The palace is a magnificent ſtructure, and ſtands ſo near the Louvre, that a ſtranger may eaſily miſtake them for one palace: this was doubtleſs the original intention of the builder, and had it been finiſhed, it would have formed the largeſt and perhaps the moſt beautiful ſtructure in the univerſe: but the immenſe expence this would require, gives little probability of its ever being completed.

Though the city hath ſeveral bridges, yet only three of them are worth notice. The Pont Neuf, or new bridge, is a very fine one, adorned with an equeſtrian ſtatue of Henry IV. on a very handſome pedeſtal, which at the corners have ſome braſs ſtatues. This bridge is compoſed of twelve arches, and on each ſide is a foot-path, on which are ſeveral ſtalls or ſmall ſhops; but in the evening they are obliged to be taken down. This bridge affords a fine proſpect of the Louvre, Notre Dame, and all that part of the town; and near the end of it towards the Louvre, is the curious fountain of the Samaritan, ſo called from the ſtatues of our Saviour and the Samaritan woman placed upon it. Except Weſtminſter bridge, to which this is greatly inferior, I think this is the nobleſt bridge I ever ſaw.

The water of the river Seine generally looks green and dirty, which is not to be wondered at, as it is commonly filled with covered barges full of waſher-women cleaning their linen: yet it is carried in pails through the ſtreets, and ſold as milk is in

London. I cannot here help remarking, that the French women are the worſt laundreſſes in Europe: they waſh their linnen in cold water in the river, and as to ironing and plaiting, they have not the leaſt notion of it. There are here indeed ſome Engliſh women, who will finiſh them pretty neatly, but not ſo white as in England, which may in a good meaſure be owning to the water.

Pont Royal is a handſome ſtone bridge of five arches, built by Lewis XIV. almoſt oppoſite to the Thuilleries.

The laſt bridge worthy of notice is Pont St. Michael, on which are ſeveral houſes and handſome ſhops.

The palace of Luxemburg was built by Mary de Medicis, and is a noble edifice chiefly of the Tuſcan order, ſituated in a part of the town called the Univerſity. The great gallery is worthy the attention of the traveller, and among the reſt are ſeveral curious paintings by Paul Rubens, containing the moſt remarkable tranſactions of the life of that queen. The other apartments are alſo richly furniſhed, and adorned with a fine collection of valuable paintings. The gardens of this palace are elegantly laid out, and ornamented with fountains. They are daily viſited by the nobility and others, like thoſe of the Thuilleries; but more eſpecially on Sundays, when ſeveral thouſands of all ranks make their appearance there. It is here the cuſtom for the gentlemen and ladies of the firſt quality, though richly dreſſed, to ſit down to diſcourſe on the graſs

I had not long been at Paris before I had an opportunity of being a melancholy ſpectator at the execution of a perſon broke upon the wheel, as it is commonly called. The unhappy criminal was convicted for ſhooting at a perſon with an intent to kill him; he wounded the man terribly in the face, and though he ſurvived, the rigour of the ſentence was not moderated. The execution was at the Greve, a

ſort of ſquare, in which ſtands the town-houſe. In the middle of this ſquare a ſcaffold was erected, and at half an hour after four the priſoner was brought to it in a cart, attended by a city guard walking two and two, and a prieſt accompanied the dying man. On the ſcaffold was erected a large croſs exactly in the form of that commonly repreſented for St. Andrew's. The executioner and his aſſiſtants placed the priſoner on it, in ſuch a manner, that his arms and legs were extended agreeably to the form of the croſs, and ſtrongly tied down. Under each arm, leg, &c. was cut a notch in the wood, as a mark where the executioner might with the greateſt facility break the bone. He held in his hand an iron bar, not unlike an iron crow, and in the firſt place broke his arms, then in a moment afterwards his thighs. It was dreadful to ſee the poor wretch writhe his body with agony, and to obſerve the diſtortions of his face. It was a conſiderable time before he expired, and it would have been longer, had not the executioner given him what is called the Coup de Grace, or merciful ſtroke, on his ſtomach, which at once put an end to his miſery. They then took the dead body from the croſs, and put it on a wheel, fixed to a long pole, where he was expoſed for ſome time; and this part of the ceremony occaſions the common expreſſion of being broke upon the wheel, though it is performed on a croſs.

Some time after, I took the advantage of a fine day, in order to viſit the palace of Verſailles, which is twelve miles from Paris. There are ſeveral ways of going this ſhort journey; but the moſt agreeable paſſage is, in my opinion, in the galliot, a ſmall barge, which ſets out every morning from the Pont Royal, and lands you at Seve, from whence you have a delightful walk to Verſailles, through an avenue conſiſting of three rows of trees, that extend a mile and a half, quite up to the palace.

At the extremity of the villa you come to a large parade, on each ſide of which are the king's ſtables; theſe are noble ſtructures, that might be miſtaken for palaces; they contain a great number of fine horſes, but the beſt are Engliſh hunters, of which his majeſty is extremely fond. Having paſſed the parade, you enter through the gate of the iron paliſade, into the firſt court, which is flanked by four pavilions; but theſe buildings make no extraordinary figure, and fell far ſhort of my expectations. From hence you paſs through the gate of another paliſade, into the ſecond court, which is ſmaller, but has more grand and pompous buildings The third court, to which you aſcend by five ſteps, is terminated by a very noble edifice. Here is a fine portico, with three large doors neatly gilt, by which you enter the hall, which is ſupported by marble columns and adorned with ſtatues. The grand ſtair-caſe is very wide; it is of the moſt beautiful marble and is finely decorated with painting and ſculpture. Oppoſite the wings and front of this court, are valuable buſts, and in the centre ſtands a fountain adorned with gilt ſtatues: the front of the palace next the garden is extremely noble, and makes you ample amends for your diſappointment, at your firſt entrance into it from Paris. It is entirely of ſtone, and of a prodigious length; which has this diſadvantage, that if it be viewed at ſome diſtance in the gardens, it appears much too low for the length.

The principal rooms are the following: the hall of plenty, and that where ſtands the billiard table, in which are ſome excellent paintings by the greateſt maſters. The hall of Venus is very beautiful, and, beſides the other curioſities, has an ancient ſtatue of a Roman conſul finely executed. The hall of Mercury is adorned with paintings by Titian, and other eminent hands; and in that of Mars,

is a fine painting of the family of Darius at the feet of Alexander the great, by Le Brun: in this piece the paſſions are finely expreſſed. The grand gallery is 222 feet long, and thirty broad: the cieling which is arched, is lofty, and finely painted by Le Brun, with allegorical figures, repreſenting the hiſtory of Lewis XIV. from the peace of the Pyrenees, to that of Nimeguen, in nine large compartments and eighteen ſmall ones. This magnificent gallery is adorned with eight antique ſtatues, and many valuable buſts, vaſes, and tables of porphyry and alabaſter. On the ſide fronting the garden, it has ſeventeen lofty windows; and the oppoſite ſide is wainſcotted with looking-glaſs, which has a moſt pleaſing effect. Beſides the whole is finely ornamented with gilding, as are moſt of the other apartments. The furniture is, however, now much ſoiled, and with reſpect to neatneſs and cleanlineſs is far inferior to that in the ſtate rooms in the palaces of Kenſington, Hampton-Court, and Windſor. The apartments of the king and queen are finely painted; and in his majeſty's bed-chamber are ſome excellent pictures, his bed is of crimſon velvet, richly embroidered with gold; this is called the winter furniture, for in ſummer they put on other, of a thinner and lighter conſiſtence. The bed ſtands in a ſmall alcove, and before it is a gilt baluſtrade. The cabinet of rarities is of an octogonal figure, and contains a ſurpriſing collection of curioſities in agate, cryſtal, jewels, medals and other antiquities, with ſeveral paintings by the greateſt maſters. The chapel is a very noble ſtructure; the architecture is of the Corinthian order, and the inſide is adorned with a variety of ſtatues, baſſo relievos, and paintings.

The gardens afford new ſcenes of aſtoniſhment. In the firſt walk as you advance directly from the terrace along the front of the palace, you come to

two baſons, in the midſt of each the water is thrown up in the form of a wheat-ſheaf, to the height of about thirty feet. The borders of theſe baſons are adorned with ſeveral groups of brazen figures, repreſenting river gods, and nymphs. At the corners of this terrace, are two other marble baſons, where the fountains form two fine ſheets of water, and upon the borders are ſeveral figures of animals made of braſs. Below the fountains is a very noble one, adorned with the ſtatues of Latona, Apolla, and Diana. The former is ſuppoſed to have made her complaints to Jupiter of the ill treatment ſhe received from the peaſants of Lycia, who are repreſented as transformed into frogs, which throw out above ſeventy ſpouts of water. The figures are of white marble, and finely executed. There are here many other fountains and caſcades, the beauty of which exceeds all deſcription: but what is moſt admired is the grand canal 1600 yards long, and ſixty-four broad, with a large octagon baſon at each end, and interſected in the middle by another canal about 260 yards in length. Here the court ſometimes take the diverſion of ſailing in yachts and galleys. The labyrinth is a fine grove with two ſtatues at the entrance, the one of Æſop, the other of Cupid holding a clue of thread in his hand, intimating the neceſſity of ſuch a guide to prevent his being loſt in the intricate windings of the place. At each turning you meet a fountain adorned with fine ſhells, in which is repreſented in a lively manner, one of Æſop's fables, and the ſubject is expreſſed in four lines of French verſe in gold letters, on a plate of bronze painted black. The firſt is the owl and the birds: an owl is in the midſt of a baſon of ſhell work, and a great number of birds, that fill an half dome of arbour work, adorned with architecture, throw abundance of water on the owl. In another, a cock ſtanding on a pillar of ſhells, adorned with

verdure, infults a fox by throwing water at him. This laft endeavours to be revenged, but his efforts are ufeleſs, the water he throws not reaching the cock. In this manner thirty-nine of Æſop's fables are repreſented.

The orangery or green houſe is a noble piece of architecture, conſiſting of ſeveral galleries, the largeſt of which is four hundred feet long, and thirty broad, and all of them are adorned with columns of the Tuſcan order Before this green houſe is a fine parterre, and a fountain in the middle of it, which throws the water forty feet high, and the whole parterre is decorated with ſtatues, vaſes, and other ornaments.

The Trianon, or ſummer houſe, is ſituated at the entrance of a wood. Its front is adorned by a beautiful periſtyle of marble columns. At the extremity of the wings of the building are two pavilions, and on the top of a fine baluſtrade. His majeſty's apartments are richly furniſhed, and adorned with exquiſite paintings; the gallery is very noble, and affords a better proſpect of the gardens, than even the great gallery of the palace. It has private gardens prettily laid out, that contain a great variety of the moſt beautiful flowers; and moſt of the baſons and fountains have marbled borders. It is ſurrounded with pleaſant groves, in ſome of which are fine caſcades, eſpecially in that of Laocoon: the grove planted in the form of a ſtar, and that of Enceladus, are delightful places; and there are ſeveral others ſo happily intermixed with fountains and ſtatues, that it is ſcarcely poſſible to conceive a more enchanting place.

The menagerie reſembles a common farm-houſe. It ſtands in the centre of ſeven little courts, where are kept the wild beaſts, and all ſorts of fowl; but on entering it, you are agreeably ſurpriſed at the elegant appearance of the apartments; in one of them is a rich ſettee bed or couch for his

majeſty ; and the ceiling is covered with looking-glaſs.

One great advantage, which all people enjoy at Verſailles is, that they have conſtantly free acceſs into the gardens, provided they are equipped with a bag wig and a ſword, though the reſt of their dreſs ſhould be ever ſo indifferent.

Some time after I made an excurſion from Paris to the palace of St. Germain's, which is about four leagues diſtant from that city, and ſituated on a high hill, at the foot of which runs the Seine : on the other ſide is a large foreſt, and adjoining to the houſe, a park which has ſome viſtas leading from the palace. It was formerly a hunting ſeat : the garden and magnificent terrace were laid out and formed under the direction of Lewis XIV. who alſo enlarged the building, on account of his having received his firſt breath in that palace ; here alſo king James II. reſided, and ſpent the remainder of his days in meditating on his own imprudence, in abdicating his dominions. The palace is much out of repair, and chiefly inhabited by Engliſh, Scotch, and Iriſh families, the adherents of that miſguided prince. It has ſomething the appearance of a caſtle; and is ſurrounded with a fine gallery, that affords a view of all the adjacent country. Indeed, had Lewis XIV. beſtowed but half the expence on this place, as he did on Verſailles, it would have been probably the moſt delightful place in the univerſe.

I had not yet met with any place in France ſo agreeable and pleaſant as the town of St. Germain ; which is very populous, and the air being eſteemed the beſt of any about Paris, great numbers reſort thither, for the benefit of their health.

About a league from hence is the ſmall village of Marly, ſituated near the banks of the Seine, where is a palace ſaid to have been built by Lewis XIV. but this ſtructure is not anſwerable to the

magnificence of the gardens, which are extremely fine, and the fountains and caſcades exceed ſome of thoſe at Verſailles. Here is the machine that fills the grand reſervoir, from which the innumerable water works at Verſailles and Marly are ſupplied.

On my return to Paris, I viſited the palace where the duke of Orleans reſides. This is a noble building, but the outſide is not comparable to the beauty of the apartments, which are richly furniſhed, and kept in neater order than the palaces generally are: here are abundance of excellent paintings executed by the greateſt maſters. The gardens are public, and as much frequented as the Thuilleries and Luxemburgh; but are greatly inferior to both.

Not far from thence ſtands the college of the Sorbonne, the moſt celebrated in France: it was originally a mean ſtructure, but was rebuilt by Cardinal Richelieu, and contains apartments for thirty doctors. The church is a fine edifice, adorned with pilaſtres of the Corinthian order, and ſeveral ſtatues of ſaints and angels: the inſide of the dome is elegantly painted, and in the middle of the choir is a tomb of that cardinal in a reclining poſture ſupported by religion, with ſeveral emblematical figures of the ſciences at his feet.

The houſes of Paris are generally very high, conſiſting of ſix or ſeven ſtories; and ſometimes ſeven or eight different families live in one houſe. In ſome ſtreets inhabited by the nobility there is ſcarce a houſe to be ſeen, they being built with a wall before them. At the grand gate generally ſtands a Swiſs porter, with large whiſkers; and ſometimes I have ſeen two or three luſty footmen embroidering a waiſtcoat, working the wriſtbands of a ſhirt, or knitting ſtockings, though dreſſed and powdered out like men of quality.

The ſquare of Vendome, or of Lewis the great, is large and handſome, of an octogonal form, and the houſes are regularly built. In the centre is an equeſtrian ſtatue of Lewis XIV. in braſs, ſtanding upon a marble pedeſtal; which has this inſcription, Viro immortali; or, To the immortal man: other inſcriptions form an elogium on his virtues and exploits.

The generality of the ſtreets are narrow, and have no foot ways on each ſide with poſts, for ſafety of the paſſengers, as our ſtreets have in London; one cannot therefore walk in them without danger, for the hackney-coachmen commonly drive very faſt, which, from the crouds cauſed by the narrowneſs of the ſtreets, occaſions many accidents. The hackney coaches are far genteeler and eaſier than ours, and more in number: but regulated much in the ſame manner. There is alſo a vehicle uſed here called a vignerett, made after the manner of our common chairs, but more clumſy; it is placed upon two ſmall wheels, and has two ſhafts like a cart, in which is a perſon who draws it like a horſe; and if the paſſenger has a ſervant, he goes in the rear, puſhing it forwards.

I left Paris on the 24th of April 1739, and having paſſed through ſeveral towns and villages, which had the appearance of great poverty, met with nothing remarkable till I came to Fontainbleu, a ſmall town about forty miles from Paris. The palace is in a ſituation inexpreſſibly romantic, in the midſt of a vaſt and wild foreſt, great part of which is rocky and mountainous: the palace contains what is called the old caſtle, which, together with the new palace, forms an extraordinary but very irregular groupe of buildings. The front of the great gate of the draw-bridge is ſupported by large marble pillars, and embelliſhed with ſome fine ſtatues: round the court are ſeveral turrets and galleries; from thence you aſcend

to the court of fountains, which is adorned with a great number of marble and braſs ſtatues, and a fine baſon with beautiful images ſpouting water. Several other large buildings adjoin to this; but the whole as hath been already obſerved, is irregular and confuſed. The apartments are grand and magnificent, and the furniture rich: the gallery of the ſtags is noble, and runs quite along the orangery; the paintings are beautiful, and repreſent the royal palaces, and ſome other fine ſeats in France. In another gallery Henry IV. is drawn with his nobles, all in hunting dreſſes; the portraits of kings, queens, and princeſſes of the blood royal are in another apartment: in the gallery of Ulyſſes, the hiſtory of that hero is beautifully painted; it is likewiſe adorned with ſeveral of the fabulous ſtories in Ovid's metamorphoſes; and in another apartment are painted the battles of Henry IV. The queen's gallery is very fine, and has ſeveral pictures repreſenting the victories of the French monarchs; and in moſt of her majeſty's apartments the ceilings are finely painted and gilt. The gardens ſeem well laid out, and areadorned with a number of ſtatues and water-works; the orangery in particular is very beautiful; in the middle is a large baſon with braſs ſtatues a beautiful figure of Diana holds a ſtag by his horns, and is ſurrounded by four hounds. From the pine garden you have a moſt delightful proſpect of the palace, and in the middle is the repreſentaion of a liquid rock, from which iſſues a prodigious quanity of water, and the grottos, parterres, and caſcades ſeem to be numberleſs.

On our leaving Fontainbleau, the next place of conſequence at which we arrived was Challons, a large town in Burgundy, pleaſantly ſituated on the river Soane, encompaſſed with a wall. It has a ſtrong caſtle, and a large ancient cathedral. From thence we proceeded to Lyons in a coche-d'eu, a large boat not unlike one of our company's barges: it has

windows on each ſide, and within is very convenient. It is towed along by horſes, which, when the banks are good, go on a full trot. The paſſage is extremely pleaſant, and you are all the way entertained with the moſt charming proſpects. At ſome diſtance on the right hand are lofty mountains, the ſides of which are covered with vineyards; and on the left you ſurvey fertile plains of a great extent: thus theſe agreeable ſcenes ſomewhat diverſified, continue until you arrive at Lyons. When you enter this city by water, you perceive two large rocks on each ſide of you, with the ruins of ſome ancient caſtles on their ſummits, that have a romantic appearance.

Lyons is a place of great antiquity, the capital of the Lyonois, and the ſecond city in France. It is ſituated on the Rhone and the Soane, which at the end of the town unite and form one river. No inland town can be better ſituated for commerce, from its having two ſuch fine navigable rivers, and its being near the centre of Europe. From top of the church of Notre Dame you have a proſpect of the whole city and the adjacent country, and I could plainly diſcern the Alps, though more than ſixty miles diſtant, their tops appearing like large white clouds, occaſioned by their being covered with ſnow, though it was now May, and the weather exceſſive hot. There is here a very ſtrong ancient caſtle cut out of a large rock, that makes an antique appearance, and is uſed for a ſtate priſon. There is alſo a fine ſtone bridge of twenty arches acroſs the Rhone, and three bridges over the Soane; it is obſervable of theſe rivers, that the water of one is perfectly green, and the other as tranſparent as chryſtal. The abbey of Notre Dame d'Aſnai is much admired for its antiquity, ſome imagining it to be the Athæneum, the celebrated college built by the emperor Auguſtus. Among the modern ſtructures, the cathedral of St. John is remarkable for a moſt curious clock, that ſhews the

courſe of the ſtars, according to Ptolemy's ſyſtem, the motion of the ſun and moon, their riſing and ſetting, as alſo the length of the days and nights, with the increaſe and decreaſe of the moon. It has a moſt remarkable dial, wound up but once in ſeventy years, on which there is a perpetual almanack; on the top of the clock is a brazen cock which crows and claps his wings twice every hour; ſomewhat lower is the image of the virgin Mary in a ſitting poſture: when the clock ſtrikes a little door opens, and an angel coming out, goes to the Virgin, and immediately the Holy Ghoſt deſcends in the form of a dove; but ſoon after aſcends again, and the angel returns. The clock is very ancient, but eſteemed a curious piece of workmanſhip. The church is large, and remarkable for its decent plainneſs within; there being no ſtatues, images, or even pictures allowed of.

The ſquare of Lewis the great is very beautiful, two ſides of it are magnificently built. At a ſmall diſtance from one ſide paſſes the Rhone, and on the oppoſite ſide the Soane: there are ſome fine walks, with rows of trees on each ſide, much frequented in the evening by great numbers of people; from whence, as it is ſituated in the loweſt part of the city there is a moſt beautiful proſpect of houſes, gardens, churches, and convents, riſing in due gradation above each other: in the middle ſtands an equeſtrian ſtatue of Lewis XIV. and two other fine marble figures, repreſenting the above rivers. Near this place is the grand hoſpital La Charite, which is a prodigious pile of building; this, with the Hotel Dieu, and the town-houſe, are well worth ſeeing.

On my leaving Lyons, I proceeded by water to Vienne the capital of Dauphine, which is ſituated on the Rhone at the bottom of very high mountains. Here are to be ſeen the ruins of an amphitheatre, ſeveral palaces, and two famous caſtles built on the

ſummit of one of theſe mountains. Here is a fine cathedral dedicated to St. Maurice.

My next ſtage was to Valence, an epiſcopal city on the banks of the Rhone. It is neat and well built, and has ſeveral good convents. From thence we proceeded to St. Eſprit, which is remarkable for its ſtone bridge of 26 arches over the Rhone, eſteemed the fineſt in all France; but the paſſage under it is thought very hazardous, on account of the rapidity of the ſtream. There is here a beautiful and ſtrong citadel, built on a rock by the river ſide.

On the 15th of May I arrived at Avignon, a city in Provence ſubject to the pope, as is the whole diſtrict belonging to it. His legate reſides here, and has a very fine palace, in which he keeps his court, and is attended like a ſovereign prince by his guards. The palace is ſituated on a large rock, and has a noble and extenſive proſpect of the beautiful meandrings of the Rhone, with a fine country all around. I viſited the apartments, which are hung with crimſon velvet, bordered with gold lace The city has ſeven gates, and is encompaſſed with a very ſtrong wall. The churches and convents are exceeding grand, and appeared more magnificent than any I had yet ſeen. In the church of Notre Dame are the tombs of two popes, who reſided here during the ſchiſm in the church, while their antagoniſts continued at Rome.

From this city I ſet out for Aix, the road to which lies through a moſt beautiful country. You paſs over ſeveral downs covered with lavender, thyme, roſemary, and other aromatic herbs; and through vallies intermixed with vineyards, and groves of olives and almond trees. Aix, the capital of Provence, was founded by Caius Sextus, a Roman conſul: the air is eſteemed the beſt in France, and being ſituated in a beautiful plain that one ſide abounds

with vineyards, orange, olive, fig, and almond trees, and on the other is terminated at a ſmall diſtance by very high mountains, theſe advantages induce abundance of foreigners to ſettle there, and it is ſeldom without ſome Engliſh families. The town is well built, and the ſtreets are large and well laid out: the public walk is very beautiful, and has ſome reſemblance to the Mall in St. James's park. There are four fine fountains continually playing at proper diſtances. The trees on each ſide form a moſt agreeable ſhelter from the heat of the ſun; and behind them are two rows of well built houſes, ſo that it is the moſt pleaſant ſtreet I ever ſaw; whence in the ſummer evenings it is full of good company, who are very civil and polite.

The metropolitan church, dedicated to St. Saviour, is an ancient fine building. In a little cell in this church, they tell you Mary Magdalen died, after having lived there ſeveral years. A ſmall glimmering light is kept continually burning in it, and you are permitted to look through an iron grate; but no ſtranger has the liberty of going in: the place has a ſolemn melancholy appearance. They likewiſe pretend that ſhe was buried at St. Beaume, a few leagues from hence.

The road from Aix to Marſeilles is as charming as can be imagined: at a ſmall diſtance before you arrive at this laſt city, you ſee ſome hundreds of gentlemen's ſeats diſperſed for two or three miles round the city, ſome in fertile valleys, and others on the ſide of hills.

Marſeilles is a fine large city, ſituated on the Mediterranean ſea: and at the entrance of the port are two ſtrong forts oppoſite to each other, ſo that no ſhip can come into the harbour without their permiſſion. This city is ſaid to have been built 700 years before the birth of Chriſt; and, from its advantageous ſituation, it enjoys a prodigious trade, and is extremely populous. The haven for the reception of ſhips is very fine and ſafe, and here are kept the gallies fil-

led with ſlaves. The town is ſituated at the bottom of a hill, and is the moſt regularly built of any town I have ſeen in France; but the ſtreets are kept very dirty, which renders the place exceſſively offenſive, eſpecially in the ſummer ſeaſon. It has a good quay, on the ſide of which are handſome houſes, and before them a fine pavement, which forms an agreeable walk for the inhabitants in the cool of the evening, during the ſummer ſeaſon, when the heat is intolerable. Near the quay is a row of ſmall ſhops or huts, kept by ſlaves, who ſell old clothes, toys, knives, &c. I have frequently ſeen ſeven or eight of them chained together, and working in the public ſtreets like horſes; the ſight of theſe wreches, with the rattling of their chains, ſeems very odd to Engliſhmen, unaccuſtomed to behold ſuch miſerable objects. The church of Notre Dame is neat; it was formerly, according to ſome, the temple of Pallas, and according to others of Diana. It has a fine ſilver ſtatue of the Virgin Mary, above five feet high, wearing on her head a rich crown. The church of St. Saviour was anciently a temple of Apollo, and is worthy of obſervation; as is alſo the abbey of St. Victor, at the foot of the citadel.

From this city I ſet out in a felucca for Italy; and as I am now taking leave of France, it will be proper to give ſome account of the manners of the people. The French then appear to be the moſt lively, and the gayeſt people upon earth, which is in a great meaſure owing to the purity of the air, and the happy ſituation of the country. On a firſt acquaintance with them they are loquacious, free and opon. Their nobility are the politeſt in Europe; but their civility is attended with very little real ſincerity; they are fond of ſhew, and delight in making a figure for a few months at the capital: though for the reſt of the year they are obliged to live but meanly at their country ſeats. The women are very free in their behaviour, and have a graceful eaſy air peculiar to

themſelves; they are extremely talkative, and of an inſinuating diſpoſition; they ſeem naturally coquettes and given to intrigue; but rob themſelves of all their native charms by paint, and ſmearing their cheeks with red. The common people are the pooreſt, and at the ſame time, the merrieſt in the world. They ſeem very devout in their churches, except on feaſt days, when they are generally too much taken up in admiring the muſic and ornaments of the church.

France abounds in mineral ſprings, and quarries of excellent marble, and has mines of iron, copper, and lead. The vineyards of this country produce excellent wine; and the olive-tree thriving to perfection in the ſouth of France, particularly in Provence, the oil is by ſome preferred to that of Spain and Italy; and the management of the ſilk-worm makes a principal part of the employment of many thouſands of the inhabitants.

TRAVELS

THROUGH THE

MOST NORTHERN PARTS OF EUROPE,

PARTICULARLY

NORWAY, DANISH, SWEDISH, AND MUSCOVITE LAPLAND, BORANDIA, SAMOJEDIA, ZEMBLA, AND ICELAND.

EXTRACTED FROM

THE JOURNAL OF A GENTLEMAN EMPLOYED BY THE NORTH SEA COMPANY OF COPENHAGEN, TO MAKE DISCOVERIES.

FREDERIC III. King of Denmark being desirous of increasing the trade of his kingdom, established two companies of merchants at Copenhagen, his capital; the one an Iceland company, and the other a company of traders to the north. The latter having observed that the trade to Norway was very beneficial, presented a petition to his Danish majesty, in February, 1653, representing that great profit would arise to his subjects by enabling them to enlarge their trade, by making farther discoveries to the north, whence several valuable merchandizes might be imported, his majesty readily granted their request, and allowed them to extend their commerce

as far northward as they thought proper. Upon which they fitted out ſeveral ſhips for that purpoſe. The author, a French gentleman, happened to be at Copenhagen when one of the northern fleets was outward-bound, and being informed that the king had commanded thoſe concerned in this enterprize to make all poſſible diſcoveries of the countries to which they came, and to bring back the moſt extraordinary curioſities they could find, he deſired one of his friends, who belonged to the company, to recommend him as a proper perſon to go ſurgeon of one of the ſhips, upon which he was entertained, and entered into their ſervice. Having given this introduction we ſhall proceed in the following extract as near as poſſible in the gentleman's own words.

All our merchandize and proviſions being on board, we embarked in the beginning of April 1653, weighed anchor, and ſet ſail from Copenhagen, with two ſhips in our company. We ſoon arrived at Katgat, a ſtreight which divides the German from the Baltic ſea. This is a dangerous paſſage full of rocks, extending about 40 leagues from Elſinore to Schagerhort.

When we arrived a-breaſt of Mailſtrand, a ſmall ſea port town thirty leagues from Copenhagen, the wind veered to the north-ward, drove us back ten leagues, and forced us into a creek called Schalot, where we caſt anchor, and rode ſafe under the caſtle, which looked rather like a heap of ruins than a place inhabited, and is only famous for its promontory, which is well known to all the mariners, who uſe the Baltic. Here we ſtaid three days, when the wind ſhifting again to the eaſtward, we proceeded on our voyage; but had not been at ſea above four hours, before the wind blew ſo ſtiff a gale from the north-eaſt, that we were forced to leave the coaſt of Gottenburgh, and ſteer directly over to that of Jutland, where we drove at a great rate, and were in ſuch

danger from the ſhoals with which this road abounds, that had not we had a ſkilful pilot and able ſailors, we ſhould certainly have ran aground; but making a quick tack, we gained the advantage of the wind, and after a few days ſailing had ſight of Chriſtianſand in Norway, a promontory that takes its name from a ſmall village at its foot, where there is a commodious port. Our ſtay here was very ſhort: for the next day we proceeded to Chriſtiana or Obſlo, the capital of one of the five governments of that kingdom.

As ſoon as we were got into port, we went aſhore to deliver our letters to the company's agents, who gave us a very cordial reception. One of them hearing I was a ſtranger, and had been recommended by one of their ſociety, behaved to me with great civility; ſhewed me every thing worth ſeeing, and commanded one of his ſervants, who ſpoke French, to attend me in a ſhort excurſion, three or four miles up into the country. Early the next morning we took horſe, and rode to a large village named Wiſby,* nine miles from Chriſtiana. The houſes are here built of wood and covered with turf, they are very low, without either iron work or windows, except a lattice on the top to admit the light.

The peaſants of Norway are remarkable for their ſimplicity and hoſpitality. The women, who are very handſome, though red haired, are fond of ſtrangers, look after the cattle, of which there is here great plenty; they are alſo excellent houſe-wives, and in general make their own family cloth. The country affords excellent game, as ſtags, elks, roebucks, boars, goats, lynxes, otters, rabbits, hares, and wild cats of various colours, with plenty of wild fowl.

* The capital of Gothland, where the famous Marine Laws were made.

When we were returning towards Chriſtiana we met one of the neighbouring gentlemen followed by two ſervants and a pack of dogs going to hunt the elk; who, knowing the man that was with me, invited us both to partake of his diverſion, and as I had time enough to ſpare, I readily accepted his propoſal. After we had rode about a mile we met his huntſman with more of his ſervants, and ten or twelve of the peaſants, who led us three miles farther to a wood full of buſhes, at the entrance of which we diſmounted, and gave our horſes to one of his domeſtics. Preparations had been made for the chace the day before by the gentleman's vaſſals. We were ſcarce forty yards within the wood, before we perceived an elk, who inſtantly dropped, being ſeized, as they told me, with the falling ſickneſs, whence they derive the name of elk, which ſignifies a miſerable creature, and it ſeems that they often fall in this manner at the beginning of the chace. Had not this accident happened, I believe it would have been hard for us to have brought him down, as I perceived ſoon after when we had rouſed another, which we chaced above two hours, and ſhould never have been able to have taken him, had he not alſo dropped down dead. He killed three of the beſt dogs with his fore feet, and the gentleman being extremely ſorry for their loſs, would hunt no more; but ſent to a farm of his a mile off for a cart to carry the game we had caught to his caſtle, and inſiſted on our going home with him, where he treated us in a very ſplendid manner. This caſtle was an odd ſort of a building, and like the reſt in that country, was void of elegance or taſte.

The elk is as big as a large horſe, and his body like a ſtag's, but larger and longer; his legs are alſo long, his feet broad and cloven, his antlers large, hairy, and broad like a fallow deer's, but he is not ſo well furniſhed with horns as a ſtag.

At my departure the lord of the caſtle made me a preſent of the two left ſhanks of the elks we had killed, or rather ſeen die of themſelves, letting me know that this was no ſmall favour, they being an excellent cure for the falling ſickneſs. To which I replied by my interpreter, that I wondered ſince the foot of an elk had ſuch virtue in it, why the animal, that always carried it about with him, did not cure himſelf. The gentleman reflecting on what I ſaid, laughed out aloud, and told me I was in the right, for he had given it to ſeveral perſons afflicted with the ſame diſeaſe without its producing a cure. Upon which he had long ſuſpected that the pretended virtue of the elk's foot was a vulgar miſtake, of which he no more doubted than that the eating of the fleſh of the beaſt infected people with their diſtempers. He then gave me many inſtances of the ill effects produced on human bodies by eating the fleſh of elks.

The gentleman obliged us to ſpend the night with him, and having entertained us in a plentiful and agreeable manner, we took our leaves of him early the next morning and returned to Chriſtiana, where we ſtaid four or five days, and then weighing anchor ſailed for Berghen; but being becalmed in our paſſage for five days, we employed ourſelves in catching fiſh, of which we caught ſuch a quantity, that we kept Lent a long while after, being unwilling to throw the fiſh over-board.

Berghen, the capital of the province of the ſame name in Norway, has one of the fineſt ports in Europe, and is divided into the upper and lower town, the one built on the rocks, and the other on the ſea-ſhore. It is a large trading town full of merchants, and was formerly an archbiſhopric; but it has not been acknowledged ſuch ſince the reformation. The archbiſhop's palace was given to the Hans towns, for their ancient merchants to live in, and

the greateſt part of the houſes were turned into warehouſes, which ſtill bear the name of cloiſters, and the merchants are called Monks, though they do not wear a cowl, nor obſerve the rules of any order. The king has, however, obliged them ſo far to keep up the form of a religious houſe, that none of the merchants who live in it are allowed to marry without removing. The principal branch of trade carried on at Berghen, are herrings, cod and ſtock-fiſh, for which there is a great vent in Muſcovy, Sweden, Poland, Denmark, Germany, Holland, and other parts of Europe.

As ſoon as we had diſcharged the cargo we had to deliver at Berghen, we ſet ſail with a ſouth-weſt wind for Drontheim, half our lading being conſigned to the ſurveyor of the copper and ſilver mines, for the uſe of the miners and other workmen; it conſiſting principally of bread and beer; but being ſeveral days becalmed, we again caught a great quantity of klip-fiſh, a great part of which we ſalted and barrelled. They are a kind of cod, bigger than thoſe of Newfoundland, and obtain the name of klip-fiſh from their never leaving the rocks; they always lying upon or under them, klippe, in the German tongue, ſignifying a rock.

On our arrival at Drontheim, we applied to the ſurveyor to unlade our ſhips as faſt as poſſible, that we might purſue our voyage; but he told us, he could not begin till the officer, who was to receive their proviſions, came back from the mines, and offered to ſend a meſſenger for him, whom I got leave to accompany. Early the next morning the ſurveyor's man and I mounted on horſe-back, and began this journey; but the roads were ſo very rugged that we could not reach farther than Stockley, which is only eighteen miles from Drontheim; for the night came on, and we had a long wood to paſs through, in which were wolves, lynxes and bears in great num-

bers, that render travelling in the dark very dangerous.

The next night we arrived at our journey's end, and lodged at the forges, where according to the cuſtom of the country we were entertained by the people, who have the care of the mines, with tobacco, beer and brandy. And our hoſt believing that we would not think ourſelves welcome unleſs we were made drunk, plied us ſo faſt with bumpers, that there was no avoiding a debauch. I here became acquainted with one of the officers of the mines who ſpoke French, and promiſed on my expreſſing a deſire to go down into one of them, to gratify my curioſity. The next morning the meſſenger who came hither returned back to Drontheim with an officer proper to clear the ſhip.

Having breakfaſted with the perſon who ſpoke French, and the maſter miner, they went with me fifty or ſixty paces from the forges, which are upon an high mountain, to the mouth of one of the mines, over which was erected a machine reſembling a crane turned by two men in two great wheels to draw up the ore, and the maſter and I being fixed in a wooden bucket were let down above fifty fathoms. Never did I ſee a more horrid proſpect, or what appeared a truer picture of the infernal regions. Nothing was to be ſeen all around but rugged caverns, flames of fire, and creatures that appeared to have a nearer reſemblance to fiends than to men. They were dreſſed in black leathern jackets, with leathern mufflers about their heads juſt under their eyes, reaching down to the breaſt, and had leather aprons. Theſe miners have all different employments. Some uſe the chiſſel and ſome the hatchet to knock out the copper ſtones; others ſearch for new veins of metal, and others try to diſcover caverns filled with water, which ſometimes unexpectedly burſt forth and drown thoſe in the mines. The maſter miner, who deſcend-

ed with me, perceiving I was afraid, and that I was taken with a cold fit, rung a bell, which being a ſignal for the people above to draw us up, we ſoon aſcended with the ſame eaſe with which we had gone down. When I was glad to breathe the freſh air, freed from the unwholeſome damps of theſe ſubterraneous dwellings.

We went to the houſe of the officer who ſpoke French, and were entertained in a very handſome manner: after dinner that gentleman ordered horſes to be got ready to take me to the ſilver mines, and the maſter and miner accompanied us. Having introduced me to the ſurveyor, we were each of us preſented with a large glaſs of brandy, and then treated with beer and tobacco. When we had ſmoaked and drank as much as the ſurveyor thought fit, he conducted us to the forges, which were about a mile from his houſe, at which, as in thoſe of the copper mines, there are always many workmen employed, ſome of whom break the ſtones, others waſh them, while others melt and refine the ore. Theſe mines turn to a very good account, and are not the leaſt part of his Daniſh majeſty's revenue. We ſoon after reached the mouth of a mine, down which we went in the ſame manner as at the copper mine. Theſe miners are clothed like the others, and their work and habitations are much the ſame. The miners both in the one, and the other never work in winter. In ſpring and autumn, they only labour three hours in the forenoon, and three after dinner. But in ſummer they work four hours in the morning and five in the afternoon. The reſt of their time they ſpend in mirth and feaſting They delight much in dancing, and have their hautboys, violins and other inſtruments for that purpoſe. This merry life they are able to ſupport, being paid a crown a day all the year round. On my return to the copper forges, I found the people at their ſports, and was

not a little pleaſed to ſee the variety of their humours and paſtimes.

Having ſeen every thing worth notice at the mines, the ſurveyor took us home with him and treated us with the uſual collation of brandy, beer and tobacco; we afterwards partook of a good ſupper, and when we had ſufficiently refreſhed ourſelves went to bed. In the morning the maſter miner and I, after a plentiful breakfaſt, took leave of the ſurveyor, and rode back to the copper mines, where having thanked the officer who ſpoke French for his civilities, the maſter miner and I ſet out for Drontheim.

Night overtaking us before we had proceeded eight miles, we were obliged to take up our quarters at a peaſant's houſe in the next village, when the honeſt man knowing my companion, thought himſelf highly honoured by having ſuch a gueſt, and therefore did his utmoſt to oblige us. Before we ſat down he brought us his brandy, tobacco and beer; provided a couple of pheaſants, and a hare he had lately killed, for our ſupper. For that game being free for the boors in thoſe parts, they are ſeldom unfurniſhed with them. After ſupper we all ſat down to ſmoaking, and continued drinking brandy and beer almoſt all night, till the peaſant perceiving that the maſter miner was quite drunk, was ſo rejoiced at it, that he ſoon became in as bad a condition himſelf, nor was I much better. We had all now our doſe. Upon which ſome clean ſtraw was brought, and ſpread in the middle of the chamber to ſerve inſtead of beds, on which we lay down together, and ſlept till morning; when being reſolved to reach Drontheim that night, I aroſe before the maſter miner, and the boor awaked, and by ſigns made the boor's ſons underſtand, that I wanted the horſes to be got ready, and they being ſaddled I rouzed my companion and his hoſt, but they were

no ſooner up than we again fell to eating and drinking, which being at length ended we mounted on horſeback, and made the beſt of our way to Drontheim, where we arrived before it was dark.

In two days after my return the ſhip having taken in her ſtock of proviſions and other neceſſaries, ſet ſail with a fair wind, to continue our voyage to the north, but after a few days we were becalmed under the arctic circle, and ſome of our crew being ſo ſuperſtitious as to give credit to the opinion, that the inhabitants of the neighbouring coaſt, like thoſe of Finland, could rule the elements, and diſpoſe of the winds at their pleaſure, our captain ſent his boat aſhore with the mate to purchaſe a wind of them, that being the commodity he moſt ſtood in need of, and though I believed nothing of the matter, I had the curioſity to accompany thoſe employed in this ridiculous commiſſion.

We landed at the firſt village we came to, and as the mate ſpoke enough of the language to make himſelf underſtood, he ſoon found out the chief necromancer; told him what he wanted, and aſked if he could furniſh us with a wind that would laſt till we arrived at Mourmanſkeimore, to which the necromancer gravely replied, that he could not, for his power extended no farther than the promontory of Rouxella. The mate conſidering it was a great way thither, and that if we reached ſo far we might eaſily make the north cape, deſired him to go on board with us, and drive a bargain with the captain; to this the wizard conſenting, took three of his comrades with him, and leaping into a ſmall fiſhing boat went aboard our ſhip, where the captain and he ſoon agreed upon the price, and he was paid ten kroners, which is about five or ſix and thirty ſhillings ſterling, and a pound of tobacco. When the bargain was concluded, and the money paid, the wizard tied a woollen rag about half a yard long

and a nail broad, to the foremaſt. This rag which had three knots was all the captain had for his money, and the necromancer immediately returned in the fiſhing boat to the village with his companions.

He had not been long gone when the captain, according to the inſtructions he had received, untied the firſt knot in the rag, and ſoon after a briſk gale ſprung up from the weſt-ſouth-weſt, which drove us and the other ſhips in our company thirty leagues beyond Maelſtroom, a whirlpool in the Norwegian ſea, that has proved fatal to many veſſels. For this reaſon ſuch as are acquainted with thoſe coaſts keep eight or ten leagues out to ſea to avoid both that and ſeveral other eddies, as well as the rocks that lie off Ottaford.

The wind beginning now to ſhift a little to the northward, the captain untied the ſecond knot, and the wind continued till we reached the cape of Rouxella. After we had paſſed that promontory, the needle of our compaſs turned back half an inch, from which ſome fancied that there was a load-ſtone in the mountain. However, if we had not had a very expert pilot we ſhould certainly have loſt our courſe. He ſhut up the compaſs, and knowing that the other ſhips in our company were in the ſame trouble as ourſelves, hung out a flag on the fore-top maſt head, as a ſignal for the ſhips to follow us. We were two days and nights in this dangerous ſituation, having nothing to depend upon but the pilot's experience; but on the third day, when we were at a conſiderable diſtance from the mountains of Rouxella, the needle again pointed to the north, whence we concluded that we drew near the north cape.

By this time the wind failing us, our captain untied the third knot, and ſoon after a moſt dreadful tempeſt blew from the north north-eaſt, upon which we were obliged to take in all our ſails and drive be-

fore the wind under our bare poles, expecting every minute to go to the bottom; dreading leſt this ſhould be a judgement inflicted upon us for our infernal commerce. However, on the 4th day the ſtorm ceaſed, when we were under great concern at our having loſt ſight of the other veſſels, which we feared were by this time loſt: but having a favourable gale, we continued our courſe, reſolving to make the firſt port in order to refit.

With reſpect to the ſale of winds, for which theſe northern people are very famous, it is neceſſary to obſerve, that like all other ſpecies of witchcraft and necromancy, it is no more than mere fraud and impoſture. Thoſe who deal in it ſtudy the weather, and from conſtant obſervation, are able to judge of the variation of winds for ſeveral days to come, and take care to ſtart ſo many difficulties in making their bargains, that they are ſure never to come to a concluſion, till the ſigns appear by which they are morally ſenſible that thoſe winds will blow, which they pretend to ſell. When our ſuppoſed conjuror affirmed that his power reached no farther than Rouxella, it ought to be underſtood, he very well knew by experience that cape to be the limit of his obſervations, and that he ſhould riſk his credit, if he preſumed to exceed his bounds. This account we received from ſome intelligent perſons who reſided a while in Iceland, where the people are the moſt famous for this kind of traffic, and they ſell them with leſs limitation, becauſe living in an iſland, they are more able to judge of the variation of winds in all the ſeas round about them. This ſpecies of knowledge is confined among a few people, who by this means keep their neighbours in ſubjection, and put foreigners under tribute; nor are theſe ſtrange notions much to be wondered at in a barbarous country, where religion is at a very low ebb, and learning has not improved the mind.

The coafts of the fea all over the north are fo full of rocks, that the ports and creeks are almoft inacceffible, and we were obliged to fail two days longer before we could make a proper port. However, we at length reached the coaft of Wardhuys, the chief town of Daniſh Lapland, where there is a caſtle, which has a garriſon of two companies of ſoldiers, belonging to the king of Denmark, and alſo a collector to recover the duties impoſed on foreigners trading to or from Archangel, who ſuffered us to paſs without examination, judging from our ſaluting the caſtle, and by our colours, that we were Danes. We then ſailed to Varanger, and caſt anchor half a league from the town, when the captain being impatient till he found a place where we might refit, and being deſirous of obtaining ſome information in relation to trade, ordered out the long boat, and taking with him eight men well armed, rowed towards the town, where he arrived in about a half an hour. Varanger is a populous town and a convenient port, but ſo little frequented, that the inhabitants, amazed at ſeeing them, gave them ſmall encouragement for trade, but offered their aſſiſtance to refit the ſhip.

The captain having obſerved the commodiouſneſs of the harbour, returned with the boat, upon which we weighed anchor, and entered the port; when we unladed the cargo, which conſiſted of bales of cloth, and rolls of tobacco, with which we deſigned to have traded. Theſe goods were locked up in a houſe near the ſhore, and a watch ſet to guard them. To ſome of the principal inhabitants we preſented bits of roll tobacco, which they valuing more than gold, it ſecured their friendſhip, and in return, they treated us with the beſt they had, particularly with dry fiſh, which ſerves them inſtead of bread; with the fleſh of rein-deer, which I did not think very palatable; with bear's fleſh, and that of other wild beaſts, of which we

had no knowledge. They alſo treated us with freſh fiſh, boiled without ſalt, and ſerved up either with the oil of other fiſh, or a ſour liquor that is highly eſteemed by them. We could not, however, bear them company in their repaſts, and their dainties not ſuiting our taſte, we ſent for proviſions from the ſhip, the chief of which was ſalt beef and biſcuit; but when we offered ſome of it to the Laplanders, we found that our food was as diſagreeable to them as theirs was to us.

Their ſour drink conſiſts of an infuſion of juniper-berries, and of a grain like lentiles, the name of which I forgot; it grows there in great abundance, as do alſo juniper-trees; of that grain they alſo make brandy, which has the ſame effect as that diſtilled from grapes, and their common drink is as ſtrong as French wine. Our beer was indeed more acceptable to them than our meat; they drank freely of it, and were alſo pleaſed with the brandy we gave them; yet they preferred their own ſour drink to either our brandy or beer.

The religion of Lapland is Lutheraniſm; but though they have clergy among them, they are ſo ſuperſtitious, that if in the morning they meet a beaſt in their way whoſe appearance is eſteemed ominous, they return home and do not ſtir out again all that day; and when they go a fiſhing, if they take but one fiſh in the firſt draught, they think it an ill omen, pack up their nets; and leave work for that time.

Both the men and women are of a low ſtature, but are ſtrong and active. Thier faces are broad and flat, and particularly their noſes. Their eyes are ſmall like a dog's, and thier eyelids generally make them look as if they were blear-eyed. They are of a ſwarthy complexion, and are of a rude uncivilized and laſcivious diſpoſition; eſpecially the women, who readily proſtitute themſelves to all

comers, if they can do it without the knowledge of their huſbands.

The men are clothed in rein deer ſkins, with the hair outwards; their coats are ſhort and reach down to the middle of their thighs; their breeches and ſtockings are of the ſame materials with the hair outwards; but over theſe ſome of them wear a kind of boots made of fiſh ſkin, which, though rough and coarſe, are ſtitched ſo neatly, that the ſeams are hardly to be ſeen. Their bonnets are alſo made of rein-deer ſkins, with the hair outwards, but are edged with a ſtrip of either grey or white fox ſkin.

Their caps are like thoſe of the Norwegian women, and are made of coarſe canvas, and their hair is twiſted up in two rolls, that hang down on each ſhoulder. Some of them wear a ſort of ruff eight fingers broad, which they tie behind. Their other clothes are made either of coarſe cloth, or the ſkins of rein-deer, with the hair turned outwards; but their ſhoes are of fiſh ſkins with the ſcales on, and ſomewhat reſemble the wooden ſhoes worn by the peaſants in France.

Their houſes reſemble thoſe of the boors about Chriſtiana. They have no light but what enters by a hole at the top of the hut, and do not make uſe of beds any more than the other Laplanders. The whole family, as the maſter, miſtreſs, children, and men and maid ſervants, lie down together promiſcuouſly, upon bear ſkins ſpread in the middle of the room, which, when they riſe in the morning, are taken up and laid by, till they are wanted again at night. In every houſe there is a great black cat which they highly value. The Laplanders talk to it as if it was a reaſonable creature: every night they go out of their huts with it, as if to conſult it alone; and in parties of fiſhing and hunting it follows the people like a dog.

We unladed the ſhip the day after our arrival, and the inhabitants helped us to haul her aſhore, when the captain finding that ſhe was more damaged than he expected, deſired the Laplanders to provide him timber to refit her, to which they readily agreed, and the crew went to a neighbouring mountain to fell it.

As we found that the ſhip would be ſome time in refitting, our ſupercargo thought it would not be improper to take a journey into the country, to try whether any trade could be carried on with the peaſants there; and for this purpoſe picked out me, and two more of the ſhip's company to attend him.

Early the next morning, which was the 12th of May, we ſet out, taking with us ſome cloth and tobacco to trade with, and ſalt beef and pork for our proviſions; having engaged three of the inhabitants of Veranger to attend us, both to ſhew us the way, and to help to carry our goods and proviſions to the next village. We followed them through woods, mountains, and valleys without meeting any living creature, till about four o'clock in the afternoon, when we perceived two white bears of a prodigious ſize approach, as we thought, to devour us; but our guides obſerving the terror we were in, bid us not be afraid, for we need only have our arms ready for defence in caſe they approached too near us. Upon which we cocked and primed our pieces, and prepared our flints; but whether the bears were frightened at the fire which ſtruck from our flints, or ſmelt our powder, they ſoon fled away ſo faſt, that they were preſently out of ſight.

As we were deſcending a mountain an hour before night, we perceived at the foot of it a dozen houſes at a conſiderable diſtance from each other, and a little beyond them a herd of beaſts like ſtags, which our guides told us were rein-deer. On our arrival at the village, our guides conducted us to a hut,

when being very weary, we were glad to reſt ourſelves, for we had made a long journey in a very bad way, with our luggage at our backs, which tired and encumbered us. We preſented our hoſt with a piece of roll tobacco, and he received it with extraordinary joy, aſſuring us, he had not had ſo valuable a preſent for nine months paſt; and in return he brought out his brandy bottle, ſome rein-deer's fleſh dreſſed without ſalting, and ſome dried fiſh, which we gave to our guides, and ſupped ourſelves upon the proviſions we had brought with us; after which we went to ſleep upon bear's ſkins, after the faſhion of the country.

In the morning we aſked our hoſt if he had nothing to barter with us for cloth and tobacco, to which he anſwered that he had ſome wolf, fox, and white ſquirrel ſkins, and that his neighbours had ſome of the ſame commodities, and would gladly exchange with us. We bid him, by our interpreters, bring out his ſkins, and that if he had any clothes made of rein-deer ſkins, we would deal with him for four ſuits, which we wanted to keep us warm; accordingly he brought forth his merchandize, which we bought, and paid him part in tobacco and part in cloth. We alſo trucked with his neighbours as long as they had any thing worth buying, and then deſired our hoſt to lend us ſome rein-deer to carry us farther up the country, to which he readily conſented; and taking down a horn that hung up in his cottage, went out and blew it, upon which fourteen or fifteen of theſe animals came running towards the hut, ſix of whom he immediately yoked to ſix ſledges. In one of them we put our merchandize and proviſions, another we aſſigned to one of our guides who underſtood the language of the Muſcovite Laplanders, and that of the Kilops diſmiſſing the two other inhabitants of Veranger, after firſt having paid them in tobacco for their trouble. We then put on our Lapland clothes, and each of us

lying down in his ſledge, was covered with a bear's ſkin. At the back of the ſledge were two girths made of rein deer's ſkin leather, in which we thruſt our arms up to the ſhoulders to keep ourſelves ſteady, and we had each a ſtick with a ſtrong ferrel to it to ſupport the ſledge, if it ſhould be in danger of overturning againſt the ſtumps of trees, or ſtones lying in the way. We were no ſooner ready to ſet out than our hoſt muttered ſome words in the ear of the rein-deer; and when I afterwards enquired of our guide what he meant by it, he gravely replied with the utmoſt ſimplicity, that it was to tell them whither they ſhould carry us. However, cuſtom had made this muttering ſo familiar to them, that when our hoſt had gone to all the ſix, they ſet off with an amazing ſwiftneſs, and continued their pace over hills and dales without keeping any beaten path, till ſeven o'clock in the evening; when they brought us to a large village ſituated between two mountains, on the borders of a great lake. Stopping at the fourth houſe in the place, and beating the ground with their feet, the maſter of the houſe came with ſome of his ſervants to take us out of the ſledges, and unharneſs our cattle, one of them bringing out a little juniper can filled with brandy, of which he gave each of us a brimmer out of a larger veſſel that was alſo made of juniper wood. This it ſeems was to revive our ſpirits, our guide having informed him, that we were frightened at our being drawn ſo ſwiftly by theſe animals, we not being uſed to that way of travelling.

The rein-deer is of the colour of the ſtag, and is not much bigger. The horns of this animal is are ſomewhat higher than thoſe of the ſtag, but more crooked, and not quite ſo well furniſhed with branches. They have cloven feet like their's, but they are as big as the hoofs of oxen. Of the milk of the females, the Laplanders make good butter and cheeſe. Their harneſs is a collar of rein-deer leather,

by which they are faſtened to the ſhafts of the ſledge, not much unlike the manner in which a horſe is faſtened to a chaiſe; and thus they draw it with incredible ſwiftneſs, without being guided by the rider.

When we got out of our ſledges, our hoſt conducted us into his hut, which, like the reſt of the cottages in the place, was very little, low and covered with the bark of trees, the light entering in at a hole in the top. The people here were clothed much like thoſe of Varanger, their apparel being of the ſame materials and make, but longer. The women were alſo dreſſed in rein-deer ſkins, with the hair outwards, and their hair was twiſted like that of the women of Varanger; but inſtead of a canvas cap, they wore on their heads a high bonnet made of the ſame ſkins as their clothes, with the hair outwards.

We gave our hoſt a piece of our roll tobacco, about two inches long, with which he was highly pleaſed, and in the moſt hearty manner returned us his thanks. We alſo gave a piece not quite ſo long to each of the inhabitants of the place to make them our friends, and the better to ſecure ourſelves againſt their attempts, for they ſeemed more uncivilized than thoſe we laſt dealt with, we again ſupped on the proviſions we had brought with us, and our guide eat ſome of our hoſt's ſalt-fiſh, and freſh rein-deer veniſon. We aſked how many leagues we had come that day, he anſwered about thirty, and that we were in the territories of Mourmanſkeimore. The inhabitants talked a language very different from that uſed at Veranger; but our guide had been often in the country, and underſtood them. After ſupper we lay down on bear ſkins, to take our reſt, as we had done the night before, having firſt exchanged with our hoſt our Lapland habits for thoſe that were longer, and a parcel of tobacco, for the ſkins of an hundred grey ſquirrels,

Scott & Allardice

The manner of travelling in Sledges, drawn by Rein deer in Lapland

a furr much eſteemed in Denmark and other parts of Europe.

The next day our hoſt, at our deſire, provided us with ſledges to go farther into the country, and the other inhabitants of the village came to ſee us depart, bringing brandy with them to drink to us on our taking our leave of them; when our hoſt having performed the ſame ceremony of muttering in the ears of the ſix rein-deer, they ſet off, and we were drawn with the ſame ſwiftneſs as before. We came to no place that was inhabited till about three in the afternoon, when we arrived at a village, in which were eight cottages built on a high mountain, by a wood ſide, where our cattle ſtopped, by which we gueſſed that there were ſome inhabitants; but finding that no body came to us, we baited our rein-deer with moſs, which grew there very plentifully, and refreſhed ourſelves with ſalt beef and biſcuit; while our interpreter regaled himſelf upon ſome rein-deer veniſon and dried fiſh, all of us making merry with the brandy we had given us in the laſt village.

We ſtaid in this place near an hour, and this being the uſual ſtage, the rein-deer had no inclination to quit it; in order to induce them to move, our guide uſed many ridiculous and ſuperſtitious ceremonies: he went alone into the wood, and coming out again muttered ſome words in the ears of theſe animals, which, whether they underſtood or not, had but little effect on them, till he had played this farce over four or five times, when they began to proceed, though not ſo ſwift as before. We then aſked him the reaſon why we ſaw nobody in the village, to which he replied, that it was a very common thing in that country, theſe dwellings belonging to the Kilops, a nation of Laplanders who often change their habitations, fly from ſtrangers, and ſubſiſt wholly on what they get by hunting. We now deſcended the mountain, and about nine o'clock diſcovered four Kilops at a ſmall diſtance, returning

from hunting in ſledges drawn by rein-deer, but they turned aſide, and took another way to avoid us. In leſs than half an hour after we entered a long wood, in which we heard terrible howlings, but ſaw no beaſt of prey. When we had paſſed the wood, we had another mountain to deſcend, at the bottom of which we obſerved a village; thither our cattle carried us, and ſtopping, beat their feet before a cottage, at which the maſter made his appearance, and we having ſolicited his friendſhip with a piece of tobacco, he made us welcome: we ſupped on our proviſion, as our guide did on his; and then, according to cuſtom, laid down to reſt on bear ſkins, being ſufficiently tired with our journey.

The next morning we aſked the interpreter how many leagues we had travelled the preceding day, to which he replied, at leaſt forty; but he muſt certainly have been miſtaken, or elſe the leagues muſt not be ſo long as they are generally calculated, for forty of their leagues make 160 of thoſe of France, each Lapland league being as long as a German. Our guide alſo informed us that we were in Muſcovite Lapland; and we bid him aſk the inhabitants of the village, whom we had preſented with tobacco, and been treated by them with brandy, whether they had any commodities to exchange with us for tobacco and cloth. We had ſome rolls of our former left, and moſt of our bales of the latter. The Laplanders replied, that they had ſome furrs, and on our deſiring to ſee them, brought us white, black and grey fox ſkins, grey ſquirrels and ſables, though not of ſo fine a colour as thoſe of Borandia, Samojedia, and Siberia. Theſe merchandizes were what we wanted; we therefore ſoon agreed with them, and paid them in cloth and tobacco. When we had finiſhed our buſineſs, we ſat down to drink with them, and though they were not quite ſo uncivilized as ſome other of the Laplanders, their converſation was extremely rude and indecent. It now grew

late, and we designing to proceed yet farther to dispose of the few rolls of tobacco we had left, desired our host to furnish us with sledges and fresh rein-deer.

He harnessed and prepared as many sledges as we had occasion for, upon which we departed at one o'clock, and ran with our former speed, through different and unbeaten wastes, till past six, without meeting with one habitation: when descending a hill, we observed two huts under a rock a little out of the way. Our guide told us, that they belonged to two Kilops, who no sooner saw us, than they fled with their wives and families. We travelled two hours longer, but came to no house, till we at last discovered a large village at the foot of a hill by a river side, where we arrived at eleven o'clock at night, and went to a cottage in the middle of the place, whither our cattle were pleased to conduct us. The master of the house gave us a very kind reception, made us a fire in the middle of his hut, and treated us with brandy, dried fish, and salted venison, with salt butter and milk. We were surprized at this change, for we had not before met with any salt provisions in our journey: we had already eat up our bread, and should have been very much put to it had we not met with such good entertainment here; our guide, however, would not taste a bit of salt meat, and was therefore obliged to live on the fresh venison he brought with him. In the morning we found they had nothing to trade with, and that they could not supply us with sledges: upon which we crossed the river, and soon reaching another village, went to the most likely house, to hire sledges and rein-deer, to carry us to Kola, where having furnished ourselves, we arrived there about noon. Kola is a large town situated on the side of a river near ten leagues from the North Sea, having large forests and deserts to the east, Mourmanskeimore to the west, and prodigious high mountains to the south. It

conſiſts of one indifferent ſtreet, the houſes of which are built of wood, and very low; but are handſomely covered with fiſhbones on the top, where the light enters at a hole, as in other parts of Lapland. The inhabitants, like the other Muſcovites, are ſo jealous of their wives, that they lock them up to prevent their being ſeen by ſtrangers. Our landlord took all our cloth off our hands, for which he gave us in exchange two lynxes ſkins ſpotted like a leapord's, three dozen of white fox ſkins, ſome ermines, half a dozen of wyetfras, an animal which ſome what reſembles a badger, and has rougher hair; his colour is a blackiſh red, and his tail like a fox's. There being ſome ells of cloth above what we were to give him in exchange, he obliged himſelf to ſupply us with proviſions for our journey back to Varanger, and to help us to ſledges as far as the river we had lately paſſed. He treated us as well as he was able, and we ſupped and ſlept as we had done in other places.

The next morning when we were preparing to depart, ſome of the town's peopled enquired whether we had any rolls of tobacco left, and whether we would exchange them for ſkins. We replied, with all our hearts. Upon which they fetched a dozen of ermine, two white fox ſkins, and four lynxes, for which we gave them the remainder of our cargo of tobacco, except ſeven or eight rolls, which we reſerved for our own uſe, and to pay for the hire of our rein-deer and ſledges in our way back; for tobacco is more neceſſary than money to thoſe wo travel in this wild and unfrequented country, the Laplanders valuing a piece of tobacco of the length of one's finger, at above a crown piece. The kings of Denmark and Sweden have taxed it ſeverely, and there are collectors ſettled in every frontier town to gather the impoſts upon it.

When we had diſpatched our buſineſs, we were obliged, according to the cuſtom of the place, to

drink with our chapmen. Our entertainment every where was brandy, and it laſted till two in the afternoon, when we deſired our hoſt to get the ſledges ready, which he did in a minute, packed up our furs for us, furniſhed us with biſcuit, ginger bread, and ſalted rein-deer veniſon, beſides a rundlet of brandy. Every th ng being thus ready, we ſtored our merchandize in one of the ſledges, got into the others ourſelves, drank a full glaſs at parting with our friendly dealers, and ſet out on our return for the village on the other ſide of the river, which we had paſſed the day before, and in my opinion we travelled much faſter than we had hitherto done.

We arrived at the firſt village by ſeven o'clock, ſoon croſſed the river, and went directly to our old quarter, where our landlord, in hopes of getting more tobacco, received us very joyfully: he immediately preſented us a cup of brandy, and aſked us if we would have the rein-deer put to the ſledges, to which we replied, that we choſe to reſt ourſelves till morning, there being no village for ſeveral leagues from his habitation. Upon this he filled us another cup, and when we had drank it offered to take us with him to the funeral of one of his neighbours who had been dead about four hours.

We were very glad of this opportunity of ſeeing their funeral ceremonies, and therefore accompanied him to the houſe of the deceaſed, when we ſaw the corpſe taken from the bears ſkins on which it lay, and removed into a wooden coffin, by ſix of his moſt intimate friends; the body being firſt wrapped in linen, and the face and hands only left bare. In one hand they put a purſe with money in it, to pay the fee of the porter of the gate of Paradiſe, and in the other a certificate, ſigned by a prieſt, directed to St. Peter to certify that he was a good Chriſtian, and ought to be admitted into heaven: and at the head of the coffin was placed a picture of St. Nicho-

las, who was one of the ſeven deacons mentioned in the Acts of the Apoſtles, a ſaint greatly reverenced in all parts of Muſcovy, where he is ſuppoſed to be a particular friend of the dead; upon which account his picture is always fixed near a corpſe, inſtead of a crucifix. He is repreſented in a pilgrim's habit, with a long robe, a broad girdle about his waiſt, and a ſtaff in his hand. They alſo put into the coffin a rundlet of brandy, ſome dried fiſh, and reindeer veniſon for him to eat and drink on the road. They then lighted ſome fir tree roots, piled up at a convenient diſtance from the coffin, wept, howled and made a variety of ſtrange geſtures, aſſuming a thouſand different attitudes to ſhew the extravagances of their ſorrow. When this noiſe and theſe geſticulations were over, they marched round the corpſe ſeveral times in proceſſion, aſking the deceaſed, why he died? whether he was angry with his wife? whether he ſtood in need of meat, drink, or clothes? if he had not ſucceeded when fiſhing, or had loſt his game when hunting? they then reſumed their howling, and ſtamping with all the ſigns of diſtraction. One of the prieſts who aſſiſted at the ſolemnity frequently ſprinkled holy water upon the corpſe, as alſo did the mourners. Being now almoſt deafened with noiſe, and wearied with looking on theſe barbarous rites, we left our landlord behind us, and returned to his cottage, where we found his wife at home. She had made a ſally from the place in which her huſband had confined her on our arrival, and no ſooner ſaw us, than ſuppoſing he was in our company, would have retired to her corner; but our interpreter letting her know that the good man was at the funeral, and would not return for ſome time, ſhe ſtaid and viewed us all round, one after another, drew her ſeat near us, and ſhewed us a bonnet of her own embroidering, very curiouſly performed with tinſel thread. The wives of the Muſcovite Laplanders make clothes for themſelves,

their huſbands, and their children, and at the edges they are all embroidered with that thread. She was pretty handſome, well ſhaped, and appeared to be good humoured, and well pleaſed with us. While our hoſt was buſied about the funeral, we pulled out ſome of our proviſions, and gave our landlady ſome of every ſort to taſte. She liked them all, eſpecially the gingerbread: but having drank two or three glaſſes of brandy, withdrew to her place of confinement, for fear of her huſband's return; for he would have certainly reſented her having taken ſuch liberty, which would have raiſed his jealouſy, had he found her among us. When he came home, he obliged us to take a cup or two more, to ſmoke a pipe, and to ſup with him; for he brought ſuch proviſions as he thought would be moſt grateful to our palates, particularly ſalt butter, which we eat with bread; and as our guide would not taſte any thing that was ſalt, he got him ſome dried fiſh, and ſome bear's fleſh, which he broiled on the coals.

All the cottages in this village were, like thoſe we had obſerved in other places, built of wood and covered with turf, but they were handſomer than any we had yet ſeen, being both within and without adorned with fiſh bones, curiouſly inlaid. We according to cuſtom laid down with the family on bears ſkins, our landlady alone being obliged to conceal herſelf till we were gone.

Early the next morning, our hoſt got ready our rein-deer and ſledges, when having ſtowed our bales, our cattle ſet off, and in two hours carried us ſix leagues. As we were paſſing between two hills, we ſaw a Laplander going a hunting, who came up to us ſkating on the ſnow, as faſt as we rode in our ſledges, for the ſnow ſeldom melts till Midſummer. His ſkates, which were made of the bark of a tree, were ſeven feet and a half long, four fingers broad, and flat at the bottom. He was dreſſed like the other Laplanders, in a garment made of the ſkin of

a rein-deer, and an arrow in one hand, a bow in the other, and a large quiver hanging at his back, and was followed by a black cat. He kept company with us about half a league, and we parted at the foot of the next mountain.

We continued our route three days, ſtopping at the ſame places where we lay before, and meeting with nothing extraordinary; our entertainment, our way of travelling, and every thing elſe being the ſame as before; and on the 21ſt of May, about nine o'clock at night, we arrived ſafe at Varanger, having every where been received with great civility, and ſuffered no injury in our whole journey.

From obſerving the manners and diſpoſitions of the Laplanders, I am enabled to affirm, that notwithſtanding their ignorance and ſuperſtition, they are remarkable for their honeſty, and are unacquainted with theft or fraud. They throw the dart with ſuch dexterity, as eaſily to hit a mark of the ſize of a crown piece, at the diſtance of 30 paces: and are ſo expert in the uſe of the bow and arrow, that they can ſhoot their game in what part they pleaſe, and yet are ſo averſe to war, that whenever the kings of Denmark or Sweden, or the czar of Muſcovy, have occaſion for ſoldiers, they leave their dwellings and fly to the woods, for fear of being preſſed into the ſervice.

They have plenty of geeſe, ducks, pullets, and other ſorts of fowl, which they feed with the grain of which they make their drink, and when that is ſcarce, give them dried fiſh. Here is alſo a bird of prey, of a deep pearl colour much bigger than an eagle: his head is like that of a cat, and his eyes are red and ſparkling: his claws and beak reſemble thoſe of an eagle, and he feeds upon hares and other ſmall game. Moſt of the beaſts of Lapland are white, as the wolves, bears, foxes, and hares; even their crows may be compared to the ſwan for whiteneſs, and have nothing black about them but their bills

and feet. They have a kind of dogs a foot long, and only four inches high; their hair is an inch long, of a yellowiſh white, rough, and ſtanding up like a hog's briſtles; the head and ſnout reſemble thoſe of a rat: they have ſtraight ears like a wolf, with a curled tail, and are very ready at catching mice, which they watch, and eat like our cats; on which account the Laplanders, notwithſtanding their uglineſs, ſet a high value upon them. The fiſh, which when dried, ſerves them for bread, is called raſf, and is firm, ſubſtantial, and, excepting the fat, has a very good taſte. They have plenty of other ſorts of fiſh; and though they have ſuch an antipathy to ſalt, yet they boil all their meat in ſalt water, if they are near enough to the ſea to get it conveniently.

Within two or three days after our return to Varanger, the captain had repaired the ſhip, and taken in his lading and ballaſt; in the mean time our crew treated the inhabitants with brandy and tobacco, to keep them in good humour; for fear leaſt if they were not bribed to be our friends, they ſhould, in revenge, plague us with contrary winds. We ſet ſail from Varanger on the 26th of May, with a gale as much in our favour as we could poſſibly deſire, which the ſailors ignorantly attributed to the friendſhip of the Laplanders; but this breeze ſoon ſhifting, we were obliged to caſt anchor under the ſhore, oppoſite the iſland of Wardhuys; when being obſerved by the governor of the caſtle, he came off to us in a ſhallop, and was entertained in as obliging a manner as poſſible; after which he returned to the caſtle very well ſatisfied with his reception. The next day the wind ſettling, we proceeded again to ſea, and held our courſe north-north-eaſt, and in three days got into a climate where there was now no night, we never loſing ſight of the ſun, which was always above the horizon.

On the 31ſt day of may, we ſaw the mountains of Greenland, at which time a north wind blew with ſuch violence, that we could not keep to ſea, and were obliged to ſteer to the eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, in order to make the ſhore, that we might be ſheltered from the weather. We continued our courſe for ſeveral days, and at length caſt anchor in a good harbour on the coaſt of Borandia.

We had ſcarce entered this harbour, before we eſpied two ſhips that were at anchor about a muſket-ſhot from us, which we found were the two ſhips in our company that had been ſeperated from us in the ſtorm that drove us into Varanger. We were extremely glad at finding them, and accordingly fired three guns, and hung out our flag in the ſtern as a ſignal of our arrival. They were filled with equal joy at ſeeing us ſafe, anſwered our guns by twice as many, and hung out all their flags and pendants: we did ſo too; but though we wiſhed for an opportunity of ſending our long-boat to them, to learn the particulars of their eſcape, the wind blew ſo ſtiff, that we durſt not attempt it till 24 hours after. They were no leſs impatient to know how we eſcaped and as ſoon as the wind ſlackened, a boat came off from each of them on board us, when we embraced each other with extroardinary joy and affection, as people who had found friends whom they thought buried in the deep.

They told us that the ſtorm drove them on the coaſt of Juhorſkt, near an iſland, where they had like to have run aſhore in three fathoms water, and were forced to tack about immediately, for fear of running upon the rocks; when by the favour of a north-north-eaſt wind, they got out to ſea with much difficulty, and in three days reached the bay where we found them. We in our turn told them the dangers we had encountered, and our being forced to enter the port of Varanger to refit our ſhip; and informed them of our journey through Daniſh, Swe-

diſh and Muſcovite Lapland; and of our traffic and adventures. This account encouraged them to go aſhore, to try if they could find any body to trade with them; when a council being held, it was reſolved, that a captain, a ſupercargo, two accountants, who underſtood both the language of the North and the Ruſſian, with twenty ſeamen, and myſelf, well armed, ſhould land, and take with us ſeveral days proviſions, and ſome goods for traffic.

Purſuant to this, two long boats were got ready, and having landed, we aſcended a hill, to ſee if we could diſcover any habitations; but perceiving none, we marched to a neighbouring mountain at half a league's diſtance, where we obſerved five or ſix perſons among ſome buſhes of thorns and briars, who came towards us, till they perceived us advancing; and then turned their backs and fled away ſo faſt, that we loſt ſight of them in an inſtant. However, imagining that their track would lead us to ſome village, we followed it, and after a march of two hours, as we deſcended a mountain, we obſerved ſome huts in the valley below; and advancing towards them, perceived thirty or forty men armed with darts and arrows, prepared to give us battle, for ſeeing ſo ſtrong a body of us, they took us for enemies. We halted for ſome time, in order to conſult whether we ſhould retreat to our ſhips or attack them, and being ſenſible that nothing was to be got by defeating them, were inclined to retire; when one of our accountants offered to go to them by himſelf, and to let them know that we were friends and merchants, who were come with a view of trading with them, if they had any thing to exchange with us.

This propoſal being approved, he approached them carrying two rolls of tobacco, and a ſmall keg of brandy. When he came within hearing, one of them, who ſeemed to be their chief, called to him in the Muſcovite language, aſking who we were, and what we would have, and on being anſwered that we were

merchants come to trade with them, they seemed satisfied, and made signs to him to come nearer, when giving us the same signal, we, to our mutual satisfaction, joined companies.

On our coming up to them, I was surprized to see them much shorter than the Laplanders, their eyes are small like ferrets, and what is usually called the white, is of a reddish yellow; their heads are large, their faces flat and broad, with flat noses, and swarthy complexions; and their legs are short and thick. The Borandian women are not at all handsomer than the men; they dress like them, and also, like them, spend their time in fishing and hunting. Their clothes are a cap, a jacket that reaches down to their knees, a straight pair of breeches, and stockings, all made of white bear skins, with the hairy side outwards; but their shoes are made of the bark of trees. They roast all the meat they obtain by hunting, eat it without salt, and use fish instead of bread. Their common drink is water, in which juniper-berries are steeped, till they rot, which gives the water all agreeable taste, at least in a country where nothing better is to be had. Their huts are low and oval, covered with fish bones, and have no light, but what comes in at the door, which resembles the mouth of anoven: They drink immoderately when they can get brandy, and the most acceptable present that can be made them, is either some of that liquor or tobacco; but they seem to have little or no notion of religion.

They soon purchased all the brandy and tobacco we had brought ashore with us for fox skins, wolve skins, and a few ermines. When finding that they had a great quantity remaining, we persuaded them to take them to the beach, to which they readily agreed, and having carried them to the shore, stood admiring our ships. We then made a signal for the boats to be sent off to fetch our chapmen; upon which each ship sent two, in one of which went the

ſupercargo, the accountant who treated with the Borandians, and I, with ſeveral of the Borandians, while others ſtaid on the ſea ſhore. On our going on board, the captain being informed of their fondneſs for brandy and tobacco, filled out a brimmer to each of them, and alſo made a preſent to each of a bit of roll tobacco of about an inch long, at which they were tranſported with joy.

Having purchaſed all the furrs they brought with them, we aſked if there was any conveniency for travelling in order to trade with the inhabitants, to which they anſwered in the affirmative; but that we muſt expect nothing but furrs. This we let them know was the commodity we wanted, and they aſſured us that we might have what we would of that kind, for tobacco brandy and money; and if we pleaſed, might trade as far as Siberia, whither they would conduct us. We accordingly agreed with them to be our guides thither and back again, and to furniſh us with what conveniencies the country afforded in our journey, for two rolls of tobacco, and two quarts of brandy, promiſing them farther rewards, in caſe the trade turned to account, and they contributed to it by their aſſiſtance. The bargain being concluded, our captain gave them another brimmer of brandy, and ſent them aſhore to prepare what was proper for our journey. They ſoon got every thing ready, and made ſuch a report of our kindneſs to them, while they were on board, that their countrymen expreſſed great friendſhip for us, and two boats were ſent aſhore with our ſupercargo to purchaſe for us. They were, however, at firſt unwilling to come aboard our ſhips; but we ſoon became better acquainted, and they came freely whenever they had an opportunity. We bought their furrs, treated them with brandy, and in return they invited us to their habitations.

In ſeven or eight hours we had provided every thing ready for our journey, and our two Borandian

guides had brought ſix ſledges drawn by ſix rein-deer to the water ſide, which were all that were to be had in thoſe parts. The rein-deer, however, being larger than thoſe of Lapland, were able to draw two men, and the Borandian ſledges were contrived to hold them. The captain now called a council of all the officers, and it was agreed that our ſupercargo, and two accountants, who could ſpeak the Ruſſian language, myſelf, and a ſeaman out of each ſhip, ſhould go with the two Borandians. One of the ſledges we loaded with tobacco, brandy, gold, ſilver, and copper, to the value of three or four thouſand pounds: our ſupercargo and myſelf rode together in another of theſe ſledges; one accountant and a Borandian, in a third: the other accountant and the other Borandian, in the fourth; two ſeamen in the fifth; and the other ſeaman in the ſixth; and as he rode by himſelf, we ſtowed ſome barrels of brandy and tobacco in his ſledge. We ſat one at one end of the ſledge, and the other at the other, facing each other. The rein-deer ran as ſwiftly as thoſe of Lapland, and in eight hours time drew us twenty leagues over hills and dales, and through ſeveral woods; yet in all this great extent of country we met nobody in our way. We then ſtopped at a village, and baited our rein-deer with moſs, while we ourſelves eat ſome biſcuit and beef, and our Borandians refreſhed themſelves with dried fiſh dipped in fiſh oil; for they would not touch our ſalt meat, and did not like our biſcuit. Both they and we drank at a neighbouring ſpring, and then cheared ourſelves with a glaſs of brandy. Being thus refreſhed, we again mounted our ſledges, and travelled three hours longer; when we perceived a large village at the foot of a mountain, the huts of which were better built, and cloſer together than thoſe of Lapland, thither we haſtened to take up our lodging; but were obliged to divide our company, becauſe one of theſe cottages would not hold us

all. We met with the ſame reception from our landlords as in Lapland, and gratified them with a piece of roll tobacco and a cup of brandy; our guides took care of our rein-deer, and we laid down to reſt on bears ſkins.

I diſtiſtinguiſhed one part of the day from the others by day and night, though there was really no night at all; but having ſlept ſix or ſeven hours we aroſe, in order to trade with the inhabitants of the village, who being informed of our buſineſs by our guides, ſoon produced ſome wolve ſkins, white fox ſkins, two dozen of ermines, three hundred grey ſquirrels, and ſeveral pair of ſables; but they were neither ſo fond of tobacco nor brandy as the Laplanders or the Borandians dwelling on the coaſt. Hunting is their only diverſion and employment. In the ſummer, they eat their meat either boiled or broiled on the coals, and during that ſeaſon provide enough to ſerve them in winter, preſerving it by drying it in the ſun, cutting it in pieces, and ſpreading it on the tops of the houſes, which is the only curing they beſtow upon it. They change their dwellings like the Kilops, are extremely ſtupid, and have very diſagreeable features. Their white bear ſkin clothes reſemble thoſe of the other Borandians, and are tied round the waiſt with a girdle four inches broad, at which hangs a ſtone that will cut like a razor. The only difference obſervable between the women, who are dexterous hunters, and the men, is that their hair is twiſted, and hangs down on their ſhoulders, and their carrying only a ſtick in their hand, which is ſharp at one end, and being of a tough wood, ſerves them for a defenſive weapon. The men carry at their backs a quiver, and the ſtrings of their bows are made of the rind of a tree.

We bought the furrs the inhabitants had to ſell for money, and copper; ordered our rein-deer to be put to the ſledges; mounted them, and having

each of us drank a glaſs of brandy, proceeded on our journey. We now rode eight or nine hours before we came to any habitation; but at laſt our guides perceiving three or four huts, turned our reindeer up to them; but finding nobody there, we regaled ourſelves on our own proviſions, while our cattle fed on the moſs which grew there in abundance, and having refreſhed ourſelves and our beaſts for three hours, proceeded on our journey.

We were now fifteen hours without ſeeing any human creature, or ſo much as a hut, when we overtook ſome hunters at the foot of a hill, one of whom was dreſſed after the Muſcovite faſhion in a long robe, tied round his waiſt with a girdle four inches broad. It was made of a white bear ſkin, with the hair outwards, and edged with a fine black. His cap was made of a black fox's ſkin, and his breeches and ſtockings of the ſkin of a reindeer; his ſhoes were made of fiſh ſkin, and were not unlike thoſe worn at Varanger. The two other perſons were dreſſed like us, in white bear ſkins with the hair outwards, and carried at their backs bear ſkins, wolve ſkins, white fox ſkins, ſome ermines, and very fine ſables. The former carried only twelve white crows, and ſeven ſables, which hung at his girdle. On our coming near them, one of our guides ſtopt to talk with them, and to our great ſurprize got out of the ſledge, and the other went into it. Neither the ſupercargo who rode with me, nor I, could tell how to account for this complaiſance. We however purſued our journey with the hunter in our company for above an hour longer through this deſolate country, without meeting any other perſon, or the leaſt ſign of an habitation; but at laſt drawing near the brow of an high mountain, we perceived at the foot of it ſeveral houſes built cloſe together, and had a diſtant view of the ſea. When we arrived at the village, we ſtopped at the door of the perſon who had taken the guide's place,

and ſoon found that he was a man of authority, and he deſired the inhabitants to ſerve us as his friends.

The name of this village is Vitzora. The inhabitants no ſooner ſaw this perſon in our company, than they ran to help us out of the ſledges, and to unharneſs our rein-deer. He bartered all his ſkins with us for brandy and tobacco, except his bear-ſkins, which we did not chuſe to buy, and his ſables, which he durſt not ſell; for the czar reſerving that commodity for himſelf, thoſe in any part of his dominions who ſell it without a licence from him are ſeverely puniſhed. Officers are appointed to take theſe furrs of ſuch as have them, they have warehouſes in ſeveral places of the empire, and are the only perſons permitted to trade in that merchandize.

Having dealt with the Borandian gentleman for all the furrs he had to ſell, he ſent two of his ſervants about the village to tell the inhabitants, that if they would bring their ſkins to his houſe, they might have brandy and tobacco for them, as their maſter had already had for his. The Borandians of Vitzora were glad to hear of ſo good a market, they immediately brought us all their furrs, and we bought in this place above 1500 ſkins of all ſorts, except ſables; when our cargo becoming too bulky to be carried in a ſledge, we deſired our landlord to do us the favour to lend us his bark, and ſome of his ſervants to go in it with one of our ſeamen, who was a good ſailor, to carry the furrs aboard our ſhip, which lay at above a hundred leagues diſtance; for the ſailor and the Borandian ſervants who were uſed to the coaſts might eaſily manage that ſmall veſſel and convey our merchandize to our companions. He readily agreed to this requeſt, and we paid him for the uſe of his bark in tabacco and brandy.

This bark was built in the form of a gondola, it being broad in the middle and ſharp at each end. It

was entirely of wood joined with pegs, without ſo much as a nail in it, or the leaſt bit of iron. In the middle it had a fir-tree maſt, to which was faſtened a ſquare piece of coarſe cloth made of the rind of a tree, which ſerved for a ſail; the cordage was made of the ſame meterials, and the two anchors were formed of a very heavy kind of wood. When they were about to put to ſea he privately ſhewed us thirty pair of ſable ſkins, which we bought with ready money, ſlipt them on board, and the veſſel put off immediately. This, however, was running a dangerous riſk, for had there been any ſearchers at hand, he would not only have been corporally puniſhed; but alſo he and his whole family ſent as ſlaves into Siberia.

The bark being out of ſight, our ſupercargo and accountants ſat down to drink with the Borandian gentleman, while the two ſeamen and I walked out to take a view of the place, the ſituation of which was very pleaſant, having two mountains on each ſide of it, almoſt a league in height. All the houſes were built and artfully covered with fiſh bones, and the crannies every where ſtopped up with moſs, as cloſe as the caulking of a ſhip, and in ſome places that where moſt expoſed to the wind, were covered with turf very neatly laid. The doors, like thoſe we had ſeen in other parts of the country, were built like the mouths of ovens, and at the top of the houſes were a kind of lattices to admit the light. The inhabitants were very ſhort and ſwarthy, with flat noſes and diſagreeable perſons. All the women and children appeared induſtrious, for we found them buſily employed, ſome making fiſhing nets of the rind of trees, others ſails, which looked like fine mats, their needles being formed of fiſh bones. Others were employed with knives, and others again with hatchets, in different kinds of buſineſs.

As we had not yet diſpoſed of half our commodities, and were in a country abounding with furrs, we at

our return to our lodgings, conſulted with our ſupercargo and accountants, when it was agreed our commiſſion for traffic and diſcovery was very extenſive, we would proceed as long as we found the trade good, and our caſh, brandy, and tobacco held out. Having taken this reſolution, we ſent our guides back with the rein-deer and ſledges, and with letters to our captains to inform them of our ſucceſs and reſolution; and then, by the aſſiſtance of our hoſt at Vitzora, hired a bark to carry us to Petzora, the capital of a principality of the ſame name, on the north coaſt of the Muſcovite ſea; our landlord was ſo kind as to embark with us, and by the help of an eaſterly wind, we coaſted along the ſhore, and in fifteen hours reached Petzora.

On our arrival at Petzora, we waited upon the collector of the cuſtoms, who there aſſumes the title of governor, and lives at the caſtle. He was dreſſed after the manner of his country, in a robe of violet coloured cloth, and entertained us with ſome excellent metheglin, which was as racy as ſack, after which we had brandy and gingerbread, the common collation all over Muſcovy. As we knew that he had the care of the czar's ſables, we aſked him to ſell us ſome, and on his deſiring to know how many we wanted, we told him we would take all he had, if he would let us have them a pennyworth. Upon this he conducted us to the ware-houſe, where there were five zimmers, each zimmer being fifty pair, among which there were two zimmers as black as jet, and the fineſt I ever ſaw, for which we paid him five hundred ducats, and the other three zimmers we purchaſed for eight hundred crowns or four hundred ducats. Having paid him his money, he gave us a noble entertainment of roaſted wild fowl, young rein-deer veniſon, which is very good meat, and freſh fiſh; two boats having at our firſt arrival been ordered out to catch

ſome for our entertainment. After this meal, we ſat eight hours drinking brandy and metheglin, the fumes of which would much ſooner have got into my head, had I not every now and then eat a Muſcovite biſcuit, which is moſt excellent bread. At length, however, becoming intoxicated, the governor and his gueſts all lay down on white bear ſkins, for he had no beds, when having ſlept ſix or ſeven hours, we aroſe, and the governor immediately preſented us with a bumper of brandy.

After breakfaſt, being deſirous of going through the town, in order to try whether we could carry on any trade with the inhabitants, the governor ordered one of his officers to accompany us, and we ſoon bought of ſeveral people 2000 grey ſquirrel ſkins, four dozen of ermines, 500 fox ſkins, the greateſt part of which were as white as ſnow, 120 white wolf ſkins, and 200 martens of a greyiſh colour. All which we purchaſed for four hundred ducats, half of which we obliged them to take in copper money, becauſe it incumbered us, and the other half in gold and ſilver. We then returned to the caſtle, whither we ſent our merchandize, and there packed it up in bales, covered with the ſame ſort of ſtuff as the ſails of the bark. Having thus taken care of our goods, it was reſolved that one of our accountants ſhould return with them to the ſhips, for which purpoſe we deſired the governor to furniſh us with a bark, to which he agreed. We alſo hired three Borandians to aſſiſt the accountant in his voyage, the governor paſſing his word for them, that they ſhould be truſty and do us no wrong. For the hire of the bark, and the wages of the Borandians, we paid him ten ducats more, and gave the Borandians ſome pieces of tobacco, the governor promiſing to ſatisfy them for their trouble, when they came back.

This veſſel having ſet ſail, we fell to drinking again, when the quantity drank by the gentleman

of Vitzora was quite ſurpriſing; but having continued drinking four hours together, we compoſed ourſelves to reſt on bears ſkins, as before.

The next morning our ſupercargo deſired the governor, to let us have ſome rein deer, to carry us into Siberia, upon which he furniſhed us with ſeven, and the ſame number of ſledges, one for our ſupercargo, one for our accountant, one for myſelf, two for our two ſeamen, one for our guide, and the other for our tobacco and brandy. He alſo ſupplied us with proviſions, that were to laſt till our arrival at Papinowgorod, a city in the province of Petzora, on the borders of Siberia. Our factor having taken the money he had left, and the ſeven rein deer being put to the ſeven ſledges, the governor ordered another to be got ready, for one of his domeſtics, whom he directed to wait upon us ſeven leagues of our way, till we arrived at a village, from whence he was to take back our rein-deer, for all which he was to have no more than four ducats. But he would not let us go without our drinking five or ſix glaſſes at parting.

Having returned our hearty thanks to the governor and the gentleman of Vitzora, for their many civilities, we got into our ſledges, and travelled four hours through intricate unbeaten ways, without ſeeing any living creature, till at laſt we met four white bears of an enormous ſize, which croſſed our way, and ſeeing us fled into a wood. In about two hours after we arrived at a village, conſiſting of ſeven or eight cottages; but the inhabitants being all gone to hunt, we alighted to refreſh ourſelves on the proviſions we had brought with us. In the mean time five or ſix men with their wives and children returned from hunting, bringing with them ſix bear ſkins, four wolf ſkins, a couple of ermines, and eight ſables. They were ſurprized to ſee us there, and would have fled had not the governor of Petzora's ſervant aſſured them that we were friend

and merchants bound for Papinowgorod, when coming up to us, they viewed us narrowly, being amazed at ſeeing ſo many ſtrangers in ſo unfrequented a place. They were aſtoniſhed at our dreſs, our looks, and ſhape, and at our ſpeaking a language ſo different from theirs, which to them was quite unintelligible. However, by the aſſiſtance of our interpreter, we bought all the ſkins they dared to ſell us, and they lent us rein-deer and ſledges to carry us to the mouth of the river Papinowgorod.

We now left the river Petzora, the coaſt of which we had followed ſome time, and proceeded towards that of Papinowgorod, through almoſt impaſſible ways, over high mountains, and through woods and foreſts for three hours; put at length on our approaching a thick wood, we obſerved five men in white bear's ſkin long coats, made after the Muſcovite faſhion, each of whom had a gun on his ſhoulder, a pouch on one ſide, and a knife and ſheath on the other. As they made up towards us, our guides ſtopped their rein deer, when the five men being near enough to be heard, one of them perceiving that we were ſtrangers bade us good-morrow in the German tongue, wiſhing that they were as free as we were. Our ſupercargo being a native of Lower Saxony, was attracted by the ſound of his own language, and aſked him what countryman he was, when entering into converſation, ſeveral things were ſtarted, by which they underſtood that they had been formerly acquainted. Upon which the ſupercargo alighted out of his ſledge, embraced him and aſked how he came there, to which he replied, that he had been baniſhed for hunting ſables, a very capital offence, for which ſome are ſent into exile for ten years, ſome for ſix, and ſome for three.

While they were diſcourſing, I had time to look at the other four, when I imagined that I had ſome knowledge of one of them; but could not recollect

who he was, and the more I looked at him, the more firmly was I perſuaded that I had ſeen him before, and therefore could not forbear getting out of the ſledge to ſatisfy my curioſity; but I no ſooner ſet my foot on the ground, than the man, who remembered me, better than I did him, ran to me and embraced me, aſking in French, whence I came, and where I was going. This increaſed my ſurpriſe, ſince I could not yet call to mind who he was, for he was ſtrangely altered by his habit, by the length of his beard, and his head being bald; he was beſides reduced almoſt to a ſkeleton. Finding that I could not recollect him, he told me his name, and that he had often drank with me at Stockholm. Upon this I immediately recollected, that he was a perſon to whom I had been very much obliged, and had received many civilities from him in Sweden. He was born in Lorrain, was a gentleman by birth, and a lieutenant-colonel of regiment of Muſcovite horſe. He had endeavoured to perſuade me to go with him to Moſcow, by offering to procure me an honourable and profitable poſt; but I declined accepting his propoſal. When I compared the fine appearance he made at that time, the reſpect with which he was treated, as well on account of his eſtate, as the place he enjoyed, and his bearing the character of a man of honour and bravery, with the miſerable condition to which I now ſaw him reduced, I could not help being afflicted; I embraced him with extraordinary affection and tenderneſs, and aſking the cauſe of his diſgrace, he replied, that the Czar ſuſpecting that he had not been ſo zealous in his ſervice as he ought to have been, had baniſhed him to Siberia for three years, where he endured miſeries that are not to be expreſſed, he being expoſed to the greateſt dangers in hunting wild beaſts for his ſubſiſtence, to the miſeries of hunger and the rigour of the ſeaſons, which he and his companions were forced to endure, nobody daring to afford them any relief. He ad-

ded, that they were almoſt every day attacked by wild beaſts, which they met in herds ſeeking for paſture, and that they frequently found great difficulty in defending themſelves; that beſides they were condemned to ſupply the Czar's officers with a certain number of ſables, under the penalty of being ſeverely laſhed with a whip of leathern thongs, on their naked backs, till they were covered with blood.

One of the others had been receiver-general of the czar's revenues in one of the provinces, another had been a major general, and the fifth a man of note. They all joined in deploring their misfortunes, exclaimed loudly againſt the Czar, and declared that when once their time of exile was expired, they would get far enough out of his power.

We now ſat down with them on the moſs, took out the beſt proviſions we had, and deſired them to partake with us; we even offered them our aſſiſtance to facilitate their eſcape; but they told us it was impracticable, they being known to all the governors of the forts and places through which they and we muſt neceſſarily paſs, and in caſe they ſhould be taken both they and we would be put to a moſt cruel death. This increaſed our concern for theſe unfortunate gentlemen, and we all ſhed tears at the ſight of what they ſuffered, and the ideas of what they were ſtill to endure. We could not think of parting immediately with perſons in ſuch a diſconſolate ſtate, ſome of whom we had known in better days; we therefore told them, our trade was not in ſuch haſte as to prevent our ſpending a day or two with men in their unhappy circumſtances, whom we equally loved and eſteemed. They received this propoſal with great joy, told us they had five little huts which they had built in the neighbouring wood, and if we would be ſo kind as to go thither with them, they ſhould be infinitely obliged to us, and all the ſkins they had ſhould be at our ſervice, except the ſables, which

they were forced to reſerve for the Czar; and added, that the remembrance of the happy hours they ſhould ſpend with us in their ſolitude, would make many future months glide on the more ſweetly. We therefore ordered our guide to unharneſs the rein deer, and to convey our goods into the huts the gentlemen had erected to defend them from the weather.

We found, on approaching theſe huts, that neceſſity had rendered theſe unhappy men ingenious. They were built of fir, higher than any we had ſeen in our travels; there were two or three rooms in each of them, and lattices to let in the light at the ſides. They were each ſhaded by trees, and ſo artfully paved with fiſh bones, that the floors looked as if they were inlaid with ivory. To ſecure themſelves from the wild beaſts, they had dug a trench round theſe buildings, and palliſaded the inſide of it with ſtrong poſts, and pieces of wood nailed acroſs them, on the top of which were ſpikes of fiſh bones. Thus when their gate was ſhut, they were as ſecure as in a fortified place. They had within all ſorts of hunting and fiſhing tackle, beſides a good ſtore of ſalted rein deer veniſon, biſcuit and metheglin.

While the reſt of the company ſat down to drinking, my friend and I withdrew to his hut to converſe together. We entered into diſcourſe on his adventures; he told me he intended to return home after his time of exile ſhould be expired, and gave me his direction in Lorrain. Our converſation turned partly on our former acquaintance, and partly on the wildneſs of the country, and the barbarity of its inhabitants.

When my friend and I had tired ourſelves with talking, we laid down upon bear ſkins, as our companions alſo did when wearied with drinking, and ſlept ſound till the next morning.

We aroſe early, and at the deſire of the five baniſhed gentlemen, took each of us a gun, and went with them into the woods to examine their ſnares, to

ſee what prey was caught in thoſe they had laid the night before. We killed among us ten or twelve white foxes, and half a dozen grey martens, but met with none of the larger game; and as we reſolved to purſue our journey in the afternoon, we did not chuſe to loſe our time in hunting. We therefore ſoon returned to the huts, and both we and our hoſts, furniſhing proviſions, refreſhed ourſelves as well as could be expected in ſo wretched a place. After we had drank plentifully, the gentlemen forced us to take ſeven bear ſkins, ten white fox ſkins, two pair of ermines, and eight wolf ſkins, for which they would take no money. However, we with difficulty prevailed on them to accept ſome brandy, tobacco and cloth, which we took care ſhould exceed in value the commodities they had given us. We wept reciprocally at parting, wiſhing them patience to endure their ſufferings, and a happy deliverance out of them; and having mounted our ſledges, continued our travels with the uſual expedition.

Having proceeded three hours without ſeeing any habitation, we diſcoverd five or ſix huts together, in which were about a dozen perſons, from whom we bought all their ſkins. We now following the courſe of the river Petzora, frequently met with ſmall villages, in ſome of which we found inhabitants, and in others none; but whenever we met with any body to trade with us, we brought their furrs either with money or brandy.

We at length reached a large ridge of mountains, that are almoſt always covered with ſnow, and ſo barren, that neither man nor beaſt can live upon them. On both ſides of theſe mountains were vaſt numbers of white bears and wolves, which put us in fear of our lives; we being under continual apprehenſions of their falling upon us, though perhaps theſe animals were as much terrified at us, as we at them; for they fled before us, ſome on one hand and ſome on the other, frightened perhaps at the glitter-

ing of our arms. We were twelve hours in croſſing the mountains, over which our cattle had much ado to draw us; but we at laſt reached the deſcent, and arrived at a village in Siberia, where the people had linen ſhirts, cloſe buſkins, and garments of bear ſkins, with the hair outwards; but they appeared to be leſs barbarous than thoſe with whom we had lately converſed. They received us very civilly, aſking whence we came, and whither we were going: having reſolved their queſtions, we bought all their ſkins for ready money, feaſted with them on dried bears and wolf's fleſh, rice cakes, and brandy; and then ſlept upon bear ſkins, in houſes built after the manner of the Laplanders.

We no ſooner awaked than we mounted our ſledges, and ſet forward for Papinowgorod which we reached in about twenty hours. The governor hearing of our arrival, ſent for us to come to his caſtle, to inquire into our country and buſineſs. Upon which we immediately waited on him, and our accountants, who underſtood the Muſcovite language, anſwered all his queſtions to his ſatisfaction. Being informed that we were Daniſh merchants who travelled ſo far to buy furrs, he treated us in a very friendly manner; and as a mark of reſpect, ſent for his wife to entertain us, upon which ſhe came with a bottle of brandy in one hand, and a ſilver cup in the other, followed by a maid ſervant with a plate of ginger-bread. We ſaluted her according to the cuſtom of the country, by bowing our heads, when untying the knot of her ſhift ſleeves, ſhe let it fall to the ground, and the ſupercargo taking it up, we each of us kiſſed it. She then furled it up again with her left hand, and taking the bottle and cup, which ſhe had ſet down to perform this ceremoney, gave each of us a bumper of brandy and a piece of ginger-bread, ſtanding all the while near her huſband at the end of the table. She then withdrew, and the governor regaled us with an excellent ſupper.

This entertainment being over, we were conducted to lodgings prepared for us in the caſtle, and conſidering the country, lay in very good beds. Having ſlept about ſeven hours we aroſe, of which the governor being informed by one of his ſervants, got up and came to ſee us, bringing a bottle of brandy with him, and one of his domeſtics having another, filled a large cup for a morning's draught. We each of us drank one, and then the governor aſking if we would buy his ſkins, our ſupercargo ſaid that he would if he liked them, and could agree on the price. His furrs were extremely well choſen, and though they were valued much higher than any we had met with in all our travels, they were the beſt worth our money. Theſe being bought and paid for, he ordered one of his men to call ſome of the inhabitants, who had a quantity to ſell; and while our ſupercargo was dealing with the governor and his neighbours, I took a turn about the town.

Papinowgorod is commodiouſly ſituated in a ſmall plain, in the midſt of a fruitful country, ſurrounded with high mountains; and near it runs a large river well ſtocked with fiſh. The houſes are low, and meanly built of wood, with the chinks ſtopped with moſs, and the ſtreets are paved with timber laid cloſe together. The people of faſhion wear a long cloth coat, which reaches down to their toes, with very cloſe ſleeves of another colour, under which they have breeches and ſtockings of the ſame cloth. Their ſhoes, or rather boots, are of blue, red or yellow leather, buttoned on the top; and upon their heads they wear cloth caps lined, and bordered with ermine, ſable, or black fox ſkins. The women are fair, beautiful, and ſomewhat fat; their hair is of a light cheſnut colour, hanging down to their waiſt, and their head-dreſs is an oval cap; their upper garment like the men's, hangs down to the feet, and is made of red, blue, or violet coloured cloth, and is lined with white fox ſkin or ſable. They have round their

waiſts a broad girdle adorned with pearls, and their ſhifts are made of fine calico, with ſleeves all ruffled up from the wriſt to the ſhoulders, ſome of which are five ells long; and this bundle prevents their uſing the arms of their robes, which therefore hang uſeleſs, and are only pinned on. On their feet they have ſhoes made of Ruſſia leather.

The people of Siberia are grave, robuſt, ſwift, and very dexterous at ſhooting with the croſs bow; but they are ignorant, churliſh, and jealous of their wives, whom they generally lock up; and even if they do not, none of them dare quit their rooms without their huſbands leave. The religion of this province is called Nicholation. Their judicial proceedings are terminated with great expedition; for all their courts of juſtice are courts of equity. There are no petty foggers either here or in Ruſſia, who, under the pretence of relieving the innocent and ſuccouring the diſtreſſed, rob the poor, and inrich themſelves with the ſpoils of the widow and the fatherleſs. Falſe witneſſes are moſt ſeverely puniſhed, as are alſo traitors and robbers; murderers are proſecuted by the friends of the deceaſed, and adultery in either ſex is puniſhed by ſtoning the guilty to death.

When we had bought up all the furrs we liked at Papinowgorod, we found we had enough to load a ſledge and a half; and having ſtill ſome tobacco and about five thouſand ducats left, our ſupercargo reſolved to proceed farther, in order to purchaſe more for us, and to return to our ſhips through Samojedia. As our brandy fell ſhort, we bought a ſupply of the beſt the governor had; we agreed with him for proviſions ſufficient to laſt us twelve days, and for rein deer to carry us to the end of our journey. When we had concluded all our dealings with him, and paid our money, we were forced to have a drunken-bout at parting, without which there is no getting away. We eat and drank for ten hours to-

gether, and then took our reſt for eight more: after which we aroſe, harneſſed our rein-deer, loaded our ſledges with our merchandize and proviſions, mounted them, and took leave of the governor.

We proceeded ſeventeen hours, all the way buying up what furrs we could find of the Siberians; and having in ſix hours more croſſed the Riphean mountains, we entered Samojedia, a deſolate mountainous country, full of juniper trees, pines, and firs. It abounds in moſs as well as ſnow; and we every moment, to our no ſmall terror, met white bears, wolves and foxes.

On our aſcending mount Stolphen, whence ariſes the river Borſagatz, we came to eight or nine houſes, where we ſtopped, in order to reſt ourſelves and our cattle, and exchanged with the inhabitants brandy for white and black wolf and fox ſkins, caſtor and otter ſkins. They had ſeveral dozen of ſables, which they would not ſell upon any terms, though they were aſſured by our Borandian guide that there was no manner of danger, we being traders who were going to our ſhips, and could not be diſcovered before we reached the coaſt, becauſe we were not to paſs through any place where there were officers impowered to ſearch for prohibited goods. All our arguments had, however, no effect, till we had drank them down; when our brandy rendering them courageous, they brought out their ſables, and ſold us the beſt and greateſt quantity we had picked up in our whole journey.

We ſtaid to reſt ourſelves in one of the chief huts of the village: the maſter of the houſe, with his wife and children, and we his viſitors lying all together on bear ſkins. Having ſlept four or five hours, I was awakened by the noiſe made by our hoſt to raiſe his family, all of whom went out, when having the curioſity to follow them at a litle diſtance, I ob-

ſerved them fall down on their knees behind the cottage, lifting up their hands and eyes to adore the ſun.

The people of Samojedia are ſhorter and thicker than either the Laplanders or the Borandians. They have large heads, their faces and noſes are flat, they are of a ſwarthy complexion, and have ſcarcely any hair. They wear a round fur cap, and a white bear's ſkin coat, that reaches down to their knees, and is faſtened round the waiſt with a girdle four inches broad; they alſo wear breeches, ſhoes and ſtockings, made of the ſame ſkin with the hair outwards, and inſtead of a cloak, they hang a black bear's ſkin over their ſhoulders, the feet dangling at the four corners; this ſkin is placed more on the left ſide than on the right, to leave their right arm at liberty in the management of their bows and arrows, and upon this ſkin they tie their quiver. They alſo wear upon their feet a kind of ſkates two feet long, with which they ſlide with prodigious ſwiftneſs over the ſnow, that always lies on the mountains.

The Samojedian women, have more diſagreeable perſons than thoſe of the men. They are capable of enduring great hardſhips, and take care to breed up their children in uſing their bows with great dexterity. They are dreſſed like the men, only their upper garment is a little longer, and all the difference in their head dreſs is, that the women have a lock of twiſted hair, hanging down on their ſhoulders, at the end of which is a knot, formed of a long ſlip taken from the bark of a tree, which hangs down as low as their heels, and this is all their finery. They hunt as well as the men, and are in the ſame manner armed with bows and arrows. The huſbands are true to their wives, and the wives to their huſbands: and if either man or woman is found guilty of adultery, the criminal is immediately ſtoned to death.

Having traverſed Samojedia, and exchanged away our money and goods for ſkins, we returned, and in twelve days after our departure from Pappinowgorod, reached the coaſt of Borandia, without meeting with any adventure worth notice. Upon that coaſt our ſhips had waited for us, at an appointed place, where we put all our merchandize on board, paid off our Borandian guide, and embarked.

Having weighed anchor, we ſailed from the coaſt of Borandia with a fair wind, and the next day in the afternoon, caſt anchor near the coaſt of Zembla, when we obſerved upon the ſhore, about thirty perſons with quivers on their backs, worſhipping on their knees the ſetting ſun. Our maſter and ſupercargo immediately conſulted what courſe it would be proper for us to take to come at the ſpeech of them. They thought them more wild than any ſavages they had yet ſeen, and thinking it would be difficult to perſuade them to deal with us, it was reſolved to ſend out three long boats with ten men well armed in each, that they might be able to defend themſelves, in caſe they ſhould be attacked. I was one of the number diſpatched upon this ſervice; but when we were about a quarter of a mile from the land, the ſavages aroſe from their knees, diſcharging their arrows at us, and then fled with ſurpriſing ſwiftneſs, but being at a great diſtance when they let fly at us, they did not do us the leaſt harm.

We no ſooner reached the ſhore than we landed, and purſued them to the place whither we thought they had fled, in hopes of making ſome of them our priſoners; but we found it impoſſible, though we followed them till we approached ſome mountains covered with ſnow. However, we continued to advance farther into the country, till we came to a riſing ground, upon which was erected a piece of wood very wretchedly cut into the figure of a man, and

before it two Zemblians on their knees, with their arms lying by them. They were worſhipping this idol, who was called Fetizo, as the others on ſhore had been adoring the ſun: but the moment they beheld us they fled into an adjoining wood of firs, and as night approached, we thought it would be in vain to purſue them, and therefore returned to the ſhips.

From thence we ſteered towards the ſtreights of Weygatz, to catch ſea horſes, and having proceeded about ſix leagues, kept near ſhore, and put out our long-boats, with eight harpooners in each beſides the rowers. We were three days without catching any thing: but at laſt obſerved two great fiſh approaching us, one of which had a large horn in his forehead, when the boats, coming near, the harpoons were thrown at him on all ſides; and the ropes to which they were faſtened let looſe, after which the men haſtily retired, to be out of his reach while he was ſtruggling. At laſt the fiſh ſwimming above the water, which was a proof of his weakneſs, the men in the boats drew him to them by the ropes faſtened to the harpoons, and then cutting off his head, threw the body into the ſea: it being neither fit for food nor oil. This was a ſea-horſe, which is taken only for the ſake of his teeth and horn, the former being more valuable than thoſe of the elephant, becauſe they are whiter and not ſo apt to turn yellow. The horn of this ſea horſe was ten feet long, and very heavy; from the root, which was as thick as a man's ſhoulder, it gradually decreaſed, wreathing handſomely, till it ended in a ſharp point. One of the boats coming too cloſe to the other fiſh, in order to make ſure of it, and not retreating with ſufficient ſpeed, was unhappily overturned by his tail, with which he laſhed the boat with prodigious fury, on his feeling the harpoon; by this means two of the men were drowned, notwithſtanding which the fiſh was taken; but though this was no recom-

pence for the leſs of our ſailors, yet, it was a good prize, the teeth being larger and whiter than the former.

We were four days cruiſing about before we met with any more, and were preparing to change our ſtation, when we perceived four of the ſame fiſh, that ſeemed larger than thoſe we had caught; three of them we took, but none of them had any horn. Twelve hours after we diſcovered five more, but three of them eſcaped, one of which had a horn. Two hours after we eſpied three more, one of which we took, each of whoſe great teeth weighed twenty-nine pounds. Two days after we caught five more, among which was one with a horn, like that of the firſt we caught, but it was neither ſo heavy nor ſo large, it being ſcarce ſeven feet long.

We ſtaid there five days longer; and perceiving no more fiſh, took the advantage of a north-north-eaſt wind to ſail towards Weygatz, in hopes of paſſing thoſe ſtreights, which if practicable, would ſhorten the paſſage to the Eaſt-Indies by three fourths. We purſued our courſe pretty well for 36 leagues; but were unable to proceed any farther on account of the large pieces of ice that oppoſed our paſſage, and thoſe mountains covered with ſnow which lie at the mouth of the Frozen Sea, and are known by the name of the Pater-noſters. Hence theſe ſtreights have received the name of Weygatz, which ſignifies impaſſable.

We now came to an anchor on the eaſtern coaſt of Zembla, when one of the ſeamen landing, a bear came behind him and ſtruck him down with his paw, and had we not happily ſeen it, and ſhot the bear dead on the ſpot, he would certainly have been devoured. This accident deterred the reſt of the mariners from venturing on land.

Shortly after three bears ſwam to the ſides of the ſhips, and ſtrove to come on board; but though we cut off the paws of one of them with our hatchets,

and ſhot the other with a muſket, the third, while we were diſpatching theſe, mounted the ſide of the ſhips and got upon deck, when a ſailor who was near cried out, for the bear was juſt at his heels; but we all took up the firſt offenſive weapons that came to hand, as oars and pieces of timber, with which we knocked him down and diſpatched him, while others ſhot at and killed two others that were ſwimming towards us. This ſlaughter we thought would have hindered any more attempting to board us, but we were miſtaken; for about four or five hours afterwards, ten or twelve more came as far towards us on the ice as they could, and then took to the water making directly for the ſhips, when we uſed our arms ſo ſucceſsfully that not one of them eſcaped. However, many others ſtill approaching from the high mountains, and being unwilling to continue expoſed to ſuch hourly attacks, we weighed and ſtood over to the weſt coaſt of Zembla, where we firſt anchored, and got clear of the ſtreights of Weygatz, with an eaſterly wind, in fifteen hours; but not without great danger of running upon the rocks of ice that lay in our way.

There is an iſland at the mouth of this ſtreight which appeared very green, and is covered with fir and juniper trees. Some of the ſailors going on ſhore ſaw a bird ſo large as to be ſcarcely able to fly, and giving at their return an account of what they had ſeen, I deſired leave to land with about forty men to hunt theſe birds and make diſcoveries, which being granted, we killed about ſixty of them, ſome of which we ſhot, and others we knocked down with clubs, and afterwards carried them on board. Theſe birds, which are not much taller than ſwans, though a great deal larger, are called penguins. They have a ſharp beak, under which begins a gullet, that reaches down to their breaſt in the form of an urinal, only it is larger, and in this bag they ſtore their proviſions, which they take out to eat as they

have occaſion. They are of a brown colour, and have webbed feet like a gooſe Their fleſh is palatable, and taſtes like that of a wild duck, only it is fatter. We eat heartily of it, and had not ſuch a feaſt in all our voyage; but before we dreſſed theſe penguins, we were obliged to take off the ſkin, which is very tough.

Having ſtaid at this iſland two days, we ſailed with a ſouth eaſt wind; and in about thirty hours arrived at a cape, near which we again found the Zemblians worſhipping the ſun.

As his Daniſh majeſty was very deſirous of having a perfect account of the riches and nature of Zembla; and for the more eaſy acquiring of that knowledge, had ordered our officers to bring off ſome of the natives, we reſolved, if poſſible, to put this order in execution; and thirty perſons, of whom I was one, were ordered to land in the long boat; but we had ſcarcely got over the ſhip's ſide before we diſcovered a Zemblian in his boat about half a league off land, who ſeeing us make towards him, rowed ſo faſt that it was impoſſible to get up with him, and as ſoon as he ſet his foot on ſhore, throwing his boat upon his ſhoulder, ran ſo ſwiftly, that we perceived we ſhould find it very difficult to overtake him, nor did he ſeem encumbered either with his boat or a dart he had in his hand. We however, landed and purſued him towards a hill which we ſaw him mount, and he was quickly out of ſight. We therefore gave over all thoughts of taking him, but as we were rowing back to our ſhips we perceived two Zemblians farther out at ſea, and they obſerving us at the ſame time, rowed towards the promontories and rocks on the coaſt to hide themſelves; but we plied our oars ſo briſkly, that we ſurrounded them in four boats as they were rowing with all their ſtrength towards a rock, when finding no poſſibility of making their eſcape, they ſet up a howling that was the moſt hideous I had ever heard.

They were a man and women dreſſed in clothes made of the ſkin of the ſea calf, with the hair outwards, and their waiſtcoats were formed of two ſkins joined together, the tails dangling, the one before and the other behind, almoſt as low as their knees. Their drawers were very ſtrait. The man ſeemed to be about fifty years of age, and though he had no hair on his head, he had a round beard of a cheſnut colour. The woman, who ſeemed to be about thirty, had her ears and noſe bored, and pendants of blue ſtones hanging at them; her hair was twiſted, and hung on her ſhoulders. Their features were extremely diſagreeable, and they were both of them ſhorter and ſquatter than either the Laplanders, Samojedians, Borandians, or Siberians. They had ſqueaking voices, and ſtinking breaths; the latter was probably cauſed by their eating of fleſh without ſalt, or fiſh with train oil.

We ſoon took them into one of the boats, and towed that in which we found them, by faſtening it to one of our own boats. It was made of the rib bones of fiſhes, very artfully joined, and neatly covered with fiſh ſkins ſewed together. It was ſixteen feet in length, and two feet and a half broad. They were ſhut up in it as high as their waiſts, by having a fiſh ſkin drawn over it, with two holes that fitted their waiſts; ſo that a drop of water could not get into it. They therefore expoſed themſelves in the fouleſt weather, to all the dangers of the ſea; without the leaſt fear of foundering. But though we made all the friendly ſigns we could to them, in order to induce them to let us know their habitations, it was impoſſible for us to learn any thing from them*.

* It evidently appears that thoſe people are of the ſame race with the Eſkimaux of Hudſon's Bay. See Ellis's Voyage to Hudſon's Bay, Vol. IV. page 231.

We now reſolved to try whether we could not get ſome other of theſe people into our power who were leſs ſtupid and more communicative. Upon which thirty of us landed again, taking ſeveral days proviſions with us, and went in two companies well armed about a hundred yards diſtance from each other, and having hid ourſelves in caverns under the rocks, poſted centinels in proper places to diſcover if any ſavages approached, whom we intended to ſeize, and to force them to ſhew us their habitations. We were two days without ſeeing any of the natives; but at laſt one of our centinels gave us notice that two of them were deſcending a hill towards the ſea ſide, on which we divided ourſelves into companies at proper diſtances, and the poor Zemblians ſoon entered the ſnare, without ſuſpecting any treachery, till one of our companions diſcharging his fuzee, we all made our appearance, and the ſavages finding it impoſſible to fly, were eaſily taken. Their garments were of penguins ſkins with the feathers outwards. They had each a pair of ſtrait breeches which reached to their knees, a kind of waiſtcoat, the ſleeves of which reached only to their elbows, the reſt of their arms being naked The feathers were picked from their waiſtcoats before and behind. They had caps in the form of a ſugar loaf, and ſtockings made of the ſkin of a ſea-calf with the hair outwards. Though their dreſſes were the ſame, yet we ſoon perceived that one of them was a man, and the other a woman. The man ſeemed to be about twenty-four years of age; his face was very broad, his noſe flat, and his complexion ſwarthy. He had neither beard on his chin, nor hair on his head; at his back hung a quiver filled with arrows; on his ſhoulder he carried an axe, and in his other hand held a bow. The woman ſeemed to be about twenty, and held a dart in her hand; her hair hung down in two twiſted

locks on each ſhoulder; ſhe had blue ſtreaks on her forehead and chin, and her ears and noſtrils had holes bored in them, in which were fiſh bone rings, to which were faſtened blue ſtones, thoſe in her ears being as large as filberts, and thoſe in her noſe no bigger than peas.

We tried all the ways we could think of to oblige them to ſhew us where they dwelt, but without effect. They were as reſolute and ſullen as thoſe we had taken in the boat, and we carried them on board without making any farther diſcoveries. When we brought them to their fellow priſoners, we found that notwithſtanding their being ſo differently dreſſed, they knew each other. Theſe four Zemblians ſeemed the moſt deſpicable part of the human ſpecies I had ever ſeen. Their features were extremely diſagreeable, and when they walked they waddled like ducks. We could never make them eat any bread, ſalt meat, or fiſh, nor drink any beer; they being uſed to drink nothing but water; they ſometimes taſted our brandy, but had a great averſion to the ſmell of tobacco. The wood-work of their bows and darts was heavy, and of a red brown colour, but that of the arrows was much lighter and paler. Their needles, the point of their darts, arrows, and all their other ſharp inſtruments were made of fiſh bones.

The ſummer was now far advanced, it being the latter end of Auguſt, and the cold increaſing, we began to think of returning home, and therefore weighing, held on a ſouth-weſt courſe, but the wind ſhifting to the ſouthward, obliged us to make the coaſt of Greenland, where we dropped anchor, near a French and Dutch fleet employed in the whale fiſhery. The ſhips ſeldom lie far from the ſhore, for the whales, which are caught in the ſame manner as we took the ſea-horſes, are like them commonly found near the land. When they are caught they

are cut to pieces, and the blubber being taken out, is put into large kettles, and melted to oil in huts erected for that purpoſe along the ſea-ſhore. During our ſtay here, I ſaw one whale that yielded 350 pounds weight of good bone, which together with its oil, muſt have afforded a conſiderable profit. Our arrival in this place proved very fortunate for our Zemblian priſoners, who had for ſome time pined away for want of whale oil, they being able to eat nothing, unleſs it was ſoaked in it, and our ſtore was intirely exhauſted: but for their ſakes we here took in a freſh ſupply.

Having ſtaid two days on this coaſt, we took the advantage of a north-eaſt wind, and proceeded on our voyage, but being overtaken by a ſtorm, we ſteered to the coaſt of Iceland. On our approaching that iſland we heard a dreadful noiſe at land, like the firing of ſeveral pieces of ordnance, after which we ſaw flames iſſue in abundance from mount Hecla.

We found ſo many rocks on the coaſt, and the ſea was ſo extremely rough, that we were afraid of venturing within a league of the land; but we ſteered to cape Heri, under which we anchored in ſafety.

Soon after a ſtrong party of us landed at the village of Heri, whence we proceeded to Kirkebar, a large town, where we met with eight or nine Daniſh merchants, who were much ſurpriſed at ſeeing us there, and entertained us very cordially with diſhes of freſh meat, good bread, and excellent wine. From them we learned, that the day before the iſland had ſo terrible an earthquake, that they expected to be ſwallowed up alive,

Our captain, ſupercargo, and others of our company intimating to the chief merchant at Kirkebar, that they were deſirous of ſeeing whatever was worth notice in the iſland, he very obligingly ordered horſes to be got ready for all of us, that were willing to travel into the country, and I ſaying that I would make one of them, eight of us mounted, while

the reſt having leſs curioſity, choſe to ſtay and drink at this merchant's houſe. This gentleman gave us one of his ſervants, and two Icelanders to be our guides, and alſo furniſhed us with a horſe-load of proviſions. We travelled two days in rugged and unfrequented roads; when we found ourſelves about five miles from mount Hecla, and perceived the ground ſtrewed with aſhes and pumice ſtones, over which we paſſed to the foot of the mountain; the weather being now very ſerene and calm, and ſeeing no flames iſſue out of the volcano, we reſolved to go up to the top; but we being informed by our guides, that if we went farther, we ſhould be in danger of falling into pits, where we might be ſuffocated with the fumes, cauſed by the fire in the bowels of the earth, and that it would be impoſſible to pull us out, all our company except myſelf, declared againſt proceeding: but I told them, that if they would ſtay for me, I would go up alone, and they promiſing that they would, I alighted and prepared to aſcend the mountain, when one of the Daniſh merchants whom we met at Kirkebar, and who accompanied us out of curioſity, ſaid he would go along with me.

Having given our horſes to our guides, who ſtaid behind with the reſt of our company, we boldly ventured forwards, reſolving to reach the top of Hecla, and in a ſhort time we ſaw a large flight of crows and vultures, that had their neſts in the top of the mountain. When we had aſcended about half a league, we felt the ground ſhake under us, and heard a terrible noiſe in the bowels of the earth, which ſeemed ready to burſt open. At the ſame time there appeared on all ſides chinks, out of which iſſued bluiſh flames, that had a ſtrong ſuffocating ſmell of burning brimſtone. This made us turn back, for fear of being burnt to aſhes. But we had ſcarce proceeded thirty yards back before a black cloud of ſmoke aſcended out of the mountain, obſcured the light of the ſun, and covered us ſo thick that we

could not ſee each other. Our fears encreaſed every ſtep we took; for behind us came flames of fire, ſhowers of aſhes, and pumice ſtones that fell as thick as hail, and this dreadful ſtorm was attended with horrible noiſes. We beſides every moment expected that the earth would open and ſwallow us up, which added wings to our flight, and we ran as faſt as we were able, to eſcape the danger to which we had expoſed ourſelves by our idle curioſity; and, indeed our fears made us ſo nimble, that in a quarter of an hour, we got to the bottom of the mountain.

Our companions on ſeeing us come down ſo faſt, burſt into a fit of laughter, which was ſoon increaſed by their obſerving us to be as black as if we had been covered with ſoot; their mirth, however ſoon abated, for on our approaching them, we both dropt down ſpeechleſs. They immediately came to our aſſiſtance, and by rubbing our temples, noſtrils, and hands with vinegar, brought us to ourſelves, and then revived us with a cup of canary; upon which, recovering our ſtrength and ſpirits, we related what had happened, and they were rejoiced at our eſcape.

We now left the foot of the mountain in order to ſee two ſprings at ten or twelve miles diſtance from the mountain, one of which is always boiling, and the other ſo cold, that it is ſaid to turn every thing put into it into iron. When we had proceeded about a hundred yards from the foot of Mount Hecla, we found a pumice-ſtone as large as a hogſhead, which had been lately thrown out of the volcano; when our guides ſeeing us aſtoniſhed at its prodigious ſize, ſaid, they had ſeen ſeveral much bigger, which ten men could not ſtir; and that inſtead of flames, aſhes, and pumice-ſtones, the volcano ſometimes caſts up water, at others nothing but flames, and at others again, nothing but aſhes or ſtones.

After three hours riding we drew near to the ſprings, which are thirty yards diſtance from each other. We came firſt to the cold one, when putting in a ſmall cane I had in my hand, I was ſurprized on taking it out again to ſee the end which touched the bottom metamorphoſed into iron.* From thence we went to the boiling fountain, from which we ſaw a number of what appeared to be fowls of a red colour, and about the ſize of ducks, playing in the water; when being pleaſed with the novelty of the ſight, we ſtood for ſome time looking at them, but on our approaching nearer they dived to the bottom, but we had no ſooner left it, than they appeared again playing on the ſurface. Our guides informed us, that they always continue upon the water when nobody is in ſight, and conſtantly dive to the bottom as ſoon as they ſee any perſon approach.

From this ſpring we travelled to the ſea-ſide, within half a league of which we heard diſagreeable ſounds, that were not unlike the cries of perſons complaining. Our ignorant guides, who were natives of the country, would fain have perſuaded us, that they were the lamentations of the damned, who, when the devil had roaſted them in the flames of Hecla, cooled them by plunging them amongſt the ice on the coaſt; and that they were thus alternately tormented, by making them feel the extremes of heat and cold. But though we gave no credit to this Iceland tradition, we reſolved to ſee thoſe ſhoals of ice, which bound that part of the iſland and no other. Theſe we were told by our guides come upon the coaſt in June, and go away in September. On our arrival at the coaſt, we found that theſe imagi-

* The author's miſtake probably aroſe from the cane being incruſted with a ſtony concretion reſembling iron ruſt.

nary complaints were only occaſioned by the agitation of the ice and water driven violently againſt the rocks by the wind.

Having ſeen all that was worth obſervation, we returned to Kirkebar, where we arrived on the 16th of September, and having ſtaid a few hours in the town, went on board, when we found the governor of the iſland, accompanied by the biſhop of Scelt-holt, who hearing that we had been at Zembla, came to ſee our ſhips, and to diſcourſe with us.

As Iceland abounds in rich paſtures, it produces great plenty of all ſorts of cattle, and the beaſts that feed in theſe paſtures are ſo fond of an herb called caitophe, that the inhabitants are forced to prevent their eating too much of it, for fear they ſhould burſt themſelves; but though the fields look green and pleaſant, yet the north eaſt wind, which blows here with great violence, is ſo very cold, that no wheat, or any other grain fit to make bread, will grow there, for it either kills the feed, or the corn while it is green.

The Icelanders for the moſt part dwell in caverns hewn out of the rocks, and the reſt live in huts built after the manner of thoſe in Lapland, ſome with wood and others with fiſh bones, covered with turf; and both they and their cattle lie under the ſame roof. Their beds are compoſed of hay or ſtraw, upon which they lie in their clothes with ſkins upon them, and make but one bed for the whole family. But the men and women have very diſagreeable perſons; they are ſwarthy, and dreſſed in coats made of the ſkins of the ſea calf with the hair outwards, with no other linen than ſack cloth. They live by fiſhing, and are very naſty. The food of the poor is very coarſe, it conſiſting of a ſort of ſtock fiſh pounded with a ſtone, very bad butter and cheeſe, and no other drink but water, milk or whey; yet on this hard fare many of them are ſaid to live, without the

help of a phyſician, to a hundred and fifty years of age. Moſt of them pretend to witchcraft, and are ſaid to worſhip the devil under the name of Kobald, who it is pretended frequently appears to them under a human ſhape. They have alſo a kind of houſhold god cut out of a piece of wood with a knife, who is extremely hideous; this idol they adore privately, and hide it for fear of the Lutheran miniſters, who endeavour to inſtruct them in the principles of Chriſtianity.

Three days after our coming on board we took the opportunity of a north wind, and ſet ſail. We continued our courſe to the ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, and at length happily arrived at Copenhagen, where having ſaluted the caſtle, we dropt anchor, and went aſhore.

His majeſty being informed, on our entering the city, that we had brought ſome Zemblians with us, commanded us to bring them to court, which we immediately did, every perſon gazing at them as if they had been born in another world. The king himſelf admired the oddneſs of their dreſs, and the ſtrangeneſs of their figures. He ordered the ſteward of his houſhold to give directions for their being kept with care, well provided for and taught the Daniſh language, hoping he might then get ſomething out of them, relating to their country, that would be beneficial to his own. He commanded us to give him an account of the ſeveral places we had viſited, the manners of the people and their way of living: and having given his majeſty full ſatisfaction with reſpect to all he deſired to know, we went to wait upon our owners, in order to inform them of the markets we had met with, and what returns we had brought home, which proved highly to their advantage. Our ſhips were ordered up to Chriſtian Haven in order to be unladen, which was done in two days time, when one of the chief merchants of the company preſented the king in the

name of the reſt, with the two horns we had taken from the ſea-horſes; and his majeſty received them as rarities of ineſtimable value; and believing that they were really the horns of the unicorn, he gave orders for their being depoſited in the treaſury chamber, and in return promiſed to grant the company as many privileges as it was in the power of his prerogative to beſtow. The merchant who preſented the horns was rewarded with a chain of gold with his majeſty's picture hanging to it, and with a licence to trade cuſtom-free for a certain term of years.

THE

TRAVELS

OF

MONSIEUR MAUPERTUIS,

AND HIS ASSOCIATES OF THE ROYAL ACADEMY OF SCIENCES,

MADE

TO DETERMINE THE FIGURE OF THE EARTH AT THE POLAR CIRCLE.

IN ORDER to give a clear idea of this undertaking, it is neceſſary to obſerve, that the great Sir Iſaac Newton and Mr. Huygens had from different obſervations concluded that the earth was flatted at the poles; but upon meaſuring the whole area of the meridian that paſſes through France, and from other operations, it was concluded by ſeveral of the members of the academy of ſciences at Paris, that the terraqueous globe was prominent at the poles. Hence the members became divided in their ſentiments, and perplexed by their own enquiries, upon ſo important a ſubject, that was juſtly conſidered as having a real influence upon aſtronomy and navigation. To put an end to this diſpute, the French king reſolved that it ſhould be finally decided, and to the great joy of the academy, an order was diſ-

patched from court for a certain number of the members to go and meaſure the firſt degree of the meridian at the equator. Theſe, ſays Monſ. Maupertuis, ſet out a whole year before us. The reſt were commiſſioned northward to meaſure the remoteſt degree they could reach. And the ſame alacrity, the ſame zeal to ſerve their country appeared in thoſe who were to endure the rage of the equator ſuns, and thoſe that were to freeze beneath the polar circle, The travels in the north were wrote, as hath been already hinted, by Monſ. Maupertuis, and we ſhall give them in his manner.

The company deſtined for the north, ſays he, was compoſed of four academicians, Meſſ. Clairaut, Camus, Le Monnier, and myſelf; the Abbe Outhier, and M. Celſius the celebrated profeſſor of aſtronomy at Upſal, alſo aſſiſted at all our operations, and their abilities and advice were of ſingular uſe to us.

No ſooner was the veſſel that carried us arrived at Stockholm, than we reſolved without loſs of time to ſet out for the bottom of the gulph of Bothnia, where we might judge which ſide of the gulph was proper for our operations, better than we could do by truſting to our charts. Nothing could retard us, neither the frightful ſtories they told us at Stockholm nor the goodneſs of his Sweediſh majeſty; who, notwithſtanding the orders he had given in our behalf, told us oftener than once, that it was not without a ſenſible concern he ſaw us purſue ſo deſperate an undertaking.

We arrived at Tornea time enough to ſee the ſun perform his courſe for ſeveral days together without ſetting; a ſight which ſtrikes with wonder an inhabitant of the temperate zones, even though he knows it is what muſt neceſſarily happen in that climate.

We had flattered ourſelves with the hopes of performing our operations upon the coaſts of the gulph of Bothnia, where we ſhould have the convenience of

tranſporting ourſelves and our inſtruments to the different ſtations by ſea, and where the many advantageous points of view, from the iſlands in all our charts, ſeemed to promiſe us ſucceſs. But when we went with great impatience to view them, all our labour ſerved only to convince us, that this deſign was impracticable. The iſlands that line the coaſts of the gulph, and the coaſts themſelves, which we had fancied to be ſo many promontories, that might furniſh us with diſtant points of view from one to another, lay all of them ſo low upon the ſurface of the water, that at a ſmall diſtance, the convexity of the earth muſt ariſe between them and us. So that after ſeveral ſmall voyages in purſuance of our firſt deſign of making uſe of theſe iſlands, we were at laſt obliged to give it up.

We now reſolved to endeavour to perform our operations upon the tops of the mountains to the northward of Tornea, though it appeared next to impoſſible. In the deſerts of a country ſcarcely habitable, in that immenſe foreſt which extends from Tornea to cape Nord, we muſt go through operations that are not eaſy, even where no convenience is wanting. There were but two ways of penetrating into theſe deſerts, both of which we muſt prove; one the ſailing up a river full of cataracts; the other croſſing thick woods and deep marſhes on foot: and if we ſhould be able to make our way into the country, we muſt, after the moſt painful marches, be obliged to clamber up ſteep rocks, and to clear the tops of mountains of the wood that would intercept our ſight. In theſe deſerts we ſhould be forced to take up with the moſt wretched diet; be expoſed to the flies, which in this ſeaſon is ſo inſufferable as to drive the Laplanders and their rein-deer from their habitations, to ſeek ſhelter on the coaſts of the ocean. We were, in fine, to undertake this work without knowing, or being able to inform ourſelves, whether it was practicable; whether the want of one

mountain might not, after all our toils, interrupt the ſeries of our triangles; or whether it would be poſſible to find upon the river a baſe by which they might be connected. But if we ſhould ſurmount all theſe obſtacles, we ſhould ſtill have the labour of building obſervatories on the moſt northerly of the mountains; the trouble of carrying thither as numerous a collection of inſtruments as is perhaps to be ſeen in Europe, and of making there the niceſt aſtronomical obſervations: but we were ſo far from being deterred by the difficulties, that the proſpect of conquering them filled us with pleaſure.

We ſet out from Tornea on Friday the 6th of July, 1736, with a company of Finland ſoldiers, and a good number of boats laden with inſtruments, and proviſions. We began our journey by ſailing up the great river, which, riſing in the inland parts of Lapland, purſues its courſe till it falls into the gulph of Bothnia, having firſt divided itſelf into two branches that form the iſle of Swertzar, where is built the town of the ſame name in the latitude of 65°. 51'. From this day forward, our only habitation was the deſerts, and our time was ſpent on the ſummits of thoſe mountains which we were to connect by our triangles.

After a voyage of twelve hours, we landed in the evening at Korpikyla, an hamlet by the river ſide inhabited by Finlanders; and having for ſome time travelled on foot acroſs the foreſt, arrived at the bottom of a ſteep mountain called Niwa, whoſe ſummit, which is a bare rock, we choſe for our firſt ſtation. Upon the river we had been tormented by great flies with green heads, that fetched blood wherever they fixed: but on the top of this mountain we were peſtered with ſeveral other kinds that were ſtill more intolerable. By good luck we found two Lapland girls tending a ſmall herd of rein-deer; but almoſt hid in the ſmoke of a great fire they had kindled; and being told, on inquiry, that they thus

defended themſelves from the flies, we had immediately recourſe to the ſame method.

On the eighth of July at one in the morning, Mr. Camus and I left our company upon Niwa, to reconnoitre the mountains to the northward. We travelled up the river to a high mountain called Avaſaxa, where having cleared its top of the trees, we cauſed a ſignal to be built. Our ſignals were hollow cones compoſed of a great many large trees, ſtripped of the bark, by which means they were white enough to be viſible at ten or twelve leagues diſtance.

This being finiſhed we came down from Avaſaxa, and embarking on the little river Tenglio which falls into the great river at the foot of this mountain, we directed our courſe upwards to the neareſt place we could find, to a mountain that ſeemed to ſuit our purpoſe; and from thence a march of three hours, over a moraſs, brought us to the foot of Horrilakero. Though extremely fatigued we got to the top of it, and ſpent the night in cutting down the wood that covered it. Moſt part of this mountain is a reddiſh ſtone interſperſed with a kind of white cryſtal. Here the flies, more mercileſs than thoſe at Niwa, were not to be driven off by ſmoke, and we were obliged, notwithſtanding the exceſſive heats, to wrap our heads in our cappmudes, a ſort of gown made of rein-deer ſkins, and to cover ourſelves with branches of fir, and even whole trees; which rather ſtifled than defended us from theſe troubleſome inſects.

Having cut down all the wood on the top of Horrilakero, and built a ſignal, we returned by the ſame road to our boats, which we had drawn upon the bank. It is indeed no hard matter to drag along, or even to carry the boats uſed in the rivers of Lapland. A few thin fir boards compoſe the whole veſſel, which is ſo extremely light and flexible, that its beating, with all the force of the ſtream, againſt

the ſtones, which theſe rivers are full of, does it no manner of harm. It is terrible to thoſe not accuſtomed to it, and aſtoniſhing even to thoſe who are, to ſee one of theſe weak veſſels drive down a cataract, in a torrent of foam and ſtones, ſometimes raiſed aloft in the air, and the next moment loſt in the deep. A bold Finlander ſteers it with a long oar, while his two companions row hard to ſave it from the purſuing waves that threaten every moment to overwhelm it. You may then ſee the whole keel by turns raiſed above water, and leaning only with one extremity on the top of a yielding billow. With ſuch courage and addreſs do theſe Finlanders paſs the cataracts; but their art and ſkill in the management of their boats upon other occaſions, is no leſs remarkable: a tree, branches and all, commonly ſerves them both for maſt and ſail.

We now embarked again on the Tengilo, which brought us down into the river of Tornea on our return to Korpikyla. At four leagues from Avaſaxa we left our boats, and after an hour's walk over the foreſt, reached the foot of Cuitaperi, a ſteep mountain; its ſummit is a rock covered with moſs, affording an extenſive proſpect all round, and to the ſouth taking in the gulph of Bothnia: here we erected a ſignal, whence we could diſcover all the others we had raiſed, and then continued our courſe down the river. Between Cuitaperi and Korpikyla we found ſome frightful cataracts, where the Finlanders always ſet their paſſengers aſhore; but our exceſſive fatigue made us chuſe rather to riſk the paſſage in the boat, than to walk only an hundred yards. At laſt, on the evening of the eleventh, we joined our friends on the top of Niwa, who had deſcried our ſignals, but from the continual fogs, were unable to make any obſervations.

The fogs being at length diſperſed by the cold north wind, we had ſuch a view of our ſeveral ſignals, as to take their angles; and having finiſhed our ob-

ſervations there, we ſet up ſignals at Kakama and Pullingi, where having alſo made our obſervations, we all ſet out for Avaſaxa.

This mountain is ſeated on the bank of the river, fifteen leagues from Tornea. Its aſcent is difficult lying through a wood that reaches half way up, where it is interrupted by ſteep ſlippery rocks, and afterwards continued to the very top of the mountain before we cut down ſo much of it as was neceſſary to open our proſpect. The north-eaſt ſide is a moſt frightful rocky precipice, where the falcons build their neſts. At its foot runs the Tenglio, by which it is encircled. From its ſummit the proſpect is the moſt beautiful that can be imagined; to the ſouth it is unbounded, and diſcovers the courſe of the river to a vaſt extent: towards the eaſt the Tenglio may be traced in its paſſage through ſeveral lakes; and the view is terminated on the north, at twelve or fifteen leagues diſtance, by a prodigious number of hills heaped one upon another. Upon this mountain we ſpent ten days, during which curioſity prompted the inhabitants to pay us frequent viſits, bringing us fiſh and ſheep, and ſuch bad fruits as are produced in the woods.

The day we left Avaſaxa, we croſſed the polar circle, and at three the next morning, which was the 31ſt of July, arrived at Turtula, a hamlet where they were cutting their little crop of barley and hay. After having travelled for ſome time in the woods, we embarked on a lake that brought us to the foot of Pullingi, the higheſt of all our mountains, and of exceeding difficult acceſs, as well on account of its ſteepneſs, as the depth of the moſs wherein we were obliged to fix our ſteps; we, however, reached the top at ſix in the morning. Our ſtay here, which was till the 6th of Auguſt, was no leſs diſagreeable than the aſcent had been painful. We had a whole wood of the largeſt trees to fell, and the flies attacked us with ſuch fury, that our ſoldiers of the regiment of

Weſtro-Bothnia, a body diſtinguiſhed for their bravery even in Sweden, and hardened by the greateſt fatigues, were obliged to wrap up their faces, or to ſmear them over with tar. Theſe inſects alſo poiſoned our victuals; no ſooner was a diſh ſerved, but it was quite covered over with them, while another ſwarm with all the rapaciouſneſs of birds of prey, was fluttering round, to carry off ſome pieces of a ſheep that was dreſſing for us.

On the 6th of Auguſt we left this mountain to go to Pello, where we arrived the ſame day, after having forced our way up four cataracts. Pello is a village inhabited by a few Finlanders: in its neighbourhood is Kittis, the loweſt of all our mountains, where was one of our ſignals. As we were going up, we diſcovered a copious ſpring of pure water, that reſiſts the keeneſt froſts; for when we returned to Pello about the end of winter, while the ſea at the bottom of the gulph, and all the rivers were frozen as hard as marble, we found this ſpring running as in ſummer. We had the good fortune to make our obſervations ſoon after our arrival, and the next day went to Turtula.

For a month paſt we had been inhabitants of the deſerts, or rather of the mountain tops; the earth or rocks ſpread with the ſkins of rein-deer had been our beds; and our food was chiefly fiſh, brought us by the Finlanders, or which we ourſelves had caught, and berries or wild fruit that grew in the woods.

I left Turtula, in company with Meſſ. Outheir and Celſius, to croſs the foreſt and find the ſignal erected at Neimi; and a frightful journey it was. We ſet out on foot, and walked till we got to a brook, where we embarked in three little boats. But they paſſed with ſuch difficulty between the ſtones, that we were obliged every inſtant to get out of them and leap from one rock to another. The brook brought us to a lake ſo full of little yellowiſh grains of the bigneſs of millet, that the whole water was diſ-

coloured with them. I took them to be the chryſalis of ſome inſect, and was tempted to fancy, that this inſect muſt be ſome kind of thoſe flies that ſo tormented us; for I could think of no other ſpecies of animals whoſe numbers correſponded to the quantity of grains that covered this large body of water. From the extremity of this lake we had to walk to another of very clear water. Here we found a boat, and putting our quadrant on board reſolved to follow it along the ſide of the lake on foot: but the wood was ſo thick, that we were forced to cut our way through it, and were entangled at every ſtep by the depth of the moſs, and the fallen fir-trees that lay acroſs our way.

In all theſe woods there are almoſt as many trees fallen as ſtanding; for the ſoil, after it has reared them to a certain height, can no longer furniſh the proper nouriſhment, nor is it deep enough to allow them to take firm root, whence the leaſt blaſt of wind overſets them: and in all theſe woods nothing is to be ſeen but firs and birches blown down. Time reduces the wood of the latter to duſt, without affecting the bark; and one is ſurpriſed to find pretty large trees that crumble upon the ſlighteſt touch. This probably gave the Swedes the hint of covering their houſes with this bark, and indeed nothing could be imagined fitter for the purpoſe. In ſome provinces they cover the bark with earth, and form upon the roof a kind of garden, ſuch as are to be ſeen upon the houſes of Upſal. In Weſtro Bothnia the bark is bound with fir poles that hang down on either ſide of the roof.

Our woods had therefore the aſpect of the ruins of woods whoſe trees are moſtly periſhed; and it was through one of the moſt horrid of theſe that we now paſſed with twelve ſoldiers, who carried our baggage. Having at length reached a third lake, which was very large, and the fineſt water imaginable, we put our inſtruments and baggage on board two boats

we found there, and waited their return upon the coaſt, when we were ferried over to the foot of Niemi.

The fine lakes that ſurrounded this mountain, and the many difficulties we encountered in getting thither, gave it the air of an enchanted iſland in romance. On one hand you ſee a grove of trees riſe from a plain, ſmoother and level as the walks of a garden, and at ſuch eaſy diſtances, as neither to embarraſs the walks, nor the proſpect of the lake that waſhes the foot of the mountain. On the other you have apartments of different ſizes that ſeem cut by art in the rocks, and to want only a regular roof to compleat them. The rocks themſelves are ſo perpendicular, ſo high, and ſmooth, that you would take them for the walls of an unfiniſhed palace, rather than for the work of nature. From this height we ſaw thoſe vapours riſe from the lake which the people of the country call Haltios, and deem the guardian ſpirits of the mountains. We had been frightened with ſtories of bears haunting this place, but ſaw none. Indeed it ſeemed rather a place of reſort for fairies and genii, than for thoſe ſavage animals.

Having compleated our obſervations, we left Niemi, repaſſed the three lakes and got back to Turtula. We afterwards departed from thence, and ſet out for Horrilakero, entering the Tenglio with four boats. Its cataracts are troubleſome, rather from the lowneſs of the water, and the great number of ſtones, than the rapidity of the ſtream. As we ſailed along, I was ſurpriſed to ſee upon the banks of this river, roſes of as lively a red, as any in our gardens. We compleated our obſervations at Horrilakero on the 17th of Auguſt, and the next day went to Oſwer-Tornea, where our whole company was now aſſembled.

But afterwards going up to Avaſaxa to take the angles that muſt connect the baſe, which we had

fixed on the bank of the river, with our triangles's we ſaw Horrilakero all in flames. This is an accident not uncommon in theſe woods, where there is no living during the ſummer, without ſmoke, and where the moſs and firs are ſo combuſtible, that a fire once kindled will ſpread over ſome thouſand acres; and the ſmoke of theſe fires have ſometimes retarded our obſervations as much as the thickneſs of the air. As this fire on Horrilakero had been doubtleſs occaſioned by our not taking ſufficient care to extinguiſh thoſe we had kindled there, we diſpatched thirty men to cut off its communication with the neighbouring woods: but three days after, when we had finiſhed our obſervations at Avaſaxa, Horrilakero was ſtill burning; we ſaw it involved in a cloud of ſmoke, and the flames, which had made their way downwards, were ravaging all the foreſt below.

By the 9th of September, when we had paſſed 63 days in theſe deſerts, we had finiſhed as complete a ſet of triangles as we could have wiſhed for; and an undertaking begun in a manner at random, without knowing whether it was at all practicable, had turned out ſo much better than expectation, that it looked as if the placing of theſe mountains, had been at our diſpoſal. We had built two obſervatories upon Kittis, in the one was a quadrant of two foot radius, a clock of Mr. Graham's, and an inſtrument which we owed to the ſame gentleman, conſiſting of a teleſcope, movable about an horizontal axis, which was to determine the direction of our triangles with reſpect to the meridian. The other obſervatory, which was much larger, was built ſo near the firſt, that the voice of him who counted the pendulum's vibrations, could be diſtinctly heard from one to the other. An admirable ſector alſo made by Mr. Graham took up almoſt the whole room. What difficulty we had in carrying up ſo many inſtruments to the top of the mountain, I ſhall not mention; it is ſufficient that we carried them up.

We had ſome ice on the 29th of September, and ſnow on the 21ſt; ſome parts of the river were alſo frozen. On the firſt of November it began to to freeze harder, and on the morrow the river was quite frozen up. The ice, which thawed no more, was preſently covered over with ſnow; and this vaſt body of water, but a few days before full of ſwans and other water fowl, was now one immenſe plain of ice and ſnow. Our work was now in a manner completed, we had only to meaſure our baſe, which was no more than ſurveying the diſtance between the two ſignals we had erected laſt ſummer; but this was to be done upon the ice of a river in Lapland, at the diſtance of above three leagues, in a country where the cold was growing every day more intenſe. On the 21ſt of December this work was begun. In this ſeaſon the ſun but juſt ſhewed itſelf above the horizon towards noon; but the long twilights, the whiteneſs of the ſnow, and the meteors continually blazing in the ſky, furniſhed us light enough to work four or five hours every day. We lodged at the houſe of the curate of Oſwer-Tornea, and at eleven in the forenoon began our ſurvey, attended by ſo great an equipage, that the Laplanders, drawn by the novelty of the ſight, came down from the neighbouring mountains. We ſeparated into two bands, each of which carried four rods of fir, each thirty feet long. I ſhall ſay nothing of the fatigues and dangers of this operation. Judge what it muſt be to walk in ſnow two feet deep, with heavy poles in our hands, which we were obliged to be continually laying on the ſnow, and lifting again; in a cold ſo extreme, that whenever we would taſte a little brandy, the only thing that could be kept liquid, our tongues and lips froze to the cup, and came away bloody: in a cold that congealed the fingers of ſome of us, and threatened us with ſtill more diſmal accidents. While the extremities of our bodies were thus freezing, the reſt, through exceſſive toil, was

bathed in ſweat. Brandy did not quench our thirſt; we muſt have recourſe to deep wells dug through the ice, which were ſhut almoſt as ſoon as opened, and from which the water would ſcarcely be conveyed unfrozen to our lips; thus were we forced to run the hazard of the dangerous contraſt which ice-water might produce in our heated bodies.

Our work, however, advanced apace; for ſix days labour brought it to within about five hundred toiſes, where we had not been able to plant our ſtakes ſoon enough: three of the gentlemen therefore undertook this office, while the Abbé Outhier and I went upon a pretty extraordinary adventure. We had laſt ſummer omitted an obſervation of ſmall moment: this was taking the height of an object that we made uſe of in meaſuring on the top of Avaſaxa; and to perform this, I undertook to go with a quadrant to the top of the mountain, ſo ſcrupulouſly careful were we that nothing ſhould be wanting to the perfection of the work. Imagine a very high mountain full of rocks, that lie hid in a prodigious quantity of ſnow, as well as their cavities, wherein you may ſink through a cruſt of ſnow as into an abyſs, and the undertaking will ſcarce appear poſſible. Yet there are two ways of performing it; one by walking, or rather ſliding along upon two ſtrait boards eight feet in length, which the Finlanders and Laplanders uſe to keep them from ſinking into the ſnow: but this way of walking requires long practice. The other is by truſting yourſelf to a rein-deer uſed to ſuch journeys.

The machine drawn by theſe animals is here a kind of boat ſcarce large enough to hold the half of one's body. As this travelling in the ſnow is a kind of navigation, that the veſſel may ſuffer the leſs reſiſtance in its courſe, it has a ſharp head, and a narrow keel, like an ordinary boat; and on this keel it tumbles ſo from ſide to ſide, that if a man does not take good care to balance himſelf, it will be

every moment in danger of over-ſetting. It is fixed by thongs to the collar of the rein-deer, who, as ſoon as he finds himſelf on a firm beaten road, runs with incredible fury. If you would ſtop him, it is to little purpoſe to pull a ſort of rein that is tied to his horns; wild and unmanageable, it will only make him change his track, or perhaps turn upon you, and revenge himſelf by kicking. If this happens to a Laplander, he turns the boat over him, and uſes it as a buckler againſt the attacks of the rein-deer: but as we were ſtrangers to this addreſs, we might have been killed before we could put ourſelves in ſuch a poſture of defence. We had nothing to defend us with but a little ſtick each of us held in his hand, by way of rudder to ſteer our courſe, and keep clear of the trunks of trees. In this manner was I to climb Avaſaxa, accompanied by the Abbé Outhier, but we were attended by two men and a woman of the country, and Mr. Brunnius their curate.

The firſt part of our journey was performed in a moment; for our flight over the plain beaten road from the curate's houſe to the foot of the mountain can be compared only to that of birds. And though the mountain where there was no track greatly abated the ſpeed of our rein-deer, they got at length to the top of it; where we immediately made the obſervation for which we came. In the mean while our rein-deer had dug up holes in the ſnow, where they browzed on the moſs that covers the rocks; and the Laplanders had lighted a great fire, and we preſently joined them to warm ourſelves. The cold was ſo extreme, that the heat of the fire could reach only to a very ſmall diſtance. As the ſnow juſt by it melted, it was immediately froze again, forming a hearth of ice all around.

Our journey up hill had been painful; but now our concern was leſt our return ſhould be too rapid. We were to proceed down the ſteep in conveyances, which, though partly ſunk in the ſnow, ſlid on not-

withſtanding, drawn by animals, whoſe fury in the plain we had already tried, and who though ſinking to their bellies in the ſnow, would endeavour to free themſelves by the ſwiftneſs of their flight. We very ſoon found ourſelves at the bottom of the hill; a moment after this the great river was croſſed, and we were returned back to the curate's houſe.

The next day we finiſhed our ſurvey, and made all poſſible haſte back to Tornea to ſecure ourſelves in the beſt manner we were able from the increaſing ſeverity of the ſeaſon. The town of Tornea, at our arrival on the 30th of December, had really a moſt frightful aſpect. Its little houſes were buried to the tops in ſnow, which had there been any day-light, muſt have effectually ſhut it out. But the ſnow continually falling, or ready to fall, for the moſt part hid the ſun the few moments he might have appeared at mid-day. In the month of January the cold was increaſed to that extremity, that Mr. Reaumur's mercurial thermometers, which at Paris, in the great froſt of 1709, it was thought ſtrange to ſee fall to 14 degrees below the freezing point, were now got down to 37. The ſpirit of wine in the others was frozen. If we opened the door of a warm room, the external air inſtantly converted all the vapour in it into ſnow; whirling it around in white vortexes. If we went abroad, we felt as if the air was tearing our breaſts in pieces; and the cracking of the wood of which the houſes are built, as it ſplit by the violence of the froſt, continually alarmed us with an increaſe of cold. The ſolitude of the ſtreets was as great as if the people had been all dead; and in this country you may often ſee people who have loſt an arm or leg by the froſt. The cold, which is always very great, ſometimes increaſes by ſuch violent and ſudden fits, as are almoſt infallibly fatal to thoſe who are ſo unhappy as to be expoſed to it; and ſometimes there riſe ſudden tempeſts of ſnow that are ſtill more dangerous. The winds ſeem to blow from all quarters

at once, and drive about the ſnow with ſuch fury, that the roads are in a moment rendered inviſible. Dreadful is the ſituation of a perſon ſurprized in the fields by ſuch a ſtorm: his knowledge of the country, and even the mark he may have taken by the trees, cannot avail him: he is blinded by the ſnow, and if he attempts to find his way home is generally loſt. In ſhort, during the whole winter the cold was ſo exceſſive, that on the 7th of April, at five in the morning, the thermometer was fallen to twenty diviſions below the point of freezing, though every afternoon it roſe two or three diviſions above it: a difference in the height not much leſs than that which the greateſt heat and cold felt at Paris uſually produce in that inſtrument. Thus in the ſpace of 24 hours, we had all the variety felt in the temperate zones in the compaſs of a whole year.

But though in this climate the earth is thus horrible, the heavens preſent the moſt beautiful proſpects. The ſhort days are no ſooner cloſed, than fires of a thouſand colours and figures light up the ſky, as if deſigned to compenſate for the abſence of the ſun in this ſeaſon. Theſe fires have not here, as in the more ſoutherly climates, any conſtant ſituation. Though a luminous arch is often ſeen fixed towards the north, they ſeem more frequently to poſſeſs the whole extent of the hemiſphere. Sometimes they begin in the form of a great ſcarf of bright light, with its extremities upon the horizon, which, with a motion, reſembling that of a fiſhing net, glides ſwiftly up the ſky; preſerving in this motion a direction nearly perpendicular to the meridian; and moſt commonly after thoſe preludes, all the lights unite at the zenith, and form the top of a kind of crown. Arches like thoſe ſeen in France towards the north, are here frequently ſituated towards the ſouth; and often towards both the north and ſouth at once. Their ſummits approach each other, the diſtance of their extremities widens towards the horizon. I have

ſeen ſome of the oppoſite arches whoſe ſummits almoſt joined at the zenith; and both the one and the other have frequently ſeveral concentric arches beyond it. Their tops are all placed in the direction of the meridian, though with a little declination to the weſt; which I did not find to be conſtant, and which is ſometimes inſenſible. It would be endleſs to mention all the different figures theſe meteors aſſume, and the various motions with which they are agitated. Their motion is moſt commonly like that of a pair of colours waved in the air, and the different tints of their light gives them the appearance of ſo many vaſt ſtreamers of changeable taffeta. Sometimes they line a part of the ſky with ſcarlet. On the 18th of December I ſaw a phenomenon of this kind, that in the midſt of all the wonders to which I was now every day accuſtomed, raiſed my admiration. To the ſouth a great ſpace of the ſky appeared tinged with ſo lively a red, that the whole conſtellation of Orion looked as if it had been dipped in blood. This light, which was at firſt fixed, ſoon moved, and changing into other colours, violet, and blue, ſettled into a dome, whoſe top ſtood a little to the ſouth-weſt of the zenith. The moon ſhone bright, but did not in the leaſt efface it. In this country, where there are lights of ſo many different colours, I never ſaw but two that were red; and ſuch are taken for preſages of ſome great misfortune. After all, when people gaze at theſe phænomena with an unphiloſophic eye, it is not ſurprizing if they diſcover in them armies engaged, fiery chariots, and a thouſand other prodigies.

During the winter we repeated many of our obſervations and calculations, and found the moſt evident proofs of the earth's being conſiderably flatted at the poles. Mean time the ſun came nearer, or rather no more quitted us. It was now May, when it was curious enough to ſee that great luminary enlighten for ſo long a time a whole horizon of ice,

and to ſee ſummer in the heavens, while winter ſtill kept poſſeſſion of the earth. We were in the morning of that long day of ſeveral months; yet the ſun with all his power wrought no change either upon the ice or ſnow.

On the 6th of May it began to rain, and ſome water appeared on the ice of the river. At noon a little ſnow melted; but in the evening, winter reſumed his rights. At length, on the 10th, the earth which had been ſo long hid began to appear; ſome high points that were expoſed to the ſun ſhewed themſelves, as the tops of the mountains did after the deluge, and all the fowls of the country returned. At the beginning of June, winter yielding up the earth and ſea, we prepared for our departure back to Stockholm, and on the 9th ſome of us ſet out by land and others by ſea. But the ſequel of our adventures, and our ſhipwreck in the gulph of Bothnia, ſays our author belongs not to the preſent ſubject.

A

DESCRIPTION

OF

SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

CHAPTER I.

OF Spain in general; with the climate and produce of the country; of mountains, rivers, principal cities, arts and manufactures, &c.

OF ALL the countries in Europe none are leſs viſited by ſtrangers, except the maritime towns, than Spain and Portugal, which, is owing to their ſituation in a kind of peninſula in the moſt weſtern part of the continent of Europe, out of the road to other countries.

Spain is encompaſſed on every ſide by the ſea, except on that of France, from which it is ſeparated by a continued range of mountains called the Pyrenees, which are almoſt eighty leagues in length, and extend from Cape Olarzo, in the Bay of Biſcay, to Cape Creuz in the Mediterranean Sea. As it has many ranges of high and pleaſant hills, beautiful plains, and a variety of rivers, it is both a delightful and a healthy country; free from the ſcorching heats to which Africa is expoſed, and from the ſevere froſts that are felt in more northern climates. The ſummers are indeed exceſſive hot; but this ſultry

weather lafts but about two or three months, while the remainder of the year is temperate. The air is generally ſerene and clear; the great rains fall regularly in ſpring and autumn.

Such is the moiſture of the hills, bounded on the north by the Bay of Biſcay, and to the ſouth by ſnowy mountains, that no care is ſufficient to preſerve their fruits, their grain, and their inſtruments of iron, from mould, from rot, and from ruſt.

The moſt northern parts of Spain are the moſt mountainous and barren: but ſome of theſe mountains are covered with trees, and the rocky parts with thyme, marjoram, and other aromatic herbs, which ſerve for food to ſheep and goats, and give their milk and fleſh a finer reliſh, than any have that are fed on the richeſt paſtures. If theſe herbs happen to be ſcorched up with the violent heats of ſummer, the cattle are driven down to the ſides of the mountains, where they find a greater plenty of theſe herbs, and in many of them a great deal of graſs; but if theſe alſo fail, as they ſometimes do, through the exceſſive drought, the inhabitants are obliged to remove their flocks to the meadows.

Among the mountains in Spain, Montſerrat is particularly worthy the attention of the curious traveller; as one of the moſt ſingular in the world, for ſituation, ſhape, and compoſition. It ſtands in a vaſt plain, about thirty miles from Barcelona, and nearly in the centre of the principality of Catalonia. It is called by the Catalonians Monte Serrado, or Mount Scie, words which ſignify a cut, or ſawed mountain; and is ſo called from its ſingular and extraordinary form; for it is ſo broken and divided, and ſo crowned with an infinite number of ſpring cones, or pine heads, that it ſeems, at a diſtant view, to be the work of man; but upon a nearer approach, appears to be evidently the production of nature. It is a ſpot ſo admirably adapted for retirement and contemplation that it has, for many

ages, been inhabited only by monks and hermits, whoſe firſt vow is never to forſake it. When the mountain is firſt ſeen at a diſtance, it has the appearance of an infinite number of rocks cut into conical forms, and built one upon another to a prodigious height, or like a pile of grotto work, or Gothic ſpires. Upon a nearer view, each cone appears of itſelf a mountain, and the whole compoſes an enormous maſs, about fourteen miles in circumference. Its height is eſtimated at three thouſand three hundred feet. As it is like no other mountain, ſo it ſtands quite unconnected with any, though not far diſtant from ſome that are very lofty. A convent is erected on the mountain, to which pilgrims reſort from the fartheſt parts of Europe. All the poor who come there, are fed gratis for three days, and all the ſick are received into the hoſpital.

The Spaniſh wheat is inferior to none in Europe, and the inhabitants produce more than they can conſume. Their barley is very good, and in ſuch plenty, that it is the common grain for the horſes and mules, inſtead of oats, which are here very ſcarce; the barley ſtraw ſerves them inſtead of hay, of which they make hardly any through the kingdom. They have wine in great abundance; but the Spaniards being naturally ſober, ſeldom drink it without a great mixture of water, and their women rarely taſte it, except in their lyings-in, or on ſome extraordinary occaſions. Beſides the fruit commonly cultivated in England, they have excellent citrons, lemons, oranges, almonds, prunes, olives, dates, figs, cheſnuts, pomegranates, capers, and grapes, of which laſt they not only make wine, but dry great quantities for raiſins; and their oil, wax, and honey, are as good as any in the world.

Few countries exceed this in the plenty, goodneſs, and variety of fowl both wild and tame; of four footed game, as deer, both red and fallow, hares,

rabbits, and particularly wild boars; and with reſpect to their tame ſwine, the Spaniſh bacon is ſaid to exceed that of Weſtphalia.

The Spaniſh horſes are famed for their ſwiftneſs, and therefore great numbers are exported at a great price to other nations; thoſe bred in the province of Eſtremadura, and the adjacent parts are reckoned the fineſt and ſwifteſt. Their mules are even larger, ſtronger, and more ſure-footed than their horſes. Some of theſe are fine beaſts, and uſed for drawing the coaches of the greateſt nobility, and for travelling over the moſt craggy and mountainous parts of the country; but they are nothing near ſo ſwift as the horſes.

Spain has likewiſe rich mines of quickſilver, copper, lead, allum, ſulphur, and the iron and ſteel of Biſcay is eſteemed the beſt in Europe. Formerly the Spaniſh mines yielded the Romans more gold and ſilver, than any country under their dominion, though now theſe mines are either loſt, exhauſted, or not worth working.

We ſhall now take a view of the principal places in Spain.

Madrid, the reſidence of the Spaniſh monarchs, is the capital of New Caſtile, and of the whole kingdom. It is ſituated in the midſt of a large ſandy plain ſurrounded with hills; but has neither wall nor ditch. On its weſt ſide runs the river Manzanares, over which is a ſtately ſtone bridge. The city is ſaid to contain 400 ſtreets, moſt of which are wide and ſtraight, but ſo exceſſively dirty, that the ſtench may be ſmelt at the diſtance of above a mile. Moſt of the houſes are handſome and lofty; they are generally built with brick; and the moſt of them with lattice windows, chiefly of canvas or ſome ſlight oiled cloth. The houſes of the nobility are generally built of ſtone in an elegant taſte, ſome with ſaſhes, and others with caſements; but during the heat of ſummer, the glaſs frames are taken down,

and in their ſtead others covered with gauze, or the like thin ſtuff are put up, to let in the air. The city has fourteen ſquares, moſt of which are very fine ones, eſpecially that called the Place Mayor. In this ſquare is a large market, and here alſo are exhibited the bull baitings, and other public ſhows. It is 436 feet long, and 334 broad, and the houſes are on each ſide ſupported by an arcade, to ſhelter the people from the rain. They are all five ſtories high, and exactly uniform, with balconies to each ſtory. Whenever the ladies ſtand in their balconies to ſee an extraordinary ſhow, they are not only richly dreſſed, but both the balconies and the fronts of their houſes are adorned with the richeſt tapeſtry and pictures, and if it be in the night, with a vaſt number of wax candles. For it is only upon ſuch occaſions, that the fair ſex are allowed to appear unveiled. This city has 18 pariſhes, 57 monaſteries and nunneries, a great number of chapels, with 22 hoſpitals.

At the end of the town is the Prado, or Pardo de St. Hieronymo, a delightful plain, ſhaded with rows of poplar-trees, and adorned with twenty-three fountains. Thither the nobility and gentry repair every evening in their coaches, or on horſe-back.

At the extremity of the Prado is a noble palace called El Buen Retiro, or the Good Retreat, deſigned by the Spaniſh monarchs as a place of retreat from the hurry of the court and town. It conſiſts of a ſpacious ſquare, built with brick, that contains many noble apartments with the richeſt furniture, and with paintings by the greateſt maſters. The gardens have delightful ſhady walks, water-works and ſtatues. On the canals are pleaſure boats, and on their banks ſummer houſes, for the muſicians to divert the king, while he takes his pleaſure on the water.

There are two other royal palaces here, one a ſpacious and magnificent edifice on the weſt ſide of the city; the main ſtructure conſiſts of three courts, about which are the apartments for the royal family, with the proper offices and lodgings for the houſhold; and the other is called Caſa del Campo, where the king ſometimes refreſhes himſelf during the heat of ſummer, in the cool ſhady walks, which are the principal convenience of this ſeat.

Beſides theſe, the principal things to be ſeen at Madrid, are the churches, ſome of which are very richly adorned: the king's chapel, the priſon, and the houſes of ſeveral of the grandees are well worth ſeeing on account of the excellent paintings with which they are adorned; for in collecting theſe they ſpare no expence.

The moſt noble palace belonging to the king of Spain is the Eſcurial, which was originally erected by Philip II. who raiſed the church and monaſtery of St. Laurence, the Spaniſh martyr, in gratitude for the aſſiſtance he ſuppoſed he had received from his tutelary ſaint, in obtaining the celebrated victory over the French at St. Quintin, in the year 1557.

This royal monaſtery ſtands near a ſmall village called the Eſcurial, nine leagues weſt of Madrid. It is built of a beautiful white ſtone, veined with blue and brown, and of a very fine poliſh; and is ſurrounded by the moſt delightful proſpects. It is in the form of a vaſt quadrangle, containing 580 feet in front from eaſt to weſt. At each extremity is a ſuperb range of building that extend 430 north, and are again joined by another front of the ſame dimenſions as the former. So that it properly conſiſts of four fronts, and at each angle is a tower. The principal front has three gates, of which that in the middle is ſupported by four Doric columns of ſpeckled marble on each ſide, and over them are others of the Ionic order. Above the portal is a beautiful ſtatue of

St. Luarence, of white marble, 15 feet high, dreſſed in the habit of a deacon, with a book in his left hand, and a large gridiron of bronze in his right. In this front are two hundred and forty-ſeven windows.

After paſſing the principal gate, you enter a portico that extends from the college to the convent. Over it is the library, and in the front are three noble arches leading into a grand court, where the eye is ſtruck with the magnificent frontiſpiece of St. Laurence's church, on each ſide of which is a lofty tower, and in the centre a dome. It has five grand arches that form the entrance into the veſtibule, and on the lower part of the portal are ſix large ſtatues placed on pedeſtals, of David, Solomon, Hezekiah, Joſiah, Manaſſeh, and Jehoſaphat, with crowns of bronze enamelled with gold on their heads; and ſceptres in their hands.

The whole ſtructure is ſupported by four very ſtrong ſquare pillars round the centre of the church, forming four grand arches. Every pillar has two altars, and two niches over them, and in the niches of the pilaſters along the walls on both ſides, are altars anſwerable to tho others. Beſides theſe, the whole circuit of the church is ſurrounded with very elegant chapels, and over theſe are galleries with braſs baluſtrades extending quite round. The cupola is encompaſſed by two galleries, and crowned with a lantern, that has eight windows divided by pilaſters gradually diminiſhing to the top, where there is another ſmall dome on the crown of the lantern, and over this a fluted ſtone obeliſk, on the top of which is a globe of gilt braſs, with a croſs and vane. The doors are nine in number, and over the arches of the principal of theſe, and on the great altar, are twelve croſſes, of a very beautiful red jaſper. The altars amount to forty, all of which are richly adorned with carved work, and innumerable paintings many of them by the greateſt maſters.

You next view the great chapel, the aſcent to which from the church is by twelve ſteps of red jaſper. The pavement of this chapel conſiſts of Moſaic work of jaſper and marble of various colours, arranged in the moſt beautiful compartments. The altar-piece is adorned with all the orders of architecture except the Tuſcan. You firſt ſee ſix Doric columns, in the middle of which the tabernacle is placed, and in the compartments of the other columns are ſeveral paintings of ſacred hiſtory. Their baſes and capitals, with thoſe of all the other columns and pilaſters behind them, are of braſs enamelled with gold, the ſhafts are of jaſper, beautifully poliſhed and fluted.

The niches at the two extremes contain the ſtatues of four doctors of the church in gilt braſs, which has a fine effect, the jaſper of the niches being green. In the ſpaces on each ſide of the tabernacle, are two pieces of painting; the one of the nativity, and the other of the eaſtern Magi worſhipping the infant Jeſus. The ſecond range of columns is of the Ionic order inlaid with green in the compartments, and in the extreme intercolumniations are niches of green jaſper, containing the ſtatues of the four Evangeliſts, of the ſame materials and beauty with the former. The principal pictures over the tabernacle, repreſents the martyrdom of St. Laurence, and in the ſide compartments, are our Saviour bound to the pillar, and his carrying the croſs; all by Zuccaro. The third range conſiſts of only four columns of the Corinthan order, the extremes of the lower rank being ſupplied with two pyramids of green jaſper, between which are fine braſs ſtatues of St. James, the patron of Spain, and St. Andrew, both larger than the life. In the middle is the picture of the aſſumption of the Virgin Mary, and on the ſides are thoſe of the reſurrection, and the deſcent of the Holy Ghoſt. Two columns of the Compoſite order ſupport the frontiſpiece, which terminates in the

principal arch of the chapel. The compartment is green jaſper, in which is a crucifix of braſs gilt, with the ſtatues of the Virgin Mary and St. John ſtanding on the ſides, and thoſe of St. Peter and St. Paul, on the extreme pedeſtals. The whole height from the pedeſtal of the Doric order, to the centre of the grand arch is 93 feet and the breadth 49. Thea bove tabernacle ſtands on a pedeſtal of jaſper, within an arched portal, whoſe pilaſters are of red and green jaſper. The form is globular, and the order Corinthian. The materials are all gems, and braſs enamelled with gold. The firſt pedeſtal is of jaſper finely inlaid. It ſupports eight jaſper columns of a deep red veined with white. In the intercolumniations are four niches, with as many ſtatues of Apoſtles. Over the cornice is another baſe, with eight pedeſtals ſupporting the like number of ſtatues in gilt braſs: it alſo ſuſtains the cupola, which is divided into four compartments inlaid with jaſper. Above is a ſmall lantern crowned with another cupola, and over all is an image of our Saviour of the ſame metal as thoſe of the Apoſtles. In the lower part are two doors of rock chryſtal leading into the ſanctuary, the jaumbs and lintels of which are of a beautiful green jaſper; the other parts conſiſt of jaſper of ſeveral colours, and poliſhed braſs. In ſhort, this whole chapel is a dorned with the richeſt Moſaic work, and a great variety of other ſtatues and paintings.

The convent conſiſts of five beautiful cloiſters, and may be entered from the church. The principal cloiſter is as large as the other four, it extending 210 feet from north to ſouth, and 207 from eaſt to weſt. Its grand ſtair-caſe is forty feet broad, the ſteps are of the moſt beautiful ſtones, each of one piece, and the baluſtrades are of exquiſite workmanſhip. The arcade above is adorned with painting exhibiting the founder's motives for erecting this edifice; and the whole ſtructure is adorned with

the works of the moſt celebrated Spaniſh and Italian painters. Within the body of the cloiſter is a flower garden, embelliſhed with reſervoirs and fountains; in niches on the ſides are the ſtatues of the four Evangeliſts, bigger than the life, of white marble.

In the gallery of the royal apartments are excellent paintings by Baſan. Along the wall are repreſented two curtains hanging down from hooks, ſo naturally, that the ſpectators often endeavour to lift them up. On theſe curtains are painted the battle fought by Don John II. againſt the Moors of Granada in the plains of Higuernala; and the battle of St. Quintin. At the two extremities are two naval victories, gained off the iſle of Tercera: and the cieling is covered with ſtucco work.

In the ſouth ſaloon are two doors brought from Germany, inlaid with exquiſite beauty, and a variety of fine wood. The inſide is adorned with exquiſite paintings. The next is the apartment of King Philip II. where he died. Here the furniture, ceiling, and walls are plain, and the floor is brick. It is, however, adorned with ſmall ſtatues of Saints, ſome very beautiful pictures of the Virgin Mary, and other religious pieces. From this apartment is a paſſage to the queen's, which is of the ſame conſtruction.

The library is 125 feet long, 32 broad, and 36 in height. The pavement is of black and white marble in beautiful knots. The concave part of the cieling is finely painted by Pelligrino, exhibiting Divinity, Philoſophy, Grammar, Logic, and all the Sciences, ſurrounded by proper groupes of figures. But the number of books amount to only eight thouſand. However, two other rooms have been added and the books in all three exceed 18,000.

The laſt part of this ſuperb ſtructure we ſhall mention is the Pantheon chapel, the ſepulchre of the Spaniſh monarchs, which is incruſted and embelliſh-

ed with the moſt exquiſite work in marble, jaſper and gilt braſs, adorned with carving, ſtatues, and painting.

The next city we ſhall deſcribe is Saragoſſa, the capital of the kingdom of Arragon, which is ſituated in a delightful plain at the confluence of the rivers Ebro, Salon, Gallego, and Guerva, which render the adjacent country delightful and fertile; from hence the city is well ſupplied with corn, wine, oil, fruits and plenty of fiſh and fowl. It is ſurrounded with walls and towers, and has four handſome gates facing the four cardinal points, with two bridges over the Ebro. The city is an oblong figure, and contains not only many handſome churches, hoſpitals, ſquares, and ſtreets, but has extenſive ſuburbs. 'Tis divided into fourteen large pariſhes, and has twenty-three monaſteries, thirteen nunneries, and a noble hoſpital, endowed with a revenue ſufficient for maintaining eight hundred ſick perſons, beſides two others for orphans, and ſeveral alms houſes for decayed people. There is here alſo a famous univerſity. The cathedral is a rich and ſtately building; in which the tabernacle over the high altar, is a magnificent piece of workmanſhip, all of maſſy ſilver, finely wrought, and weighing 612 pounds. The royal palace ſtood at a ſmall diſtance without the city; but has been given to the officers of the inquiſition. The collegiate church of our Lady of the pillar, thus called from a pretended miraculous image of the Virgin holding an infant Jeſus in her arms; is likewiſe a fine ſtructure, which they affirm was built by St. James the apoſtle. The above image is very ſmall, but its crown and robes are almoſt entirely covered with precious ſtones. It is placed very high on a pillar of jaſper of exquiſite beauty, and a great number of ſilver lamps are kept continually burning in the chapel in which it ſtands, the walls of which glitter with gilding and precious ſtones. To this

image a vaſt number of pilgrims annually reſort, to pay their devotions before it.

Toledo, the capital of New Caſtile, and anciently the royal ſeat of the Goths and Moors, is thirty-ſix miles from Madrid. It ſtands on a ſteep and craggy rock, and has two ſtone bridges over the Tagus. The land ſide is fortified by a double wall, that has 150 towers, and five large gates, beſides poſterns. The plain below is ſpacious, fertile and pleaſant, and ſo well watered by the Tagus, that it produces corn, wine, oil, and every thing that can be deſired for conveniency or delight. The city has twenty-ſeven pariſhes, thirty-eight monaſteries and nunneries, two large colleges, and twenty-five hoſpitals: and yet the inhabitants are ſaid not to amount to above five thouſand families. The ſtreets are narrow and ſteep, but there are ſaid to be no leſs than ſeventeen ſquares and markets. It has a ſpacious old palace taken from the Moors, the ſtables of which can hold at leaſt five hundred horſes. The cathedral is a noble ſtructure, 384 feet long, and 191 broad. Eight large and beautiful braſs gates with magnificent porticos lead to this edifice. Its roof is ſupported by eighty-eight lofty pillars, which divide it into five aiſles, the middlemoſt of which forms two choirs, beautifully carved and inlaid: one called the chapel of the Bleſſed Sacrament, has been the burying-place of many of the Spaniſh monarchs, and is incloſed within coſtly iron gates, and on each ſide ſtands a braſs pulpit on pillars of the ſame. The other choir, which belongs to the canons, is incloſed in the ſame manner, and beautified with curious carving in wood and jaſper. The outſide of both is adorned with ſtatues in niches, and other ornamental imagery, repreſenting the hiſtory of the Old and New Teſtament. The image of the Virgin Mary in this cathedral has a garment covered all over with pearls and precious ſtones, and the paintings are

anſwerable to the reſt. In ſhort, this is one of the richeſt cathedrals in the world, and the archbiſhopric, in its power and revenue, is next to that of Rome; ſo that the late queen of Spain obtained it from the pope for one of her ſons.

The next place of importance we ſhall mention is Valencia, the capital of the province of the ſame name. This city is ſeated on the banks of the Turio, over which it has five bridges, at the diſtance of about a mile and a half from the ſea, and is ſituated oppoſite to the place where the famous city of Saguntum formerly ſtood. It is almoſt of a circular form, and is ſurrounded by a wall that has many towers and gates. Grao, its ſea-port, which ſtands on the Mediterranean, furniſhes it with a variety of ſea-fiſh, and the neighbouring lake of Albufera, with abundance of water fowl, and freſh water-fiſh, as does the fertile country round with corn, wine, oil, fruit, herbs, and other proviſions. The parts above the city being well cultivated, are very populous, and the inhabitants amount to about 15,000 families. It has forty-eight monaſteries and nunneries, beſides other foundations of the military order, ſix chapels, and ſix hoſpitals. Here is alſo a celebrated univerſity which has five colleges. Valencia is the ſee of an archbiſhop, whoſe revenue is worth 30,000 ducats per annum. A great variety of manufactures are carried on here, eſpecially the woollen, ſo that the cloth made in this city is reputed the fineſt in Spain.

The ſilk manufactures flouriſh likewiſe here; there are five thouſand looms, and three hundred ſtocking-frames, which gives employment to upwards of twenty thouſand of the inhabitants, without enumerating perſons who prepare the wood and iron work of ſo great a number of machines, or ſpin, wind, or dye the ſilk.

They export large quantities of wine, oil, and fruit; and the inhabitants have now an eaſy, agree-

able converſation, without any of that ſtiffneſs obſervable in the reſt of the Spaniards.

In this province is alſo Alicant, which is ſixty miles ſouth of Valencia, and the ſame diſtance north of Carthagena. It is a famous city and port in the Mediterranean: the harbour is defended by ſeveral baſtions, and the city though not ſtrong, is well walled, and defended by a caſtle built on a high rock. On the neighbouring ſhore ſtand ſeveral watch towers. This city, which is well known to the Engliſh for its wines and fruit, is ſituated between two hills, and from its vicinity to the ſea has a pleaſing proſpect of ſhips continually paſſing to or from the Mediterranean. It has a large cathedral, dedicated to St. Nicholas, two pariſh churches, ſix convents, and two nunneries. The city is ſaid to contain between thirty and forty thouſand inhabitants.

Carthagena, a city in the province of Murcia, was built by Aſdrubal the famous Carthaginian general, 225 years before Chriſt, and lies on the ſide of a hill, at the mouth of the river Guadulantin, which forms a fine bay in the Mediterranean; but contains only 1200 inhabitants, and has but one pariſh, though it has four monaſteries, and two convents of nuns.

The next city we ſhall mention is Malaga, in the province of Grenada, which is alſo pleaſantly ſituated on the coaſt of the Mediterranean, and has one of the beſt roads in all thoſe parts, into which extends a fine mole 530 paces long, and twenty broad, with ſtairs for taking water, and a chapel for the ſea-faring people. The city is large and of a circular form; ſurrounded by a double wall, that has ſeveral towers, and nine gates. It is alſo defended by two caſtles, one at the top, and the other at the foot of a ſteep mountain, at the bottom of which the town is ſituated. On one ſide the ſea waſhes its walls, and on the other runs the Guadalmedina, over which

is a ſtrong bridge. The neighbouring grounds are covered with vines, and with a great variety of fruit trees; vaſt quantities of wine, raiſins, figs, almonds, lemons, oranges, and other fruits, being exported from thence.

There are in the diſtrict of Malaga, fourteen thouſand wine preſſes; chiefly employed in making the rich wine, which, if white, from the nature of the country, is called Mountain; if red, from the colour, Vino Tinto.

To the weſt of Malaga is Cadiz, the celebrated Gadir or Gades of the ancients, ſituated in the ſame province, on the north-weſt extremity of a long neck of land in an iſland, which is joined to the main land by the bridge of Suaco; both extremities of which are defended by ſtrong works. The iſland on which Cadiz ſtands, together with the oppoſite ſhore, form a bay twelve miles long, and about ſix broad: near the middle of this bay are two points of land, one on the continent and the other on the iſland, 500 fathoms aſunder, on which are the forts Puntal and Matagorda, that command the paſſage: within theſe points is a large and good harbour, which no enemy can enter, till the forts have been firſt taken. The Engliſh forces commanded by the earl of Eſſex landing in the iſland in 1596, took and burnt the town, after they had plundered it of immenſe treaſures, and deſtroyed the galleons in the harbour. The city contains about 5000 houſes, and 50,000 inhabitants, and being the center of all the American trade, the galleons there take in their lading, and return with the treaſures and rich merchandizes of Peru and Mexico. The city is ſurrounded with walls and baſtions, but its greateſt ſtrength ariſes from the ſteepneſs of its coaſt, its rocks and ſand banks.

At a few leagues diſtance to the north lies Seville, the Hiſpal of the ancients, ſituated in a fertile country on the river Guadalquiver, over which there is a ſtout bridge of ſeventeen boats, that joins the city

to a large ſuburb on the other ſide, called Triana. The circuit of the city, including the ſuburbs, is fourteen miles; but the wall is only eight. It is pretty ſtrong, and has fifteen gates, and 166 towers. The number of inhabitants is computed at 300,000. The cathedral is a large ſtructure partly in the Gothic, and partly in the Moreſco taſte, and its ſteeple, like that of St. Mark's at Venice, is aſcended to the top by planes inclining. Here is an univerſity, in which the ſtudents are very numerous. Along the river are commodious quays, where veſſels of large burthen may lie in ſafety. The places of the Viceroy, the archbiſhop, and the antique palace built by the Moors, are large ſtructures. Here alſo is an ancient aqueduct. Bread, wine, fleſh, and all other commodities are extremely dear in this city except olives and pomegranates, which are better here than in any other part of Spain.

The laſt place of importance we ſhall mention n this extenſive country is Gibraltar, once a celebrated town and fortreſs of Andaluſia, at preſent, in poſſeſſion of Britian. Till the arrival of the Saracens in Spain, which took place about the year 712, the rock of Gibraltar went by the name of *Mons Calpe*. On their arrival, a fortreſs was built upon it, and it obtained the name of *Gibel Tarrif*, from the name of their general, and thence Gibraltar. It was in the poſſeſſion of the Spaniards and Moors by turns, till it was taken from the former, by a combined fleet of Engliſh and Duch ſhips, under the command of Sir George Rooke, in 1704; and this rather through accident, that any thing elſe. The prince of Heſſe, with eighteen hundred men, landed on the iſthmus; but an attack, on that ſide, was found to be impracticable on account of the ſteepneſs of the rock. The fleet fired fifteen thouſand ſhot, without making any impreſſion on the works, ſo that the fortreſs ſeems to be equally impregnable both to the Britiſh and Spaniards, except by famine. At laſt, a party of ſailors

rowed close under the New Mole in their boats, and as they saw that the garrison, who consisted only of one hundred men, did not mind them, they were encouraged to attempt a landing; and mounting the Mole, hoisted a red jacket as a signal of possession. This being observed from the fleet, more boats and sailors were sent out, who likewise ascended the works, got possession of a battery, and soon obliged the town to surrender. After many fruitless attempts to recover it, it was confirmed to the English by the treaty of Utrecht, in 1713. Repeated endeavours have been since made to wrest it from England, but without success. The last war has made it more famous than ever, when it underwent a long siege against the united forces of Spain and France by land and sea, and was gallantly defended by general Elliot and his garrison. It must be granted, that the place is by nature almost impregnable. Near three hundred pieces of cannon, of different bores, and chiefly brass, which were sunk before the port in the floating batteries, have been raised, and sold, and the price of them is to be distributed among the garrison. It has a commodious port formed naturally for commanding the passage of the Streights, or, in other words, the entrance into the Mediterranean and Levant seas. But the road is neither safe against an enemy nor storms: the bay is about twenty leagues in circumference. A current sets through the Streights from the Atlantic ocean into the Mediterranean. The town was neither large nor beautiful, and in the last siege was totally destroyed by the bombs of the enemy; but on account of its fortifications, it is esteemed the key of Spain, and is always furnished with a garrison well provided for its defence. The harbour is formed by a mole, which is well fortified and planted with guns. Gibraltar is accessible on the land side, only by a narrow passage between the rock and the sea, but that is walled and fortified both by art and nature,

and ſo incloſed by high ſteep hills, as to be almoſt inacceſſible that way. It has two gates on that ſide, and as many towards the ſea. Acroſs the iſthmus, the Spaniards have drawn a fortified line, chiefly with a view to hinder the garriſon of Gibraltar from having any intercourſe with the country behind them: notwithſtanding which, they carry on a clandeſtine trade, particularly in tobacco. The garriſon is, however, confined within very narrow limits; and, as the ground produces ſcarcely any thing, all their proviſions are brought them either from England, or from Ceuta, on the oppoſite coaſt of Barbary.

The ſtreights of Gibraltar are about twelve leagues in extent, from Cape Spartel to Ceuta Point, on the African coaſt; and from Cape Trafalgar to Europa Point, on the coaſt of Spain. At the weſtern entrance, they are in breadth about eight leagues. At Gibraltar and Ceuta, they are about ſeven leagues broad.

Philoſophers differ widely in accounting for the diſpoſition of that continual influx of waters, which, it is natural to ſuppoſe, would, without ſome conſumption or return, ſoon overflow the boundaries of the Mediterranean Sea. Dr Halle was of opinion that this perpetual ſupply of water from the Atlantic ocean was intended by nature to recruit what was daily exhaled in vapour: others imagine that the waters which roll in with the centre current, are returned, by two counter ſtreams, along the African and Spaniſh ſhores. That there are two counter ſtreams is without doubt; but their rapidity and breadth bear little proportion to the principal current. A third claſs ſuppoſe a counter current beneath, and of equal ſtrength with the upper ſtream; and this opinion appears confirmed by a circumſtance related by Col. James, as to a Dutch ſhip ſunk in an action by a French privateer off Tarifa, which ſome time afterwards was caſt up near Tangier, four

leagues to the weſtward of the place where ſhe diſappeared, and directly againſt the current. This hypotheſis receives alſo additional ſupport from the repeated diſappointments which have been experienced by many naval officers, in attempting to ſound the depth of the ſtreights with the longeſt lines; for the oppoſition between the currents might carry the line in ſuch directions as to defeat the intention of the experiment.

Theſe facts ſeem ſtrongly to indicate a recurrency to the weſtward; which, though it may not be ſo rapid as the upper ſtream, yet with the aſſiſtance of the currents along the Spaniſh and Barbary ſhores, and the neceſſary exhalations, may account for the Mediterranean Sea never encreaſing by the conſtant ſupply received from the Atlantic ocean. The rapidity of the ſuperior current renders the paſſage from the Mediterranean to the weſtward very precarious and uncertain, as ſhips can never ſtem the ſtream without a briſk eaſterly wind. Veſſels, therefore, are often detained weeks, and ſometimes months, waiting for a favourable breeze; in which caſe they find a comfortable birth in the bay of Gibraltar.

Having thus deſcribed the principal cities of Spain, it will be proper to mention the manners and cuſtoms of the inhabitants in general.

The Catalans appear to be the moſt active, ſtirring ſet of men, the beſt calculated for buſineſs, travelling, and manufactures. The Valencians, a more ſullen ſedate race, better adapted to the occupations of huſbandmen, leſs eager to change place, and of a much more timid, ſuſpicious caſt of mind than the former. The Andaluſians ſeem to be the greateſt talkers and rhodomontadors of Spain. The Caſtilians have a manly frankneſs, and leſs appearance of cunning and deceit. The New Caſtilians are perhaps the leaſt induſtrious of the whole nation: The Old Caſtilians are laborious, and retain more of the ancient ſimplicity of manners, both are of a

firm, determined ſpirit. The Arragoneſe are a mixture of the Caſtilian and Catalan, rather inclining to the former. The Biſcayners are acute and diligent, fiery and impatient of control, more reſembling a colony of republicans than the province of an abſolute monarchy; and the Galicians are a plodding, pains-taking race of mortals, that roam over Spain in ſearch of an hardly-earned ſubſiſtence.

Spain produces fine women; yet beauty is far from forming the general character of Spaniſh ladies. In their perſons they are commonly ſmall and ſlender; but they are ſaid to employ arts, common in ſome other countries, to ſupply the defects of nature. It is allowed, that they have great wit and vivacity.

The Spaniards have refined notions and excellent ſenſe; and theſe, if improved by ſtudy and travelling, would render them ſuperior to moſt people. Their ſlow, deliberate manner of proceeding, either in council or war, has, of late years, worn off to ſuch a degree, that, during the two laſt wars, they were found to be as quick, both in reſolving and executing as their enemies. Their ſecrecy, conſtancy, and patience, were always exemplary; and in ſeveral of their provinces, particularly Galicia, Granada, and Andaluſia, the common people have, for ſome time, aſſiduouſly applied themſelves to agricultue and labour.

The temperance of the Spaniards in eating and drinking is remarkable. They frequently breakfaſt, as well as ſup in bed; their breakfaſt is uſually chocolate; tea being very ſeldom drank. They live much upon garlic, ſallad, and radiſhes. The men drink very little wine; and the women uſe water or chocolate. Both ſexes uſually ſleep after dinner, and take the air in the cool of the evening. This is the common practice in warm countries, ſuch as Italy, Spain, and Portugal, where, generally ſpeaking, the weather is clear, and the inhabitants are moſtly in

the habit of riſing much earlier than in England. The human body cannot furniſh ſpirits ſufficient to reſiſt the effects of the violent heat through the whole day, without ſome refreſhment; it is therefore, the univerſal practice to go to ſleep for ſome hours after dinner, which, in thoſe countries, is over early; and this time of repoſe laſts for two or three hours. Dancing is ſo much their favourite entertainment, that one may ſee a grandmother, mother, and daughter, all in the ſame country dance. Many of their theatrical exhibitions are inſipid and ridiculous. The prompter's head ſometimes appears through a trap-door, above the level of the ſtage, and he reads the play loud enough to be heard by the audience. Gallantry is a ruling paſſion in Spain. Jealouſy, ſince the acceſſion of the houſe of Bourbon, has ſlept in peace. The nightly muſical ſernades of miſtreſſes, by their lovers, are ſtill in uſe. The fights of the cavaliers, or bull feaſts, are almoſt peculiar to this country and Portugal, and make a capital figure in painting the genius and manners of the Spaniards. On theſe occaſions, young gentlemen have an opportunity of ſhewing their courage and activity before their miſtreſſes; and the valour of the cavalier is proclaimed, honoured and rewarded, according to the number and fierceneſs of the bulls, that he has killed in theſe encounters.

Moſt towns in Spain have a ſquare for the exhibition of bull-feaſts. The inhabitants of the pooreſt villages will club together to buy a cow or an ox; and, for want of horſes, fight them riding upon aſs-back.

CHAPTER. II.

Of Portugal in general; the produce of the country, and the cuſtoms and manners of the people. A deſcription of the cities of Liſbon, St. Ubes, Oporto, Coimbra, Santerem, Portale-Elvas, &c.

THE kingdom of Portugul, is ſituated to the weſt of Spain, from which it is ſeparated on the north and eaſt by the river Minho, and ſome ſmall rivers and hills; on the ſouth and weſt it is waſhed by the ſea. Its whole extent from north to ſouth is 300 miles, and its breadth from eaſt to weſt, where broadeſt, is about 120. It is in the ſame climate with Spain, and as well as that country, is very mountainous; but the ſoil is in general worſe, and never produces corn enough for the ſupport of its inhabitants: as to wheat it has always produced leſs of that valuable grain than what the people require. In the ſouthern parts paſture is ſcarce, and the cattle ſmall and lean; though the fleſh is generally well taſted. But to make amends for this want of corn and paſture, here are made vaſt quantities of wine, and which is indeed the beſt commodity of this kingdom. Oil is likewiſe here made in great abundance, but it is far inferior to that of Spain and Italy. Lemons and oranges, likewiſe grow here, and are exported in great quantities, though the acidneſs of the latter are not near ſo pleaſant, as thoſe that come from Seville; nor indeed are their raiſins, figs, almonds and cheſnuts either ſo large, or ſo well taſted as thoſe of Spain. However, their

ſweet oranges, which they have introduced from China, and are thence called China oranges, are the beſt of the kind in Europe. Herbs and flowers of all ſorts are here commonly very good, and abundance of perfumed waters are diſtilled from thoſe of the odoriferous kind, which are here in great requeſt, they being uſed in almoſt every thing that is eat, drank, or worn. This country alſo produces great quantities of allum, white marble, alabaſter, and eſpecially ſalt, of which immenſe quantities are exported from the port of Setual. The woollen manufactures of this country are ſo indifferent and coarſe, that they are only worn by the meaner ſort, and though their ſilks are in ſome places much better, they are far inferior in beauty and goodneſs to thoſe made in Spain. The country is, however, in general pretty well peopled, and the inhabitants, eſpecially of the ſea-port towns, are much richer than the Spaniards.

The women are moſtly beautiful while young, though their complexion is inclinable to the olive; but the indiſcreet uſe of paint renders their ſkins ſhrivelled as with old age, before they are turned of thirty: but their eyes, which are generally black and ſparkling, retain their luſtre after their other charms are withered. The quick decay of beauty is, however, in ſome meaſure recompenſed by the vivacity of their wit, in which they are ſaid to excel the women of all other nations. They are extremely charitable and generous, and remarkable for their modeſty. Spectacles are commonly worn here as well as in Spain, as a mark of age and gravity; for it is obſervable of theſe two nations, that old age, with a grave and ſolemn behaviour, procure ſuch reſpect, that the young affect to imitate the ſolemnity of the old.

The ſole religion profeſſed in Portugal is that of the church of Rome, no other being ſuffered, or ſcarcely known throughout the country, except that

of the Jews; who are here in great numbers, though concealed; for the better to eſcape notice, they not only go regularly to maſs and confeſſion, but ſtrive to outdo thoſe of the Romiſh church in their zeal for the national religion. But if any of them are diſcovered, they are immediately ſeized by the officers of the inquiſition, when if they will abjure Judaiſm, they are only condemned to ſuffer ſome corporal puniſhment, or public ſhame; but if after being converted and pardoned, they are found to relapſe into Judaiſm, they are cruelly condemned to the flames, and executed in a public manner, with the moſt pompous and dreadful apparatus. Foreign Proteſtants who have never embraced the Romiſh religion may be here undiſturbed, provided they never offend the government, nor affront the eſtabliſhed church. The inquiſition alſo puniſhes thoſe who are charged with ſorcery, witchcraft, blaſphemy, and other crimes.

The principal cities of this kingdom are Liſbon, St. Ubes, Oporto, Coimbra, Santerem, Portalegre and Elvas.

Liſbon by the Portugueſe called Liſboa, the metropolis of Portugal, is ſituated on the north banks of the Tajo or Tagus, about ten miles from its mouth. It is about ſix miles long, and is built upon ſeven hills, winding with the river, from which it riſes in the form of an amphitheatre. On one of them ſtands a caſtle that commands the town, which is ſurrounded by a wall that has 77 towers, and before the dreadful earthquake on the firſt of November 1755, was ſuppoſed to contain 30,000 houſes, and 150,000 inhabitants. The ſtreets being principally in the valleys between the hills, are narrow, dirty, and ſome on the ſides of them are very ſteep' which render them inconvenient for coaches, ſo that litters are generally uſed. The houſes of the citizens are commonly mean, with lattice windows; but thoſe of the nobility are elegantly built of ſtone, and

have large gardens. Here are ſeveral handſome ſquares, the fineſt of which called the Roſia, had the houſe of inquiſition at the upper end, and alſo St. Dominic's church, which belonged to that office, where the Jews, with the ſuppoſed heretics and witches, were tried before the king and nobility. This was one of the largeſt and moſt beautiful churches in Liſbon: the weſt end was covered with pictures of the heads of thoſe who were executed, taken from the life, and placed in rows. Adjoining to this edifice was a large convent of Dominican friars. Near this ſquare was another fine one called Terreira de Paſſo, in which was the king's palace, a large and commodious ſtructure, which took up one ſide of it, and the cuſtom-houſe, corn-market, and meat market were on the others. From the palace might be ſeen large fleets of ſhips lying in the harbour, and others continually ſailing in and out. In this ſquare they hold their bull-beatings, the diverſion of the great, at which all perſons of diſtinction aſſemble.

Beſides the cathedral, there were thirty-ſeven pariſh churches, with twenty-three monaſteries and convents for monks and nuns, which were generally handſome ſtructures, richly adorned within. The cathedral in particular is a vaſt edifice, but heavy, clumſy, and of the Gothic taſte; yet as it ſtands upon one of the ſeven hills, it at a proper diſtance affords a moſt noble proſpect. However, what it wants in elegance and beauty on the outſide, is amply made up by the richneſs of its ornaments within, as ſtatues, paintings, and utenſils of gold and ſilver enriched with the moſt coſtly gems. Among the many noble hoſpitals in this city, is the celebrated houſe of Mercy, which not only conſtantly breeds up ſixty boys, and portions out 114 maidens; but diſtributes an incredible number of other charities; as relieving priſoners for debt, maintaining of decayed perſons that cannot beg, and

aſſiſting families that are aſhamed to let their wants be publicly known. The great hoſpital is obliged to receive all perſons of whatever nation or religion; nor is this charity confined to the ſick, or to ſuch as meet with caſual misfortunes, as broken limbs, blindneſs, &c. but extends to naturals, lunatics, and foundlings. The city, before the great earthquake, afforded a noble proſpect when viewed from the river, on account of the gradual aſcent of the buildings; nor is the proſpect leſs agreeable from the town to the river, which is three miles over, and filled with ſhips from every nation in Europe; and farther ſtill, the eye is entertained with a diſtant view of a fine country interchangeably mixed with towns and villages.

But on the 1ſt of November 1755, at about ten in the morning, the above mentioned dreadful earthquake began, which laid the fineſt buildings of Liſbon in ruins, and reduced that city to a ſcene of the moſt terrible deſolation. To complete the public diſtreſs, a fire ſoon after broke out, and ſpread among the ruins; and by theſe diſaſters the king's palace, the cuſtom houſe, St. Dominic's church, St. Nicholas's, and many others, were either thrown down or conſumed; together with a great number of private houſes: but happily ſome whole ſtreets were entirely ſtanding.

About twenty-one miles below is the port of St. Ubes, or rather Setubal, as it is called by the Portugueſe. This city was the Cætobriga of the Romans; it is ſituated on a ſpacious bay cloſe to the ocean, and is much reſorted to by moſt northern nations on account of the vaſt quantities of ſalt annually made there. The town has a ſtrong wall, thirteen gates, many towers, and ſome other out-works, and fortifications. On the ſea-ſide are two forts or caſtles, one an old one, and the other of modern conſtruction. The inhabitants are computed at about 3000, and the city has four pariſh churches, three monaſteries,

two nunneries, five chapels, a houſe of mercy, two hoſpitals, and two conduits, to which the water is brought from a good diſtance by a ſtately Roman aqueduct, ſupported on a great number of arches. This city is one of the moſt flouriſhing places in the kingdom; but it ſuffered very greatly in the earthquake that was ſo fatal to Liſbon.

The next city we ſhall mention is Oporto, or Porto, which is a ſea port on the north ſide of the Duero, about three miles from the ſea, and is ſituated on an uneven rocky ground, that river waſhing its walls. The harbour is ſafe againſt all winds; but when the floods come down, no anchor can hold the ſhips, at which times they are forced to faſten them to each other along the walls, to avoid the fury of the torrent. The ſtreets of the city are narrow and irregular, but well paved; the natural rock in ſome places forming part of the pavement. The edifices are of the ancient kind, but handſome and built with ſtone. The churches are ſtately, and ſome even magnificent, particularly the cathedral. There are here five pariſhes, nine monaſteries, four nunneries, eight chapels, four hoſpitals, and a houſe of mercy for relieving thoſe in diſtreſs. The number of inhabitants is computed at about thirty thouſand. The chief article of commerce is wine; and the inhabitants of near half the ſhops are coopers. The merchants aſſemble daily in the chief ſtreet to tranſact buſineſs; and are protected from the ſun by awnings hung acroſs from the oppoſite houſes.

Coimbra is a very ancient city, pleaſantly ſeated on the north ſide of the river Mundega, over which it has a good bridge of 29 arches. The walls of the city are lofty, and have four handſome gates, adorned with many towers and turrets, and the buildings are ſtately though ancient, eſpecially the palace, which ſtill retains ſome marks of its former ſplendor. The city is inhabited by about five thouſand families, and has ſeven pariſh churches, and five

monaſteries, one of which called the convent of St. Cruz, or of the Holy Croſs, is a large and noble ſtructure, and inhabited by none but noblemen, who embrace the order of St. Auguſtin. Here are alſo five nunneries, an univerſity which ſometimes contains three thouſand ſtudents, and is the moſt celebrated ſeminary of learning in the whole kingdom; a houſe of mercy, and a noble hoſpital.

Santarem, or Santerein a corruption from St. Irene, who is held in great veneration there, is a very ancient city ſituated on a high hill cloſe by the Tagus. On the ſouth ſide it has a deep valley, with a ſteep winding aſcent from the town, and on the north is a craggy ſolid rock altogether inacceſſible, from which the ancient Mooriſh inhabitants uſed to precipitate their ſtate priſoners: but on the weſt it faces a delightful plain covered with gardens, orchards, and fertile fields, that produce vaſt quantities of corn, oil, and a variety of fruits. The walls of the place are ſtrong, though very old. There are here thirteen pariſh churches, one of them collegiate; ſeven monaſteries, two nunneries, ſeveral chapels, two hoſpitals, and a houſe of mercy. The inhabitants, who amount to about three thouſand carry on a conſiderable trade on the river, and are laborious, warlike, and polite.

Portalegre is ſeated on the ſide of a high mountain, in the province of Alentejo, and is well walled, and defended by eight ſtrong towers, and an old caſtle. It has eight handſome gates, and is ſupplied with water by ten fountains, one of which flows with a conſtant ſtream out of nine mouths. The inhabitants, who here carry on a woollen manufacture, though of a mean ſort, amount to about three thouſand, who are divided into five pariſhes; and here are three monaſteries, two nunneries, nine chapels, one hoſpital, and a houſe of mercy.

The laſt place of importance in this kingdom we ſhall mention, is Elvas, which is ſix miles from the

river Coa, that divides Spain from Portugal. It was an ancient city of the Helvi, and from the number of inſcriptions ſtill to be found there, it appears to have been a conſiderable place under the Romans. The country about it is very pleaſant and fertile, and in particular produces abundance of oil. The city has a double wall and many towers, and a ſtrong caſtle. It may juſtly be eſteemed the ſtrongeſt fortreſs in all Portugal, it having ſeven baſtions, beſides demi-baſtions, and half-moons. Beſides the cathedral, there are four pariſh churches, three monaſteries, two nunneries, thirteen chapels, two hoſpitals, and a houſe of mercy. At a ſmall diſtance are the remains of a noble aqueduct, above ten miles long, and of a great height; eſpecially in ſome places, particularly where the ground runs low, it has no leſs than four arches, one over the other.

A

DESCRIPTION

OF

SWEDEN.

SWEDEN is a very extenſive country, bounded by Lapland on the north, by the dominions of Ruſſia towards the eaſt, by the Baltic Sea towards the ſouth, and by Denmark and Norway to the weſt: but there are a great number of barren mountains diſperſed over the country, from which fall innumerable rivers or rather torrents, few of which are navigable, on account of the rocks and cataracts that obſtruct their paſſage; and theſe form many great lakes, ſome of which are of conſiderable extent: if therefore abatements be made for the barren mountains, the large lakes, woods, heaths and marſhes, with which this country abounds, the habitable part will appear very ſmall.

Among theſe lakes, one named the Fetter is very remarkable. It ſeparates eaſt and weſt Gothland, extending above eighty miles from north to ſouth, and is above eighteen broad in the middle. Its water is very clear, and in ſome places ſo deep as not to be ſounded by a line of three hundred fathoms. This lake has but few iſlands, and is often diſturbed

by ſtorms, which ſometimes begin ſo ſuddenly, that the ſurface is agitated before the leaſt breath of wind is perceived; ſo that the cauſe ſeems to proceed from the bottom of the water; and it is not uncommon for boats in one part of the lake to be toſſed by a ſtorm, while others at a ſmall diſtance are in a perfect calm. Immediately before a ſtorm, while the ſky is yet clear, a noiſe is perceived in the lake like thunder, which Dr. Hearne tell us, he had often heard, and was always followed by tempeſt. Of this the inhabitants of Viſingſoe, an iſland in the middle of the lake, are more ſenſible than any others; for from that part of the iſland whence the wind will blow, they hear a confuſed noiſe like the firing of cannon, which when heard in the eaſt, is generally followed by hail and rain. All this is doubtleſs owing to ſubterraneous winds, and to theſe, together with thoſe from above, we may attribute the ſudden cracking of the ice in the ſpring, which one minute is ſtrong enough to bear horſes and ſledges, and the next is broken to pieces. A ſtrange noiſe in the waters, which precedes this ſudden eruption, warns travellers to make the beſt of their way; but thoſe that happen to be a great diſtance from land are immediately drowned, or float upon ſhoals of ice till they meet with relief; and what is ſtill more dangerous, the ice, with the leaſt blaſt of wind, ſometimes ſink to the bottom. The violent under currents obſerved in this lake are alſo very ſurpriſing, which directly oppoſing the winds and waves, give the fiſhermen a great deal of trouble. From theſe as well as from its unfathomable depth, and ſubterraneous winds, it is ſuppoſed to have a communication under ground with another lake called Venner, about forty miles to the weſtward.

Cataracts, as we have already obſerved, are frequent in the rivers of Sweden; but the moſt famous of theſe is within a few leagues of Gottenburg; where a river, which iſſues from the lake Venner,

falls down a prodigious high precipice into a deep pit, with a terrible noiſe, and with ſuch violence, that large maſts which are floated down the river to Gottenburg, if they pitch endways, frequently dive ſo far under water, that ſome are ſaid to be half an hour, others three quarters, and ſome a whole hour or more, before they riſe again to the ſurface. Many attempts have been made to ſound the depth of this hole, with lines of ſeveral hundred fathoms, but to no purpoſe.

The ſoil of Sweden, where capable of cultivation, is tolerably fruitful, though ſeldom above half a foot deep, and therefore is frequently ploughed by a young woman and an ox. Indeed it is generally beſt where there is leaſt of it, that is, in the little ſpaces between the rocks; and frequently the barren land being enriched by the aſhes of trees burnt on the places where they grow, and the ſeed raked among the aſhes, produces a plentiful crop, without farther cultivation, The country does not, however, produce corn ſufficient for the ſupport of the inhabitants, who are obliged to have great quantities imported from Livonia, and the parts of Germany bordering on the Baltic ſea: and the poor in many places are obliged frequently to live on bread made of the bark of birch-trees, ground and mixed with flour.

As winter in this northern climate commonly begins very early; ſo it is no ſooner ended than it is immediately ſucceeded by ſummer, little or no ſpace being left for ſpring. and the productions of the earth are here more ſpeedy in their growth than in more ſouthern countries. The heat in ſummer is ſaid to be ſometimes ſo intenſe as to ſet the woods in a flame, which ſpreads many leagues, and can ſcarcely be ſtopped, till it meets with ſome lake or very large plain: but theſe conflagrations may probably be occaſioned by the careleſſneſs of thoſe who burn the woods, in order to enrich the land with the

aſhes, and which being now contrary to law, they may perhaps by this pretence ſcreen themſelves from ſuffering the penalty. During the ſummer, which laſts but about three months, the fields are clothed with a variety of flowers, and the whole country overſpread with ſtrawberries, raſberries, bilberries, and the like, which grow upon every rock. In their gardens, melons are in dry years brought to perfection; but apricots, peaches, and other wall fruit, are almoſt as ſcarce as oranges. They have cherries of ſeveral ſorts, and ſome tolerably good, which cannot be ſaid of their apples, pears, and plumbs, which are neither common or well taſted: but they have plenty of all kinds of roots, which greatly contribute to the nouriſhment of the inhabitants.

The ſun in the midſt of ſummer is at Stockholm eighteen hours and a half above the horizon, and for ſome weeks affords a continual day. In the middle of winter the days are proportionably ſhort, the ſun being up only five hours and a half, but the abſence of that great luminary is ſupplied by the moon, the whiteneſs of the ſnow, and the clearneſs of the ſky, ſo that travelling by night is as uſual as by day; and journeys are as frequently begun in the evening as in the morning The want of the ſun's heat is repaired by ſtoves within doors, and warm furs abroad; inſtead of which the meaner ſort uſe ſheep-ſkins with the wool on, and ſuch other defences from the weather; and are generally better provided with clothing ſuitable to their condition, than the common people in the milder climates of Europe. Though when any neglect or failure happens, it uſually proves fatal, and occaſions the loſs of the noſe, or ſome other member, and ſometimes of life; unleſs the uſual method of expelling the froſt be applied, when it has ſeized any part, which is to remain in the cold, and to rub the part affected with ſnow, till the blood returns to it again.

The cattle, as in other northern countries, are generally ſmall, nor can the breed be improved by bringing in larger from abroad, for they ſoon degenerate; becauſe in ſummer, the graſs is much leſs nouriſhing, than in the places from whence they came; and in winter they are uſually half ſtarved for want of fodder, which often falls ſo very ſhort, that the people are forced to unthatch the houſes to keep their cattle alive. The coarſe wool of their ſheep is only fit to make clothing for the peaſants: however, their horſes, eſpecially thoſe of Finland, are hardy, vigorous, ſtrong, ſure-footed, and trot nimbly, which is of great uſe to the people, on account of the length of the winter, and the fitneſs of theſe horſes for ſledges, their only carriages in that ſeaſon; and the ſoldiers pretend, that their horſes are able to break a body of the beſt German horſe.

Bears, elks, deers, and hares are hunted for their fleſh; as are wolves, foxes, wild-cats, &c. for their furs and hides. The inhabitants hunt with leſs ceremony than is uſed in other places, taking all advantages of ſhooting their game, at which they are generally very dexterous. They have but few parks, and thoſe meanly ſtocked, the charge of feeding deer all winter, exceeding the profit. There are no rabbits here, but what are brought from abroad, and kept tame. In winter the foxes and ſquirrels become grey, and the hares as white as ſnow.

Wild and tame fowl are very plentiful and good, except ſuch as feed on fiſh. The moſt common are keders and orras, the former of the ſize of a turkey, and the other of a hen; as alſo partridges, and a bird ſomewhat reſembling them called yerpers. In winter, are taken numbers of ſmall birds, as black birds, thruſhes, and ſydenſcawns, the laſt are of the ſize of fieldfares, but better meat; they are ſuppoſed to

come from Lapland, and have very beautiful feathers, ſome of which are tipped with ſcarlet. They have but few wood pigeons, on account of the hawks, and have no houſe-pigeons, except ſuch as are kept tame. Eagles, hawks, and other rapacious fowls abound moſt in the northern and deſert parts.

The many lakes of this country afford a variety of fiſh, as ſalmon, pike, trout, perch, tench, eels, and many ſorts unknown in other countries, of which the moſt numerous is the ſtreamling, a fiſh leſs than a pilchard, taken in great quantities, ſalted in barrels, and diſtributed all over the country. Theſe lakes are alſo of great uſe for the convenience of carriage by boats in ſummer, and in ſledges by winter. Beſides, in them, and on the ſea-coaſt, are almoſt innumerable iſlands of different ſizes, of which there are in Sweden above 6000 that are inhabited: the reſt are either bare rocks or covered with woods.

A great part of the country is taken up with woods and foreſts. The trees, which moſtly conſiſt of pines, fir, beech, alder, and a few oaks, grow in many places almoſt cloſe together, and lying to rot where they fall, the woods are ſcarce paſſable. Theſe, however, afford a plentiful and cheap firing, and being generally very ſtrait and tall, are eaſily converted into timber.

Of the mines in Sweden, there is one of ſilver, into which the workmen are let down in baſkets to the firſt floor, which is 105 fathoms under ground. The roof is as high as a church, ſupported by vaſt arches of oak: thence the deſcent is by ladders or baſkets to the loweſt mine, which is above 40 fathoms deeper.

The copper mine is about 80 fathoms deep, and of great extent; but is ſubject to damage by the falling in of the roof; yet that is ſometimes recompenſed by the abundance of ore yielded by the ruined pillars. The occaſion of theſe falls is aſcribed to

throwing the earth and ſtones brought out of the mine upon the ground over it, by which means the pillars become overcharged and give way. The copper annually made out of this mine amounts to the value of about 200,000l. but a fourth part of this copper belongs to the king.

There are great numbers of iron mines and forges, eſpecially in the mountainous parts, where the people have the convenience of water-falls to turn their mills. Theſe mines not only ſupply the country; but there is yearly exported iron to the value of 300,000l.

The inhabitants, from their breathing a healthful, dry, and ſharp air, enjoy a vigorous conſtitution, which being confirmed by a hardy education, coarſe diet, and hard lodgings, enables them to endure whatever uneaſy circumſtances befal them, better than thoſe who are born in a more moderate climate, and are brought up with greater ſoftneſs and indulgence. Thus they ſeem better qualified for a life of labour and fatigue, than for the cultivation of the arts.

The nobility for the moſt part apply themſelves to a military life, in which they are more famous for their courage, and enduring hard-ſhips, than for their ſtratagems. They have a graceful deportment, and make the beſt appearance they are able, endeavouring to gain reſpect by the extraordinary number of their attendants, the magnificence of their houſes, and the richneſs of their apparel, rather than by the plentifulneſs of their tables, or other occaſions leſs liable to attract the obſervation of the public. They ſeldom or never accept of any employments in the church, or deſcend to the practice of law or phyſic, or the exerciſe of any trade.

The common ſoldiers endure cold, hunger, long marches, and fatigue to admiration. The peaſants, when ſober, are very obſequious and reſpectful; but drink makes them mad and ungovernable. Moſt of

them live in a very poor condition, and are taught by neceſſity to practiſe ſeveral arts in a rude manner, as making their ſhoes, clothes, the ſeveral inſtruments of huſbandry, and other neceſſaries, which they cannot ſpare money to buy.

The women when young have generally fair complexions, tolerable features, and are well ſhaped; they are fruitful, and ſeldom fail of having a numerous iſſue: but they are no where made greater drudges; for the meaner ſort, beſides the ordinary offices of the ſex, are put to plough, and threſh out the corn, to row in boats, and to bear burdens at the building of houſes, and on other occaſions.

Marriages are here intirely governed by the will of the parents, and founded ſo much upon intereſt, that the inclination of the parties is little regarded. The nation is not much troubled with the extravagances of lovers, and therefore ſtealing of matches is ſcarce heard of in an age; nor can the church give a licence to marry without the publication of the bans. However, domeſtic quarrels rarely happen, and more ſeldom become public, the huſbands being as apt to keep the authority in their hands, as the wives by nature, cuſtom, or neceſſity, are inclined to be obedient: divorces and other ſeparations between man and wife ſeldom happen, except among the inferior ſort, when the innocent party is allowed to marry again. Couſingermans are not permitted to marry with out the king's diſpenſation, which is rarely refuſed.

Their wedding entertainments are generally more pompous and expenſive than the people are able to afford; for the exceſs of that one day frequently involves them in inconveniences that laſt many years. This is alſo obſervable in their funeral ſolemnities, which are uſually accompanied with more jollity and feaſting than is ſuitable to the occaſion. To gain time to prepare for them, they ſometimes remove the corpſe to a vault within, or adjoining to their

churches, where it remains unburied for a conſiderable time.

Sweden has but few cities of conſequence except Stockholm, the capital of the kingdom, ſituated on the lake Meller, near the Baltic. The acceſs to it by ſea is extremely difficult, from the great number of ſmall iſlands that lie before the entrance of the harbour, and ſecure it from any inſults on that ſide. It is neither walled nor fortified by art; for it is ſtrong by nature, having a dangerous ſea on one ſide, and the lake Meller on the other, and on the land ſide are ſuch hills and rocks, that it can only be approached by certain paſſes, that may be defended by a ſmall force againſt a numerous army. This city is in a manner the ſtaple of Sweden, to which moſt of the goods of their own growth, as copper, iron, wire, pitch, tar, maſts, deals, &c. are brought to be exported The greateſt part of the commodities imported from abroad, come to this port, where the haven, though difficult of entrance, is capable of receiving 1000 ſhips, and thoſe of the largeſt ſize lie cloſe to the quay, which is near an Engliſh mile in length, where they are ſo ſecure from the wind, that they need neither anchors nor cables to hold them: however, the harbour is not only blocked up by the ice four or five months in the year; but the different winds neceſſary to carry a fleet out, require a great deal of time, and there is no tide to help them, ſo that an enemy might deſtroy the whole coaſt, before the Swedes could put to ſea; on which account the royal navy is always ſtationed at Carelſcroon. The city extends over the whole iſland of Stockholm, which is only about a mile and a half in circumference: but the ſuburbs on the continent, with the buildings on the other iſlands, render it a conſiderable place.

Stockholm was about three hundred years ago only a barren iſland, with two or three cottages of fiſhermen; but upon the building of a caſtle upon it,

to ſtop the inroads of the Ruſſians, and the removal of the court thither, it by degrees ſurpaſſed the more ancient cities, and has now all that is neceſſary to render it one of the fineſt cities in the north; for beſides the iſland of Stockholm, there are five other ſmall iſlands built upon, and joined to it by bridges; theſe are Ridderſholm, Konningſholm, Hoglandſholm, Schipſholm, and Ludduggarſland, which are frequently conſidered as part of the city: in the firſt is the cloyſter church, as it is called, and ſeveral fine gardens. Hoglandſholm is the quarter of the mechanics. In Schipſholm is the court of admirality, the arſenal, and magazines of naval ſtores. Ludduggarſland is covered with pleaſure houſes and gardens, and here alſo is the king's park, menageries, &c. The ſouth ſuburb on the continent, which is joined to the city by a bridge, has a noble exchange, and contains the houſes of the merchants; and the other ſuburb to the north of the city is joined to it by two bridges.

In the iſland of Stockholm, is the ſenate houſe, the court of chancery, the criminal college, a noble library, and nine churches, built with brick and covered with copper. The ſenate houſe is a very ſtately pile, and one of the fineſt edifices in the kingdom: it is, as it were, but one large pavilion, adorned on the outſide with marble ſtatues and columns, and within with pictures and ſculptures; eſpecially two large halls where the nobility meet. Next to this palace is that of the lord high chancellor; and a little farther are two other palaces belonging to noblemen, all built in the ſame taſte, and covered with copper; as are likewiſe ſeveral other of the houſes of the nobility. The bank is alſo a noble pile of building.

Among the churches, that of St. Nicholas is the largeſt and moſt magnificent, it being ſupported by marble pillars, covered with copper, and adorned with a great number of tombs of different kinds of

marble. The ſtatue of St George on horſeback trampling on a dragon is much admired. This is the hiſtory of his delivering Cleodolinda, daughter of the king of Lydia, and twelve other devoted virgins, from the fury of the dragon; and Cleodolinda is ſeen kneeling, with her hands lifted up, returning thanks to their preſerver. Over the altar is a cabinet finely gilt, on which is a table of a pyramidal form, with five ſhelves of maſſy ſilver, wherein are the following hiſtories in baſſo relievo: on the firſt is the nativity of Chriſt; on the ſecond, his laſt ſupper: on the third, his crucifixion: on the fourth, his burial; and on the fifth, his reſurrection. Theſe are all of ſilver, and on the top is a ſmall ſtatue of the ſame metal, about two feet high, repreſenting the aſcenſion. There are other ſilver ſtatues of the ſame height accompanying them, as that of Moſes with the two tables, John the baptiſt with a croſs and a lamb, and the evangeliſts with the animals uſually aſſigned them by ſtatuaries and painters, all of maſſy ſilver, weighing together about thirty thouſand ounces. On the right ſide of the altar is a large picture of paradiſe and hell, reaching from the pavement to the roof; and on the left ſide of the altar is painted the crucifixion. This church is very rich in plate, and has particularly a cup of beaten gold embelliſhed with jewels, which, according to Mr. Motraye, is worth no leſs than forty thouſand crowns. The other churches do not appear to have any thing remarkable; only they are generally covered with copper, have very lofty ſpires, and inſtead of bells have very muſical chimes in their ſteeples, which play upon feſtivals, and other ſolemn occaſions.

The city on one ſide affords a proſpect over the lake, and on the other over the harbour, which being almoſt encloſed by rocks, reſembles another lake, the water of which is ſo little brackiſh that it may be drank, which is owing to the great

quantity of freſh water that runs into it from the lake.

Moſt of the burghers houſes are built with brick, except in the ſuburbs, where they are of timber, and are therefore in danger of fire, which when it once gets a head, deſtroys all before it. They ſometimes ſend the dimenſions of the houſe they intend to build to Finland; where the walls and ſeveral ſeparations are built of pieces of timber laid upon one another, and joined at the corners; and afterwards marked, taken down, and ſent by water to Stockholm, they are to be ſet up and finiſhed; and when they are kept in good repair they are warmer, cleaner, and more healthful than thoſe of either brick or ſtone.

The next city we ſhall mention is Upſal, which is ſituated on the river Sala, forty-two miles to the north-weſt of Stockholm. 'Tis a very ancient city, and was formerly the capital of the north, and the ſeat of the king. 'Tis ſtill an univerſity, and the ſee of an archbiſhop. It is divided into two parts by the river, which is here pretty broad, and ſo hard frozen up in February, that a fair is annually kept upon it. The town is large, but without any conſiderable fortifications, however, on a ſteep hill above the city is a beautiful caſtle, built after the Italian manner, that has a noble proſpect over the city, which it commands, and of the whole country.

The buildings of the city are generally of wood, except the palace of the archbiſhop, and the houſes of ſome of the principal citizens, which are of brick. Travellers uſually take notice of the cathedral, the library, and phyſic garden, as moſt worthy of obſervation. The cathedral is a fine piece of Gothic architecture, 747 feet long; 140 broad, and 250 feet high from the pavement to the vaulted roof, which is covered with copper; this is eſteemed the fineſt church in the whole kingdom. Here are the

tombs of many of the kings and queens of Sweden, ſeveral of which are adorned with ſtatues of white marble.

Lunden was formerly a conſiderable city, in which were twenty-two churches, and an univerſity that has been ſuppreſſed. It is but a few miles diſtance from the ſea-ſhore, and ſtands oppoſite to Copenhagen, from which it is about twenty-four miles diſtant to the eaſt. The cathedral of St. Lawrence is a magnificent ſtructure with a high ſpire, which ſerves the ſailors for a land-mark: The altar is very beautiful, but what moſt engages the attention of ſtrangers is its curious clock, which not only ſhews the hour, day, month and year, together with all the feſtivals in the year; but every hour two horſemen come forth, and encounter each other, giving ſo many blows as the hammer ſtrikes upon the bell: then a door opens, diſcovering the Virgin Mary ſitting on a throne, with Chriſt in her arms, and the wiſe men paying their homage to him, two trumpeters ſounding all the while.

There are a few other cities in this kingdom; but we do not find they contain any thing very extraordinary, and worthy the notice of the curious reader.

The crown of Sweden was anciently elective; but the great Guſtavus I. who aſcended the throne in 1523, and introduced the reformation, rendered it hereditary; Charles XI. made Sweden an abſolute monarchy, and his ſon Charles XII. ſtrained his authority to the higheſt degree of deſpotic power; but upon his death, an immediate change was made in the government, and on the acceſſion of his ſiſter Ulrica Eleonora, in 1718, to the crown, ſhe renounced all abſolute and deſpotic power, and the government was reſtored to its ancient form. In 1720, at her deſire, her huſband, the prince of Heſſe, was elected king; and at his death, the preſent king was raiſed to the throne: but the power of the

ſovereign of Sweden is in many reſpects as limited as that of a doge of Venice; for he has ſcarcely any of the perogatives of royalty. The ſtates of the kingdom, who concur in the making of laws, are compoſed of the deputies from the nobility, the clergy, the burghers, and the peaſants: the concurrence of theſe ſeem indeed neceſſary to the preſervation of the liberties of the people; and not inconſiſtent with the juſt rights of the monarch: but the king is alſo obliged to ſubmit to the determinations of the ſenate, who have not only authority to give their advice in all affairs of importance; but in ſome caſes to admoniſh, and even to over rule him, who is not at liberty to tranſact any buſineſs of conſequence, without the concurrence of the majority of them. They are indeed choſen by the king; but their oath rather expreſſes their fidelity to the kingdom than to the king. Their office is for life, and as the people look upon them as the protectors of the liberty and privileges of the nation, the ſovereign power and majeſty of the ſtate is properly lodged in that body; both war and peace depend on them, and therefore, not only attempts upon their perſons, but defaming them is accounted treaſon.

The laws of Sweden are reduced to a ſmall compaſs, and compiled into a body: hence the expence of law-ſuits are extremely moderate. Titles to eſtates are here rendered ſecure by the regiſters that are kept of all ſales and alterations; the purchaſer running the hazard of having an after bargain take place of his, if he omits recording his tranſaction in the proper court. Treaſon, murder, adultery, burning of houſes, and the like henious crimes, are puniſhed with death; but the puniſhment of robbery and ſtealing is perpetual ſlavery. The criminal is condemned to work all his life for the king at the fortifications or other drudgery, and has always an iron collar about his neck, with a bow coming over

his head, to which a bell is faſtened, that rings as he goes along.

If a party be killed in a duel, the ſurvivor is puniſhed with death and the memory of both is rendered infamous. If neither be killed, they are both impriſoned for two years, and obliged to live on bread and water: they are alſo fined 1000 crowns; or one year's impriſonment and 2000 crowns. On the other hand, reparation of honour, in caſe of an affront, is referred to the national court, where recantation, and public begging of pardon is uſually inflicted.

The Lutheran religion has been eſtabliſhed in Sweden ever ſince the reformation; and no other is tolerated. All orders of men agree in a conſtant attendance on divine ſervice, without any nice enquiries into diſputable points, either of their own tenets, or thoſe of other religions. The church is governed by one archbiſhop, and ten biſhops, whoſe revenues are very moderate. There are two univerſities, one at Upſal, and the other at Abo, a town in Finland. In the former, which is the principal, the ordinary number of ſtudents amount to about ſeven or eight hundred, fifty of whom are maintained by the king, and a few others were formerly ſupported by the nobility; but thoſe in both univerſities who cannot ſubſiſt of themſelves, ſpend the vacation in begging charity in the dioceſe to which they belong, and uſually receive corn, butter, dried fiſh, or fleſh, upon which they ſubſiſt at the univerſity the reſt of the year. In each dioceſe there is a free-ſchool, where boys are fitted for the univerſity, and other ſchools to which children are ſent to learn to read, write, and ſay their prayers; and few want this degree of education.

AN

ACCOUNT

OF THE

PELEW ISLANDS.

SITUATED IN THE

WESTERN PART OF THE PACIFIC OCEAN.

Compoſed from the journals and communications of Capt. HENRY WILSON, and ſome of his Officers, who, in Auguſt 1783, *were there ſhipwrecked, in the Antelope, a packet belonging to the Engliſh Eaſt India Company.*

THE Antelope, a packet of near 300 tons burthen, in the ſervice of the honourable Engliſh Eaſt India Company, under the command of Capt. Henry Wilſon, having arrived at Macoa in the month of June 1783, the captain received orders from the company's ſupercargoes to refit his ſhip with all poſſible ſpeed; which being compleated, on Sunday the 20th of July, about eleven o'clock in the forenoon, he received his diſpatches, and the ſhip being ready for ſea, he took leave of the council; and about half paſt three o'clock went on board, accom-

panied by Meſſrs, Brown, Lane, Bruce, and Peach, as alſo Mr Morgan, ſurgeon; and after the Captain had paid the ſixteen Chineſe men (with which they had been allowed to augment their ſhip's company) the advance money uſual on theſe occaſions, they weighed anchor, and their friends went on ſhore, whom they ſaluted at going away with nine guns. The weather becoming unſettled and hazy, at nine o'clock in the evening they anchored in 7 fathom water. And as in the courſe of this narrative we ſhall find the ſhip's company at times collectively and ſeparately engaged, it will not be improper in the outſet to mention the names of the Europeans who were in the Antelope, with their particular diſtinction and ſituation on board.

Names.	Names.
Henry Wilſon, Commander.	Albert Pierſon, Quarter maſter.
Philip Benger,* Chief Mate.	Godfry Minks,* Ditto.
Peter Barker, Second Mate.	Thomas Dulton, Captain's Steward.
John Cummin, Third Mate.	John Cooper, Seaman.
John Sharp, Surgeon.	William Roberts, Ditto.
Arthur William Devis, Paſſenger.	Mathias Wilſon, Ditto, brother to the Captain.
John Blanch, Gunner.	Nicholas Tyacke, Ditto.
William Harvey, Boatſwain.	James Bluitt, Ditto.
John Polkinghorn, Carpenter.	Thomas Wilſon,* Ditto.
John Meale, Cooper and Steward.	William Stewart, Ditto.
Richard Jenkins, Carpenter's Mate.	Madan Blanchard, Ditto.
James Swift, Cook.	Thomas Whitfield, Ditto.
Richard Sharp, Midſhipman.	William Cobbledick, Ditto.
Henry Wilſon, Junior, Do. ſon to the Captain.	Zachariah Allen, Ditto.
John Wedgebrough and Robert White, two youths from Chriſt's Hoſpital, apprentices and acting as midſhipmen.	Thomas Caſtles, Ditto.
	Dedrick Windler, Ditto.
	Thomas Roſe,* Linguiſt, a native of Bengal, calling himſelf a Portugueſe.

* The names thus * marked, are the only men at this time known with certainty to be dead.

July 21ſt. At five o'clock in the morning they again weighed anchor, and ſet ſail, having a fine breeze from the E. N. E. and between ſix and ſeven o'clock their pilot left them. About nine o'clock being got to ſome diſtance from the land, they met with a very high ſea, which obliged them to lay to, in order to ſecure their cattle, and other live ſtock, as alſo their anchors, cables, and harbour-rigging. About eleven o'clock they made ſail again, and by a very good obſervation, at noon, were in latitude 21° 28' north; at the ſame time could juſt ſee the land bearing north, at the diſtance of about eleven leagues, as near as they could judge, the weather being rather hazy. In the afternoon the laſhings of the booms broke, and they fell to leeward, which obliged them to keep the ſhip before the wind until they were replaced and ſecured, which having done, they reſumed their courſe. In the evening, they obſerving it to lighten very ſtrongly from the ſouthward, they cloſe reefed their top-ſails, expecting it to blow from that quarter.

Next day the weather continued moderate but cloudy; and they had a great ſea from the eaſtward, which made the ſhip labour, ſo as to oblige them to pump every two hours. The boatſwain and carpenter were both taken ill in the night with a cold and a ſlight fever. In the afternoon a ſail was ſeen to the S. E. which they took to be a Portugueſe veſſel bound to Macoa. The wind veered round to the ſouthward this day; no obſervation of latitude.

July 23d. The wind ſoutherly, with cloudy weather and ſome light ſqualls and rain. They noticed this forenoon ſeveral riplings in the water, as if in a tide or current; the ſea was ſomewhat fallen, and the ſhip made leſs water. No obſervation of latitude this day the ſun being in their zenith.

July 24th. The weather was very ſqually, with rain and a great ſwell. The boatſwain and carpenter were much recovered, ſo as to be able to go about

their duty, in ſecuring the ports and preparing the ſhip for bad weather. By an indifferent obſervation at noon, they found themſelves in latitude 19° 29' north.

July 25th. The weather continued very dark and cloudy, with thunder, lightning, and hard rain, ſo that the ſhip was in a manner deluged, and every one wet and uncomfortable. About three o'clock in the afternoon they ſaw the appearance of land from the deck, being the Baſhee Iſlands, bearing from S. E. to E. N. E. At ſix o'clock the northermoſt iſland bore N. E. by E. At night the weather being but indifferent and hazy, ſo that they could not keep ſight of the land, they ſhortened ſail and lay to till the morning.

July 26th. When at day break they again ſaw the land to leeward of them, being the ſame they had ſeen the night before; from this circumſtance they concluded there was no current; and as ſoon as the light opened a little more upon them, they made ſail and bore away before the wind, to go round the northermoſt iſland, which they did at about four or five miles diſtance. The weather being hazy when they firſt ſaw the land, they had but a very imperfect view of the iſlands. The firſt appeared to be long and tolerably even. The ſecond was likewiſe long, of a pretty equal height, except in two or three places, where it ſeemed to riſe into hills: near the middle of it was one very remarkable, from its being in ſhape like a China or Tartar woman's hat. The third iſland ſhewed like two rugged topped mountains, joined together by low land. The fourth was a high, large, double-peaked rock, appearing to have little ſoil or wood upon it. The fifth was very high and uneven, devoid of wood, except a few green buſhes towards its ſummit. There were no ſigns of inhabitants upon any of theſe iſlands, and the weather being ſqually, our people ſoon loſt ſight of them; at noon they were in latitude 21°. 14'.

north, by obſervation, when, having run about fifteen leagues to the eaſtward of the iſlands, they hauled up more to the ſouthward, in hopes to get into ſmoother water, and better weather than they had hitherto met with ſince leaving Macoa. Soon after noon the man at the maſt head diſcovered the foretop-maſt to be ſprung; they immediately took in the ſails, and got down the topgallant-maſt, and prepared to get down the top maſt, but were obliged to deſiſt on account of the weather, until the morning, when it proving fair, with tolerable ſmooth water, all hands went buſily to work to get up a new fore-top-maſt, and to dry and air the ſhip, as alſo to ſecure what cattle and ſtock remained, much having periſhed in the rains and bad weather. The next morning alſo being fine and fair; this opportunity was embraced to open the ports, and waſh and cleanſe the ſhip below, as well as to overhaul and clean their ſmall arms, and give the officers inſtructions for the voyage. In the evening there was very hard rain, with variable winds.

But the ſucceeding day, the wind being favourable, gave them an opportunity of examining and drying ſome of their proviſion, particularly ſome Chineſe hams and dry fiſh, which conſtituted part of their victualling, and had got damp in the exceſſive rains. They ſaw a great quantity of fiſh ſwimming about the ſhip, but could not catch any, as they would not take the baits. No rains during the laſt twenty-four hours, but the next morning the weather became overcaſt and they were again viſited with rain in the evening, which continued very hard all night and the ſucceeding day, with variable winds, ſo that they made very little progreſs on their voyage. The next morning was more moderate, and towards noon the weather cleared up and they got an obſervation, by which they found their latitude was 16° 25′ north. In the afternoon it fell calm, which gave them the means of trying the cur-

rent, which they found to ſet to the E. N. E at the rate of half a mile an hour. In the evening Capt. Wilſon exerciſed ſome of the Chineſe men with rowing in the jolly-boat for an hour or two, to teach them to uſe an oar when needful. The following day being fair, and the wind moderate, all were again employed in clearing and cleaning the ſhip and ſetting up the rigging. In the afternoon they had an obſervation for the longitude, by the diſtance of the ſun and moon, by which they found themſelves in 126 degrees and a half eaſt of Greenwich. The following morning being alſo fair, divine ſervice was performed upon deck; a ceremony never omitted on Sundays when the weather would allow of it. In the afternoon they got another obſervation for the longitude, which confirmed that taken the preceeding day. At night they met with freſh gales of wind, ſqually weather, and much rain, which continued moſt part of the next day; towards the evening of which they ſaw numbers of birds and fiſh, likewiſe ſome drifts of pieces of wood or bamboo, they therefore altered their courſe more to the ſouthward, and went under an eaſy ſail, keeping a good look out, until morning, when it being very tempeſtuous they brought to, and handed their topſails, which before had been cloſe reeft. The weather continuing to blow a ſtorm, they could ſhow but very little ſail, being obliged to lay to under the ſtorm ſtay-ſails, which continued till near noon on the 7th; the ſtorm then abating, and the weather clearing up, they got an obſervation for the latitude, by which they found themſelves in 10° 16'. north. The afternoon the wind was ſoutherly, and freſh gales, but dry, ſo that they were able the following morning to clean between decks, and alſo to fumigate the ſhip with gunpowder. The cattle had all periſhed in the laſt ſtorm except one bullock; the ſhe-goat alſo, having kidded in this bad weather, died together with her young. In the afternoon the weather

became more moderate, ſo that they were able to make ſail and to proceed on their voyage; and the next day the weather was ſo fine they were enabled to open their ports to air and dry the ſhip below, as alſo again to examine their proviſions and ſtores, and get every thing into order. They were now proceeding chearfully on their voyage, fondly flattering themſelves the adverſe weather, and the anxieties it had awakened, were all at an end, when they were ſuddenly overwhelmed with thoſe misfortunes which are related in the following narrative.

Aug. 10. The wind having freſhened after midnight, the ſky became overcaſt, with much lightning, thunder, and rain. The chief mate having the watch upon deck, had lowered the top-ſails, and was going to reef them with the people upon duty, not thinking it neceſſary to call the hands out or acquaint the captain, who had only quitted the deck at twelve o'clock; Mr. Benger judging from the thunder that the weather would break and clear up, and only prove a ſlight ſquall. The people being upon the yards reefing the ſails, the man who was on the look-out called breakers! yet ſo ſhort was the notice, that the call of breakers had ſcarce reached the officer upon deck before the ſhip ſtruck. The horror and diſmay this unhappy event threw every body into was dreadful: the captain, and all thoſe who were below in their beds, ſprang upon the deck in an inſtant, anxious to know the cauſe of this ſudden ſhock to the ſhip, and the confuſion above; a moment convinced them of their diſtreſſed ſituation; the breakers along-ſide, through which the rocks made their appearance preſented the moſt dreadful ſcene, and left no room for doubt. The ſhip taking a heel, in leſs than an hour filled with water as high as the lower deck hatchways; during this tremendous interval, the people thronged round the captain, and earneſtly requeſted to be directed what to do, beſeeching him to give orders and they would im-

mediately execute them. Orders were in conſequence inſtantly given to ſecure the gunpowder, ammunition, and ſmall arms, and that the bread, and ſuch other proviſions as would ſpoil by wet, ſhould be brought upon deck and ſecured by ſome covering from the rain; while others were directed to cut away the mizen-maſt, the main and fore top-maſt, and lower yards, to eaſe the ſhip and prevent her overſetting, of which they thought there was ſome hazard, and that every thing ſhould be done to preſerve her as long as poſſible (the ſails having all been clewed up as ſoon as the ſhip ſtruck.) The boats were hoiſted out and filled with proviſion and water, together with a compaſs in each, ſome ſmall arms, and ammunition; and two men were placed in each boat, with directions to keep them under the lee of the ſhip, and be careful they were not ſtaved, and to be ready to receive their ſhip-mates in caſe the veſſel ſhould break to pieces by the daſhing of the waves and the violence of the wind, it then blowing a ſtorm. Every thing that could be thought expedient in ſo diſtreſsful and trying an occaſion was executed with a readineſs and obedience hardly ever exceeded. The people all now aſſembled aft, the quarter-deck lying higheſt out of the water, the quarter-boards afforded ſome little ſhelter from the ſea and rain; here, after contemplating a few moments their wretched ſituation, the captain endeavoured to revive their drooping ſpirits, which began to ſink through anxiety and fatigue, by reminding them that ſhipwreck was a misfortune to which thoſe who navigated the ocean were always liable; that theirs indeed was more difficult, from happening in an unknown and unfrequented ſea, but that this conſideration ſhould rouſe their moſt active attention, as much muſt depend on themſelves to be extricated from their diſtreſs; that when theſe misfortunes happened, they were often rendered more dreadful than they otherwiſe would be by the deſpair and diſagree-

ment of the crew ; to avoid which, it was ſtrongly recommended to every individual not to drink any ſpirituous liquor. A ready conſent was given to this advice ; and, they being all wet and fatigued with exceſſive labour, it was thought adviſable to take ſome refreſhment, which to each perſon was a glaſs of wine and ſome biſcuit; after eating, a ſecond glaſs of wine was given them, and they now waited with the utmoſt anxiety the return of day, in hope of ſeeing land, for as yet they had not diſcovered any ; the third mate and one of the quarter maſters only in the momentary interval of a dreadful flaſh of lightning, imagined they had ſeen the appearance of land ahead of the ſhip. During theſe anxious moments, they endeavoured to conſole and cheer one another, and each was adviſed to clothe and prepare himſelf to quit the ſhip when neceſſity ſhould make that ſtep inevitable ; and herein the utmoſt good order and regularity was obſerved, not a man offering to take any thing but what truly belonged to himſelf, nor did any one of them either aſk for, or attempt to take a dram, or complain of negligence or miſconduct againſt the watch or any particular perſon. The dawn of day diſcovered to their view a ſmall iſland to the ſouthward, about three or four leagues diſtant, and ſoon after ſome other iſlands were ſeen to the eaſtward. They now felt apprehenſive on account of the inhabitants, of whoſe diſpoſitions they were ſtrangers; however, after manning the boats, and loading them in the beſt manner they could for the general good, they departed from the ſhip under the care of Mr. Benger, who, together with the people in them, were earneſtly requeſted to endeavour to obtain a friendly intercourſe with the inhabitants if they found any, and carefully to avoid any diſagreement unleſs reduced to the laſt neceſſity, as the fate of all might depend upon the firſt interview. As ſoon as the boats were gone, thoſe who remained went immediately to work to get the booms over-

board, in order to make a raft to ſecure themſelves, as the Antelope was hourly expected to go to pieces, and the utmoſt diſquietude was entertained for the ſafety of the boats, not only on account of the natives, but alſo of the weather, it continuing to blow very hard. But in the afternoon they perceived with inexpreſſible joy the boats coming off; a ſight the more welcome, as they were fearful from their long ſtay, they might have met with ſome diſaſter, either from the inhabitants, or the ſtorm: they were however happily relieved from this anxiety by their getting ſafe to the ſhip about four o'clock, having left the ſtores and five men on ſhore. They brought the welcome news that there was no appearance of inhabitants on the iſland where they had landed; that they had found a ſecure harbour well ſheltered from the weather, and alſo ſome freſh water. Every one now purſued their labour with renovated ſpirits to complete the raft, which was in great forwardneſs when the boats returned; this being completed, they took a ſecond refreſhment of bread and wine, each individual having ſtrictly conformed to the promiſe made to Captain Wilſon not to drink any ſtrong liquor. We muſt not omit here mentioning a melancholy accident which happened among the events of this diſaſtrous morning: ſoon after day-break the mizen-maſt being found near the ſhip's ſtern, and ſome of the rigging entangled in the mizen-chains, Godfry Minks went to cut it adrift, in doing which he unfortunately ſlipped and fell overboard, and although the boats, which were not then gone, went inſtantly to his aſſiſtance, he was unfortunately drowned, owing, as was ſuppoſed, to having encumbered himſelf with too many clothes, when he prepared himſelf, as before related, to be ready to quit the ſhip.

The raft being now completed, was loaded with as much proviſion and ſtores as it could carry, conſiſtently with the ſafety of the people who were to go on it. The pinnace and jolly-boat were likewiſe

filled with proviſion, ammunition, and ſmall arms, in which was placed their greateſt ſecurity. The people being ſtill anxiouſly employed in ſaving whatever they could, and the ſhip beginning to have a little motion from the riſing of the tide, there was great apprehenſion that the main-maſt would fall over the ſide, in which caſe it muſt have dropt on the raft, and deſtroyed it, and have rendered all their labours fruitleſs. The raft and pinnace being ready to depart, and the evening advancing, the boatſwain was deſired to go into the ſhip, and to wind his call, in order to alarm thoſe that were buſily employed below (and whom Captain Wilſon had repeatedly entreated to deſiſt) to go into the boats and raft, that they might endeavour to get on ſhore before night, and ſecure what they had already got out of the ſhip. And here it may be worth noticing, the great care and attention of the carpenter, who was ſo intent on ſaving what tools and ſtores he could, that he remained below after the pinnace and raft were departed, and Captain Wilſon was obliged to compel him to go into the jolly-boat, ſo anxious was he to provide and take with him whatever he thought might contribute to their future relief.

Thus with aching hearts, and deep melancholy, they quitted the Antelope, totally ignorant of their future deſtiny. The pinnace, with ſome of the ſtouteſt of the ſhip's crew, took the raft in tow; the jolly-boat alſo aſſiſted, by towing the pinnace till they had cleared the reef; after which, being too heavily laden to be of much farther aid, thoſe in the pinnace caſt looſe their rope, and the jolly-boat proceeded alone to the ſhore, where they arrived about eight o'clock at night, and found their companions who had been left in the morning. Theſe few men had not been idle, or unmindful of their fellow-ſufferers; having employed themſelves in clearing away a ſpot of ground, and had erected a ſmall tent with a ſail, in readineſs for their reception. The ſitua-

tion both of thoſe on the raft, as well as thoſe in the pinnace, was truly dreadful till they had cleared the reef, (which was more than half an hour;) by the great ſurf and ſpray of the ſea, the pinnace and raft were often out of ſight of each other; thoſe on the latter were obliged to tie themſelves, and cling to it with all their ſtrength, to prevent being waſhed off; and the ſhrieks of the Chineſe, leſs inured to the perils of an element they were then conflicting with, did not a little aggravate the horror of the ſcene.

Having cleared the reef, and got into the channel which flows between that and the iſlands, they found themſelves in deep water, and a leſs diſturbed ſea; they hoiſted the ſails of the pinnace, and got on; but as they approached the land, perceiving a ſtrong current, which ſet them much to leeward of the iſland where they had left the ſtores and people in the morning, they dropped their ſails and rowed. They found the current ſtill much ſtronger as they got nearer the ſhore, and though every man exerted his utmoſt ſtrength they ſtill continued to drop to leeward. Feeling now their inability to reſiſt the current, and the ſtrength of the rowers being almoſt exhauſted, it was judged for the ſafety of all, that the pinnace ſhould take the people from off the raft, and bring the raft to a grapnel during the night. Theſe additional men from the raft double banked the oars of the pinnace, and relieved the rowers, but at the ſame time they ſo crowded her, that ſhe could barely keep herſelf above water, being then cloſe under a rocky coaſt, in about ſixteen fathom water (as they afterwards better knew.) They were only able to advance ſlowly; but as they drew nearer to the iſland whither the others were gone before, the jolly-boat having unladen her cargo, Captain Wilſon with four people, was returning in her, to lighten the raft and pinnace and give them full aſſiſtance,

and it being dark, hailed the pinnace at a diſtance. Whether it was from the great fatigue the people had ſuſtained while on the raft, or from their voice and ſpirits being exhauſted, or from the ſudden joy of perceiving they were ſo near again to their comrades, but the halloo was anſwered in ſo ſhrill and unaccuſtomed a manner, that thoſe who were in the jolly-boat, who had previouſly heard the paddling of oars, ſuppoſed they were natives ; as the people who had remained on ſhore in the morning with the ſtores, had diſcovered, after the boats had left them, traces of ſome people having been lately upon the iſland, by ſeeing places where there had been fires, with ſome fiſh bones and pieces of cocoa-nut ſhells ſcattered about, that had not the appearance of having lain long there, theſe circumſtances inducing the jolly-boat's crew to conclude, that the return of the halloo came from a party of the natives, they precipitately returned back into the cove. The pinnace arriving ſoon after, all theſe alarms were diſſipated, and an univerſal joy ſpread itſelf over every countenance on ſeeing one another again on dry land. They ſhook hands together with the utmoſt cordiality, every one feeling thoſe emotions that could ill be expreſſed by the moſt forcible language. They got part of a cheeſe, ſome biſcuit, and a little water, for their ſupper ; and by means of diſcharging a piſtol, loaded with powder, into ſome match which they picked looſe to ſerve as tinder, they kindled a fire in the cove, where they dried their clothes, which were thoroughly wet, and ſlept on the ground alternately, under the covering of the tent which had been raiſed. The night proved very uncomfortable on many accounts ; the rain and wind were heavy, and the diſtreſs of ſituation not a little increaſed by the fear of the ſhip going to pieces, from the tempeſtuous weather, before they ſhould be able to ſave from her ſuch neceſſaries as might be

uſeful to them. They hauled their boats on ſhore, and ſet a watch, leſt they might happen to be ſurpriſed by any of the natives.

Aug. 11th. The conſtant perſpiration the people had been in, added to their being perpetually wet with the ſalt water, had produced an irritation on their ſkins, which, with the added friction of their clothes from ſevere labour, had excoriated them in a manner to make them moſt miſerably ſore. At dawn of day both the pinnace and jolly boat were ſent to the raft, to try and bring it up; but the wind blowing very hard, they were afraid to attempt moving it; they were, however, fortunate enough to get the remainder of the proviſion and ſails from it, and returned about noon.

The weather proving more moderate in the afternoon the boats were ſent to the wreck to bring away ſome rice, and other proviſion, as alſo to procure what neceſſaries they could for the people, who, from what has been before ſaid, ſtood in great need of them.

Thoſe who remained on ſhore were employed in drying their powder, and cleaning and fitting their arms for uſe, in caſe of need; and as the boats did not return till ten o'clock in the evening, it ſpread amongſt their companions much alarm for their ſafety, as the night came on with very heavy weather; nor indeed were their ſpirits rendered tranquil by their arrival, for the chief mate and crew who returned with the pinnace, brought the melancholy intelligence, that they did not conceive, from the badneſs of the weather, that the ſhip could hold together till morning, as ſhe was beginning to part, the bends or wales being ſtarted out of their places. The ideas which had been fondly nurſed, that when a calm ſucceeded there was a poſſibility ſhe might be floated and repaired, ſo as to return to Macoa, or ſome part of China, were by this account totally extinguiſhed. The proſpect now darkened round them,

fear pictured ſtrongly every danger, and hope could hardly find an inlet through which one ray of conſolation might ſhoot. They knew nothing of the inhabitants of that country were fate had thrown them; ignorant of their manners and diſpoſitions, as well as of the hoſtile ſcenes they might have to encounter for their ſafety; they found themſelves, by this ſudden accident, cut off at once from the reſt of the world, with little probability of their ever again getting away. Each individual threw back his remembrance to ſome dear object that affection had rivetted to his heart, who might be in vain looking out anxiouſly for the return of the father, the huſband, or the friend, whom there was ſcarcely the moſt diſtant chance of their ever ſeeing any more. Theſe reflections did not contribute to make the night comfortable; the weather was far more tempeſtuous than in the preceding one; but the clothes which the people had procured from the wreck proved a great comfort to them all, who were thereby enabled to have a change.

Aug. 12. At day-break every one went to work, to dry the ſtores and proviſions between the ſhowers, as it blew exceedingly hard, ſo that the boats could not venture to ſea; and many were buſied to form better tents with ſuch materials as they had ſaved. About eight o'clock in the morning Captain Wilſon and Tom Roſe being on the beach collecting water which dropped from the rocks, the people who were employed in clearing away the ground, in the wood behind them, gave notice that ſome of the natives were approaching, as they perceived a canoe coming round the point into the bay; this gave ſo much alarm that the people all flew to the arms; however, as there were only two canoes, and thoſe having but few men in them, the people were deſired to remain ſtill, and out of ſight, until they ſhould perceive what reception the captain and Tom Roſe met with, whom they were convinced the natives had diſcover-

ed, as they converſed together, and kept ſtedfaſtly looking towards that part of the ſhore where they were; our people were deſired to be prepared for the worſt, but by no means to appear for the preſent, or ſhew any ſigns of diſtruſt when they did, unleſs the behaviour of the natives to them ſhould render it abſolutely neceſſary. In this ſhort interval of time the canoes had advanced cautiouſly towards the ſhore, where they ſtood, when Captain Wilſon deſired Tom Roſe to ſpeak to them in the Malay language, which they did not ſeem to underſtand, but ſtopped their canoes; yet ſoon after one of them ſpoke in the Malay tongue, and aſked who they were? and whether they were friends or enemies? To theſe queſtions Tom Roſe was directed to reply, "That they were unfortunate Engliſhmen, who had "loſt their ſhip upon the reef, and had ſaved their "lives, and were their friends." Upon this they ſpoke a few words together (which was ſince ſuppoſed to have been the Malay man explaining to them what had been ſaid;) and preſently they ſtepped out of the canoes into the water, and came towards the ſhore, on which Captain Wilſon waded into the water to meet them, and embracing them in a friendly manner, conducted them to the ſhore, and introduced them to his officers and unfortunate companions; they were eight in number, two of whom it was afterwards known were brothers to the king. They left one man in each canoe; and, as they were coming into the cove, ſeemed to look round with great watchfulneſs, as if fearful of being betrayed; nor would they ſeat themſelves near the tents, but kept cloſe to the beach, that in caſe of danger they might immediately regain their canoes. Our people now going to breakfaſt, they were preſented with ſome tea, and ſome ſweet biſcuits, made at China, of which two or three jars had been ſaved. Only Captain Wilſon, and one or two more, with Tom Roſe the interpreter, breakfaſted with them,

for, as they would probably have entertained doubts of our people, had the Engliſh ſurrounded them to gratify curioſity, they might, from their apprehenſions, have haſtily departed. In the little converſation which during the breakfaſt could be obtained, a wiſh was expreſſed to the Malay they brought with them, of knowing by what event he chanced to be there. This fellow, beſide his own and the Pelew language, ſpoke a little Dutch, and ſome words of Engliſh; he gave the following account of himſelf, viz. That he commanded a trading veſſel belonging to a China man at Ternate, had been on a trading voyage to Amboyna and Bantam, and had been caſt away, about ten months before, upon an iſland to the ſouthward, which was within ſight of where he then was; that he eſcaped from thence to Pelew, and had been kindly received by the king, who, he told them, was a very good man, and that his people alſo were courteous.

He further acquainted them, that a canoe having been out fiſhing, had ſeen the ſhip's maſt lying down; and that the king being informed of it, ſent off theſe two canoes, at four o'clock that morning, to enquire what was become of the people; that they knowing well this harbour, had come to it firſt, being a place where the canoes, when fiſhing, often ſhelter themſelves in hard weather. They ſat about an hour with Captain Wilſon, taſted the tea, but ſeemed to like better the biſcuits, and appeared now to feel themſelves relieved from every apprehenſion. They wiſhed that one of our people might be ſent in their canoes to the rupack, or king, that he might ſee what ſort of people they were; which was agreed to by Captain Wilſon, who, after breakfaſt was ended, introduced to them ſeveral of his officers; theſe, as they came up, ſhook hands with the natives, who being informed by the Malay that this was the mode of ſalutation amongſt the Engliſh, they went to every man preſent, and took

him by the hand, nor ever after omitted this token of regard, as often as they met our countrymen.

It often pleaſes providence, in the moſt trying hours of difficulty and diſtreſs, to throw open ſome unlooked for ſource of conſolation to the ſpirits of the unfortunate! It was a ſingular accident, that Captain Rees of the Northumberland ſhould, at Macoa, have recommended to Captain Wilſon, Tom Roſe as a ſervant, who ſpoke the Malay language perfectly well.

It was a ſtill more ſingular circumſtance, that a tempeſt ſhould have thrown a Malay on this ſpot, who had as a ſtranger been noticed and favoured by the king, and having been near a year on the iſland previous to the loſs of the Antelope, was become acquainted with the language of the country; by this extraordinary event both the Engliſh and the inhabitants of Pelew, had each an interpreter who could converſe freely together in the Malay tongue, and Tom Roſe ſpeaking Engliſh, an eaſy intercourſe was immediately opened on both ſides, and all thoſe impediments removed at once, which would have ariſen among people who had no means of conveying their thoughts to one another by language, but muſt have truſted to ſigns and geſtures, which, to thoſe born in climates ſo remotely ſeparated, might have given riſe to a thouſand miſconceptions. The natives perceiving the boats preparing to be launched, imagined it was for departure; but being told that our men were going off to the wreck to fetch more ſtores and neceſſaries on ſhore, they ſaid they would ſend one of their people with them, to prevent any canoes from moleſting them.

The natives were of a deep copper colour, perfectly naked, having no kind of covering whatſoever; their ſkins very ſoft and gloſſy, owing, as was known afterwards, to the external uſe of cocoa-nut oil. They were of a middling ſtature, very ſtraight,

and muſcular, their limbs well formed, and had a particular majeſtic manner in walking; but their legs, from a little above their ancles to the middle of their thighs, were tatooed ſo very thick, as to appear dyed of a far deeper colour than their ſkin: their hair was of a fine black, long, and rolled up behind in a ſimple manner cloſe to the back of their heads, and appeared both neat and becoming. None of them, except the younger of the king's two brothers, had a beard; and it was afterwards obſerved, in the courſe of a longer acquaintance with them, that they in general plucked out their beards by the root; a very few only, who had ſtrong thick beards, cheriſhed them and let them grow. As they now ſeemed to feel no longer any reſtraint, they were conducted round the cove; the ground was as yet but ſlightly and partially cleared, much broken ſhells and rock, together with thorny plants and ſhrubs remaining over it, nor could our people help being ſurpriſed at ſeeing them, barefooted as they were, walk over all this rough way as perfectly at eaſe as if it had been the ſmootheſt ground. But if the uncommon appearance of the natives of Pelew excited ſurprize in the Engliſh, their appearance, in return, awakened in their viſitors a far greater degree of aſtoniſhment. Our countrymen, during all the time they remained in theſe iſlands, were perfectly convinced, that the inhabitants had never before ſeen a white man, it was therefore little to be wondered that they viewed them as a new and a very extraordinary race of beings: all they obſerved, and all they touched, made them exclaim weel! weel! and ſometimes weel a trecoy! which the Malay informed them was a declaration of being well pleaſed. They began with ſtroaking the bodies and arms of the Engliſh, or rather their waiſtcoats and coat ſleeves, as if they doubted whether the garment and man were not of the ſame ſubſtance; but were told by the Malay, that the Engliſh in their

own climate being expoſed to far greater cold, were accuſtomed always to be covered, and had coverings of different kinds to put on as occaſion required, ſo that they could be always dry and warm. Our people plainly perceived, by the geſtures of the Malay and the natives, that this was what they were converſing about; nor could they avoid obſerving, by the countenances of the latter the quickneſs with which they ſeemed to comprehend whatever information the Malay gave them. The next thing they noticed was our people's hands, and the blue veins of their wriſts; and they probably conſidered the white ſkin of the hands and face as artificial, and the veins as the Engliſh manner of tatooing, for they immediately requeſted, that the jacket ſleeves of the men might be drawn up, to ſee if their arms were of the ſame colour as their hands and faces.

They afterwards walked about, teſtifying great curioſity, but at the ſame time expreſſing a fear that they intruded too much. As they had come on ſhore unarmed, this conſideration induced Captain Wilſon, before he ſhewed them the tents, to order that all the fire-arms ſhould be put out of ſight, by covering them with a ſail, that the mutual confidence, which had ſo happily ſprung up on both ſides, might not be chilled or overſhadowed by the ſlighteſt miſtruſt; but this well conceived intention was fruſtrated by an accident.

Our people had in the tents two dogs, who were confined cloſe to the place where their arms were depoſited; one of them was a large Newfoundlander, who had been brought up at ſea from a puppy, the other a ſpaniel; the Newfoundland dog had been the favourite of every one on board, being a moſt excellent guard, and had been taught during the voyage an infinite number of tricks, by which he afforded ſo much amuſement to the whole crew, that there was not a ſailor belonging to the Antelope who

would not have riſked his life for the dog. On entering the tent with their new friends, one of our people went before to the dogs, to ſee they were tied up, and to prevent any ſurprize to their viſitors; no ſooner had they entered the tent, than the two dogs ſet up a moſt violent barking, and the natives a noiſe but little leſs loud; our people ſcarcely at firſt knew whether it aroſe from fear, or was expreſſive of aſtoniſhment; they ran in and out of the tent, and appeared to wiſh they might be made to bark again; but the Malay ſoon explained this to be the effects of joy and ſurprize, theſe animals being the firſt of the kind they had ever ſeen, they having no quadrupeds of any ſpecies on theſe iſlands, except a very few grey rats in the woods. It was agreed on by Capt. Wilſon and his people, that the wiſh which the natives had expreſſed reſpecting the ſending one of them to Pelew that the king might ſee what kind of beings white men were, ſhould be complied with, and ſome difficulty ariſing who ſhould be the perſon, the captain requeſted his brother, Mr. Mathias Wilſon, to go, which requeſt he readily complied with, and agreed to depart with them in their canoes.

The jolly boat went out of the cove this forenoon, but the badneſs of the weather obliged her to put back, as did alſo the canoe that was returning to the king, in which was Mr. M. Wilſon, but about noon the canoe ſet out again and proceeded on her voyage. Capt. Wilſon was much affected at his brother's departure, but hoped the embaſſy might prove the means of alleviating their forlorn ſituation. He inſtructed his brother to inform the king who they were, to acquaint him with their misfortunes, and to ſolicit his friendſhip, as alſo his permiſſion to build a veſſel to carry them back to their own country. He ſent by Mr. M. Wilſon a preſent to the king of a ſmall remnant of blue broad cloth, a caniſter of tea, a caniſter of ſugar-candy, and a jar of ruſk. The laſt article was added at the particular requeſt of the

king's two brothers, the younger of whom returned with Mr. M. Wilſon.

The weather being rough, our people employed themſelves in drying their clothes, and making their tents more commodious. The natives conducted our people to a well of a freſh water; the path leading to this well lying acroſs ſteep and rugged rocks, rendered the track hazardous and difficult. Richard Sharp, a midſhipman, a lad about fifteen, being on his duty, the natives took him in their arms when the path was rugged, and they were very careful in theſe places to aſſiſt the men, who returned with two jars filled.

One canoe and three men remained with our people, as did one of the king's brothers, called Raa Kook, commander in chief of the king's forces, and the Malay interpreter; they eat of ſome fowl ſtewed with bread, which was prepared for dinner, but would not eat ſome pieces of ham which Capt. Wilſon had dreſſed for them, diſliking the taſte of ſalt of which they had no knowledge. It continuing to rain and blow exceſſively hard all the afternoon, they could not go away, but paſſed the night with our people, and appeared to be perfectly eaſy and contented with their reception.

Aug. 13. The wind and rain this night proved far heavier than any ſince the wreck; but at day-break it became more moderate, and the boatſwain called all hands out to work by winding his pipe, the ſound of which much pleaſed and ſurpriſed the natives. Raa Kook informed Capt. Wilſon, that his brother would not be able to return, on account of the weather. About ten o'clock the pinnace was ſent off to the ſhip; the people who remained on ſhore employed themſelves in clearing the ground and drying their proviſion. The pinnace did not get back till after dark; their long ſtay awakened uneaſineſs; they brought word that ſome canoes had been at the ſhip, and had carried off ſome iron and other things, and

it was ſuſpected that among theſe was the canoe and the three men that were left to attend the king's brother, as they had put off ſoon after the pinnace, and, as our people thought, were only gone out to fiſh. They alſo reported, that it being low-water, the pinnace could not reach the ſhip, but the men were compelled to wade over part of the reef to get to her, and were now able to ſee her ſituation, having diſcovered that a large part of the rock had made its way through her bottom, and in two or three places appeared dry inſide her hold, ſo that ſhe remained fixed on the reef. They diſcovered that the natives had found their way to the cockpit, had rummaged the medicine cheſt, taſted ſeveral of the medicines, which being probably not very palatable, they had thrown out the contents, and had carried off the bottles, ſo that nothing remained in the cheſt that could be of any further uſe. However, it fortunately happened that Mr. Sharp, the ſurgeon, at the time he quitted the ſhip, conceiving he never ſhould get back to her any more, had providentially brought away ſome of the moſt uſeful medicines.

When thoſe who returned with the pinnace brought this intelligence, and had informed our people that theſe canoes were gone up to Pelew, Captain Wilſon made this tranſaction known to Raa Kook, not ſo much as a matter of complaint, as to expreſs to him his uneaſineſs for the conſequences which might ariſe to the natives from their taſting or drinking ſuch a variety of medicines. Raa Kook begged Captain Wilſon would entertain no uneaſineſs whatever on their account that if they ſuffered, it would be owing entirely to their own miſconduct, for which he ſaid he felt himſelf truly concerned. The converſation paſſing at ſupper, where the general and linguiſt were eating with our people, ſeemed greatly to diſturb Raa Kook; his countenance fully deſcribed the indignation he felt at the treacherous behaviour of

his own men, and aſked, why our people did not ſhoot them? begging, that if they, or any others, ſhould dare again to attempt plundering the veſſel, they would, and he ſhould take upon himſelf to juſtify their conduct to the king. He this night ſlept in the ſame tent with our people, who all redoubled their attention to him, perfectly perſuaded from the generoſity of his behaviour, that the diſpleaſure he had teſtified at this injuſtice done to the Engliſh, did not ariſe from any apprehenſion he felt in being at that moment abſolutely in their power, but that his mind poſſeſſed ſo nice a ſenſe of honour as to make him feel unhappy at what appeared to him to be a breach of hoſpitality in his countrymen; which he declared ſhould be fully ſtated to the king, who would prevent its happening in future. This amiable chief (for amiable he ſeemed from firſt ſight) ſhewed a perfect ſatisfaction with what our people could do for him; he endeavoured to accommodate himſelf to their manners, would ſit at table as they did inſtead of ſquatting on his hams; and this pleaſing diſpoſition of his induced every one to reſpect him as a man of an upright character, and ſuch they in truth found him to be in every tranſaction they afterwards had with him.

At their firſt coming, the Malay, who was quite naked, had requeſted a pair of trowſers and a jacket, which were given him; and a pair of trowſers, together with an uniform coat, were at the ſame time preſented to Raa Kook, who directly put them on, not a little pleaſed in appearing like his new friends, often looking at himſelf, and ſaying, "Raa Kook Englees;" but it was ſuppoſed he found the heat and confinement of dreſs very inconvenient, for after this viſit he never wore them; and when Captain Wilſon was at his houſe at Pelew, he perceived he had put them up carefully among what he deemed valuable.

Our people finding themſelves now on a perfect good underſtanding with this friendly chief, did not heſitate to aſk with freedom, by their interpreter,

whatever their own curioſity ſuggeſted. Obſerving that he wore round his wriſt a poliſhed bone of ſome creature, in the form of a bracelet, and having noticed that his brother, who was returned to Pelew with Mr. M. Wilſon, had a ſimilar ornament, they wiſhed to know on what account it was worn. The Malay explained this to the general, who through him, informed our people that it was a mark of great diſtinction, conferred by the king on his own family, and on officers of ſtate, and commanders, and that he himſelf wore it, both as brother to the king, and as commander in chief of his army, both by ſea and land. This new intelligence which our people had obtained, excited them ſtill more to cultivate the friendſhip of a chief, who though ſo high both in rank and office, had with ſo much condeſcenſion and attentive politeneſs ſhewed himſelf attached to them.

The preceding evening, at ſupper, a propoſition had been made by Captain Wilſon to his officers, which, as it did not take place till this day, will more properly be introduced here; a propoſition founded in the higheſt prudence and wiſdom, and executed with ſuch reſolution and firmneſs of mind, that it reflects the greateſt credit on the commander, as well as the officers and men who ſerved under him, and hath a juſt claim to be faithfully recorded. The day after the Antelope was wrecked, when the pinnace had been ſent on board her, to ſecure whatever ſtores could be ſaved, the men having for many hours endured the ſevereſt toil, the chief officer thought proper to ſerve them out ſome ſtrong liquor; but as they were unable to find any thing to eat, their emptineſs and hard fatigue had made the liquor operate on their heads, ſo that on their return back they were very noiſy and elated; Captain Wilſon therefore now ſubmitted to his officers, whether it would not be adviſeable to ſtave all the liquor that remained aboard the veſſel, left our people, be-

coming inadvertently intoxicated, might be diſpoſed to quarrel among themſelves, or engage in diſputes with the natives; or from another motive, equally important to the common ſafety, leſt the natives themſelves, having already found their way to the ſhip, might diſcover the ſtrong liquors, which they would be tempted to drink of too freely, and, from never having before taſted of ſpirits, might grow infuriated, and induced to commit ſome outrage with our people, and thereby draw on a general conteſt and diſunion. The officers univerſally approved the propoſition, and deſired Captain Wilſon would the next morning make their wiſhes on this matter known to all the ſhip's company; which was done very early, at the time the boatſwain called all hands to work. The captain told them he had ſomething to lay before them, in which their future welfare, nay perhaps their future preſervation, was moſt materially involved; he then ſubmitted to their judgment the meaſure upon which he and his officers had deliberated the preceding evening; urged the propriety of it to them in very forcible terms, as a ſtep that would beſt authorize the hope of getting away from their preſent ſituation, and ſeeing once more their own country, and thoſe who were dear to them; and endeavoured to convince them, that however reluctantly they might yield to the propoſition, yet he was ſatisfied that the underſtanding of every individual among them muſt, on reflection, perceive it was a meaſure abſolutely neceſſary to be adopted. Upon which all the ſailors, with the utmoſt unanimity, and with one voice, declared, that however they might ſuffer from the deprivation of the accuſtomed recruit of ſtrong liquor, yet, being ſenſible that having acceſs to it, they might not at all times uſe it with diſcretion, they, to their laſting honour as men, gave their full aſſent to the captain's propoſal, and ſaid, they were ready to go immediately to the ſhip, and ſtave every veſſel

of liquor on board ; which, on this day, they conſcientiouſly performed, every caſk was ſtaved, and ſo ſcrupulouſly did they execute their truſt, that there was not a ſingle man amongſt them who would take or taſte a farewell glaſs of any liquor.

Aug. 14. The next morning two canoes arrived with yams, ready boiled, and ſome cocoa-nuts which were preſented to Captain Wilſon. In one of theſe veſſels Arra Kooker, the king's brother, returned back, who brought with him one of the king's ſons; Raa Kook went immediately to receive his nephew, and much converſation ſeemed to paſs between them. Arra Kooker informed his brother, that three men had died of the things they had taken and drank out of the medicine-cheſt ; the general replied, that the Engliſh had told him this might be the conſequence, and he was glad they had ſuffered for their bad conduct. The meſſage which the king's ſon had brought from his father was delivered to the general, and from him interpreted to our people, through the Malay ; the purport of it was, to bid the Engliſh welcome into his country, and to inform them that they had his full leave and permiſſion to build a veſſel on the iſland on which they then were, or that they might remove to, and build it on the iſland where he lived himſelf, and be under his own more immediate protection. This being communicated, he introduced the young prince to all our people, and then walked about with him, and ſhowed and explained to him every thing which he had made himſelf acquainted with relative to our manners. His nephew, who appeared to be about twenty one, was as full of aſtoniſhment at what he ſaw, as the uncle himſelf had been before ; and Raa Kook diſcovered no ſmall degree of pleaſure in perceiving the eager delight with which his young relation noticed every thing which his attention was directed to.

Whilſt this engaged the general and the prince, our people were queſtioning Arra Kooker, with anxi-

ous concern, about Mr. M. Wilſon, whom he had conveyed to Pelew, and whom they did not ſee return with him; Arra Kooker aſſured them they would ſee him very ſoon; that he had only been detained by the wind, and was actually on his way. He then deſcribed by ſigns and geſtures (for he had a very particular turn for mimickry and humour) the apprehenſions Mr. M. Wilſon had been under, when he was at Pelew, which he endeavoured to convince them he had very unneceſſarily entertained. It was not long before our people were made happy by his ſafe return, who had, as he told them, undergone no ſmall degree of alarm, though it turned out to be more founded in imaginary fear, than in any real danger. He made a very favourable report of the people of Pelew, that they ſeemed to be friendly in their diſpoſition, and had treated him with much civility and kindneſs: The account of his expedition, as related to me by himſelf, was as follows:

"When the canoe in which I went away came "near the iſland where the king lived, a vaſt con- "courſe of the natives ran out of their houſes to "ſee me come on ſhore; the king's brother, who "accompanied me, took me by the hand, and con- "ducted me from the landing-place up to the town, "where there was a mat ſpread upon a ſquare pave- "ment, on which he by ſigns directed me to ſit "down. I obeyed, and in a little time the king "appeared, which being notified to me by his bro- "ther, I aroſe, and made my obeiſance. After "this ceremony, I offered the king the preſents my "brother had ſent by me, which he received in a very "gracious manner. His brother Arra Kooker, now "talked a good deal with him, which I conceived "was to acquaint him with our diſaſter, and our "numbers; after which the king eat ſome of the "ſugar-candy, ſeemed to reliſh it, and diſtributed a "little of it to ſeveral of his chiefs, and then di- "rected all the things to be taken away and carried

" to his own houſe ; which being done, he ordered " refreſhments to be brought, which conſiſted of a " cocoa-nut filled with warm water, and ſweetened " with molaſſes ; after taſting it, he commanded a " little boy who was near him to climb a cocoa-tree " and gather freſh nuts, he cleared one from the " huſks, and taſting the milk thereof, bade the lit- " tle boy preſent it to me, making ſigns to me to " ſend it back when I had drank ; he afterwards " broke the nut in two, eat a little, and returned it " to me to eat of it.

" I now found myſelf ſurrounded by a vaſt con- " courſe of both ſexes ; much converſation took " place between the king, his brother. and the " chiefs who were with him. As their eyes were " repeatedly directed to me, I concluded I was the " ſubject of it. Taking off my hat by accident, all " who were preſent ſeemed ſtruck with aſtoniſhment, " which I perceiving, unbuttoned my waiſtcoat, and " took my ſhoes from my feet, in order that they " might ſee they were no part of my body ; being " of opinion, that at firſt ſight of me, they enter- " tained a notion that my clothes conſtituted a part " of my perſon ; for, when undeceived in this, they " came nearer to me, ſtroked me, and put their " hands into my boſom to feel my ſkin.

" It being now grown rather dark, the king, his " brother, ſeveral others, and myſelf, retired into a " houſe, where there was a ſupper brought in of " yams boiled whole, on a ſtand or ſtool with a rim " or edge round it of three or four inches high ; in " a diſh or wooden bowl was a kind of pudding " made alſo of yams boiled and beat together, juſt " as we maſh potatoes, of which they put three or " four in a bowl or diſh. They had likewiſe ſome " ſhell-fiſh, but of what kind I could not make out. " They conducted me after ſupper to another houſe " at ſome diſtance from the firſt, where I found at " leaſt forty or fifty men and women; I was led thither

" by a female, who, when I had entered the houſe, " made ſigns to me to ſit, or lie down on a mat " that was ſpread, as I underſtood, on the floor for " me to ſleep on. After the reſt of the company " had all ſatisfied their curioſity by viewing me very " accurately, they all went to ſleep, and I laid my- " ſelf down on the mat, drawing another mat over " me, which I ſuppoſed was placed there for that pur- " poſe, reſting my head on a block of wood, which " ſerves the people here as a pillow. Unable to ſlum- " ber, I lay perfectly ſtill; and ſome conſiderable time " after, when all ſeemed quiet about eight men " aroſe, and began to make two great fires at each " end of the houſe (which was not divided by par- " titions, but formed one large habitation.) This " operation of theirs, I confeſs, alarmed me very " much indeed; I thought of nothing leſs than that " the natives were going to roaſt me, and that they " had only laid themſelves down that I might alſo " drop aſleep, and intended to ſeize me in that ſitua- " tion. However, being ſurrounded by a danger, " which there was no poſſibility of eſcaping, I col- " lected all my fortitude, and recommending my- " ſelf to the Supreme Diſpoſer of all events, I ex- " pected every moment to meet my fate; when, to " my great ſurprize, after ſitting a little while and " warming themſelves, I perceived they all retired " again to their mats, nor got up any more till day- " break, when I aroſe and walked about, encircled " by great numbers of men, women, and children. " It was not long before the king's brother joined " me and went with me to ſeveral houſes, where I " was entertained with yams, cocoa-nuts, and ſweet- " meats. Being after this conducted to the king, " I ſignified to him by geſtures that I much wiſhed " to go back to my brother; he perfectly under- " ſtood me, and explained to me by ſigns that the " canoes would not go out, there being too much " wind and ſea. To deſcribe the firſt he pointed up

" to the trees, and blew ſtrongly with his mouth ; " and, to make the too great force of ſea on the ca- " noes, he joined his two hands together with the " palms upwards, then lifted them up, and turned " them the reverſe way, to expreſs to me that the " canoes would overſet. The remainder of the day " I ſpent in walking about the iſland and obſerving " its produce. I found it conſiſted chiefly of yams " and cocoa-nuts; the former they cultivate with " great care in large plantations, in ſwampy watery " ground, like the rice in India. The cocoa-nut " trees grow very near to their houſes, as does alſo " the beetle nut, which they chew as tobacco." The favourable account brought by Mr. M. Wilſon, and the meſſage which the king had ſo graciouſly ſent to Capt. Wilſon by his ſon, could not fail of giving ſpirits to all our people.

Before noon the two boats were ſent off to the wreck, but the bad weather compelled Mr. Barker to come back with the jolly-boat. The pinnace returned before evening, with ſome iron, one bag of rice, and ſundry other ſtores ; our people brought intelligence that they found upwards of twenty canoes buſied about the veſſel, and that ſome of the natives had been very angry at having ſome iron and a cutlaſs, which they had got out of her, taken from them.

Arra Kooker could by no means reliſh the wearing of trowſers, but he had conceived a paſſion to have a white ſhirt, and one was immediately given him, which he had no ſooner put on than he began to dance and jump about with ſo much joy, that all were diverted by his ridiculous geſtures, and the contraſt which the linnen formed with his ſkin. This prince appeared to be verging towards forty ; he was in ſtature ſhort, but ſo plump and fat that he was almoſt as broad as he was long ; he poſſeſſed an abundant ſhare of good humour, and a wonderful turn for mimickry ; and had beſides a countenance ſo lively and ſo expreſſive, that though our people

were ſtrangers at this time to almoſt all he ſaid, yet his face and geſtures made them pretty accurately comprehend whatever he was deſcribing. In order to amuſe them, he would frequently try to take off every one of our people in any particularity he had noticed, and this with ſuch great good humour, that every one who ſaw him was pleaſed with his pleaſantry. Sometimes he would take up a hat, put it on his head, and imitate the manner of our people walking in their military exerciſe; would recollect every occurrence that happened, and nothing that he obſerved done by the Engliſh eſcaped him; in ſhort, on every occaſion his manner was lively and engaging to a degree. From the firſt time of his having ſeen the great Newfoundland dog, as before mentioned, he felt delight in going to him frequently, and in carrying him victuals; and by noticing him ſo much, the dog naturally expreſſed great joy whenever he went to him. When he was brought on board the Antelope in England, the dog was named Sailor, and now, familiarized to Arra Kooker, would, whenever he appeared, bark, jump, leap, and play his tricks; and his new acquaintance, when he wiſhed to be amuſing, would imitate wonderfully well the barking, howling, jumping, and all the various demonſtrations of joy of this poor animal.

The Engliſh, as far as they collected from Mr. M. Willon's account, and from the urbanity and attention ſhewn them by the two dignified chiefs, who had now been their gueſts for ſome days, in happier moments, with the certainty before them of getting away whenever they pleaſed, would have enjoyed the ſociety of their new friends; but the doubt of what they might further get from the ſhip to aid the building of another, and the uncertainty whether they might ever ſee again their country and famillies, conſtantly preſſed on their minds ſuch a weight of anxiety, that the reflections of ſenſibility were often wringing their hearts, when the fortitude their pru-

dence aſſumed, and the attention due to their hoſpitable protectors, compelled them to ſubdue their natural feelings, and maſk their countenances with acquieſcent ſmiles.

Aug. 15. At day break the king's ſon, accompanied by one of his uncles, launched their canoe and went off to the ſhip; Mr. Barker alſo got off with the jolly-boat; the pinnace wanting ſome little repairs, could not be ſent till about an hour after; they both returned about noon, bringing with them ſome rice and other ſtores, and were going to make a ſecond trip, but put back on ſeeing a number of canoes approaching the harbour, and our people were informed that the king was coming. Soon after ſeveral canoes appeared round the point at the entrance of the harbour, and then lay to; the king's canoe having ſtopped whilſt he was giving orders to another ſquadron of canoes (that were armed, and formed his rear) to detach themſelves to the back of the iſland. The king's canoe then came forward between four others, two on each ſide of it, the rowers of which ſplaſhed the water about with their paddles, and flouriſhed them over their heads in a very dexterous manner; and as the king paſſed the firſt canoes that had lain to cloſed his train, and followed him into the cove, ſounding their conch ſhells. When they had come in as far as the tide would permit, it was ſignified to Captain Wilſon that he ſhould go out and meet the king, on which two of his own men took him up in their arms and carried him through the ſhallow water to the canoe, where the king was ſitting on a ſtage built in the middle of it. He deſired Captain Wilſon to come into the canoe, which he did, and embraced him, informing him, through the interpreters, that he and his friends were Engliſhmen, who had unfortunately loſt their ſhip, but having ſaved their lives by landing on his territory, ſupplicated his

permiſſion to build a veſſel to convey them back to their own country.

After a little pauſe, and ſpeaking with a chief in a canoe next to him (who we after learnt was the chief miniſter) he replied, in the moſt courteous manner, that he was welcome to build, either at the place where he then was, or at his own iſland; told Captain Wilſon, that the iſland he was then on was thought to be unhealthy; that he feared his people might be ſickly if they ſtayed on it before another wind ſet in, which he ſaid would be in two moons; and that he might poſſibly be moleſted by the inhabitants of ſome of the neighbouring iſlands, who were at that time at war with him.

Captain Wilſon expreſſed his acknowledgments for the condeſcenſion, the care, and goodneſs which the king had teſtified toward him and his people; informing him at the ſame time, that as the iſland he was then on was far nearer to the wreck, from whence he had already got ſome ſtores on ſhore, and hoped ſtill to get more, it would take much more time ſhould he remove them farther; therefore he would, with his permiſſion, prefer remaining where he was, as his people could fear no enemies whilſt they enjoyed his protection and friendſhip: that he had a perſon with him very ſkillful in curing ſickneſs, which made him very eaſy on that account; but in caſe any of his people, during their ſtay there, ſhould happen to fall ill, he would then avail himſelf of his goodneſs, and convey them for recovery to the better air of his own iſland. With this anſwer the king ſeemed to be pleaſed and ſatisfied. Captain Wilſon then made him a preſent of a ſcarlet coat; and, after ſome diſcourſe, he made ſigns to go on ſhore; the men again took the captain up, as before, whilſt the king ſtepped into the water, and waded to land.

Aug. 16. The morning being fine and calm, our people launched their boats, in order to go off to the

ſhip, but miſſed the jolly-boat's rudder, which had been ſtolen for the ſake of the iron. Thoſe on ſhore were employed in getting ready the blocks and ways, in order to lay down the intended veſſel. About ten o'clock the chief miniſter came over land, from the back of the iſland, which did not exceed the diſtance of half a mile from the cove, and after looking for ſome time at the operations then beginning, he took Captain Wilſon by the hand, and led him to the tent where the arms were kept; after viewing wiſhfully a cutlaſs, he aſked him for it. In the particular ſituation which our people ſtood, Captain Wilſon thought a refuſal might be imprudent, particularly to a chief of his rank, and therefore judged it wiſer to make a virtue of neceſſity. But on coming out of the tent, Raa Kook ſaw it in his hand, ſeemed diſpleaſed, and made him return it.

In the afternoon the Malay informed Captain Wilſon, that the king was come round into the bay, being on his return to Pelew, and if he wanted to take leave of him he muſt go off to his canoe. The captain accordingly went in the jolly-boat, having with him Tom Roſe his linguiſt, and four other men. The meeting was to his great ſurpriſe, very cool on the king's part, of courſe reſerved on that of his own, far unlike, indeed, that undiſguiſed openneſs which marked the interview of the preceding day. And I doubt not but by this time the reader will have ſhared a portion of that concern, for his unfortunate countrymen, which was awakened in their boſoms by this unexpected alteration in the behaviour of the natives. What will he think of the hearts of theſe yet unknown inhabitants of Pelew? He will have already loaded them with reproach, and judged, too hardly judged them to be an inconſiſtent, faithleſs people, on whom no reliance could be placed, whom no profeſſion could bind. Never perhaps was exhibited a nobler ſtruggle of native delicacy; their hearts burned within them to aſk a favour, which

the generosity of their feelings would not allow them to mention. The English had been, and still were in their power; they had sought their protection as unfortunate strangers. The natives had already shewn them, and still meant to shew every mark of hospitality which their naked, unproductive country could afford. They conceived that what they wished to ask, as it might prove a temporary inconvenience, would look ungenerous; and that which most checked their speaking was, that circumstanced as the English were with respect to them, a request would have the appearance of a command; an idea this, which shocked their sensibility. The matter they laboured with was in their opinions, of the highest imaginable consequence to them. After much apparent struggle in the king's mind, the request, with great difficulty, was at last made, and proved to be this: That the king being in a few days going to battle against an island that had done him an injury, he wished Captain Wilson would permit four or five of his men to accompany him to war with their muskets. Captain Wilson instantly replied, that the English were as his own people, and that the enemies of the king were their enemies. The interpreter certainly very well translated this declaration, for in an instant every countenance, which was before overshadowed, became brightened and gay. The king said he should want the men in five days, by which time his own people would be prepared for battle, and that he would take them down to Pelew with him the next day. Thus was harmony restored between our people and the natives; interrupted only for a few hours, for no other cause than that extreme delicacy of sentiment which no one would expect to have found in regions so detached from the rest of the world.

Aug. 17. The king came in the forenoon of the following day for the men which had been promised. Every one of the English expressed a readiness to go;

but the five following being young men, and requeſting their comrades with particular earneſtneſs to be the firſt upon the liſt, were thoſe who were appointed, viz. Mr. Cummin, the third mate, Nicholas Tyacke, James Bluitt, Madan Blanchard, and Thomas Dulton ; they alſo took with them Tom Roſe as their interpreter ; the king and the chiefs taking each of them in their canoes ; he went away in great friendſhip, ſhaking all the Engliſh by the hand. Our people accompanied their companions, when they departed, to the water edge, and as they moved from the ſhore in the cove, gave them three cheers, the firſt of which was only returned by the Engliſh ; but the linguiſt giving Abba Thulle to underſtand that this acclamation was uſed by the Engliſh as a farewel, and a wiſh of ſucceſs, the king made all his men ſtand up in their canoes and return the ſecond and third.

Their preſent leiſure, added to the little proſpect of being interrupted by the natives for ſome days, induced them to embrace this opportunity to form the plan of their intended veſſel, which, it was now determined, ſhould be a ſchooner, as eaſier worked. The plan was ſhewn to every body, and approved by all. The petty officers and common men conſidering, that to purſue this intereſting buſineſs, every individual muſt do his part, and all concur in becoming obedient to the command of one ſuperior, who ſhould conduct and regulate the whole operation; the affection each had borne to their captain, and ſtill bore him, though misfortune had ſevered the tie between them, made them unanimouſly requeſt Capt. Wilſon to be that one ſuperior, and that he would take the command upon him faithfully promiſing that they would, in all things, implicitly obey his orders, equally as when the Antelope was on float. Nothing could more affect the ſenſibility of ſuch a character as Captain Wilſon's, than to ſee all thoſe who had ſerved under him, voluntarily again ſeek him as their com-

mander, to ſhare ſtill far ſeverer toils. The ſpirits of all our people were renovated; nothing preſented itſelf to them but the future veſſel that was to carry them home; deſpondency was chaſed from every mind, and all went to work with the utmoſt alacrity; each determind (however unſkilled he might be) to exert his abilities to promote the general plan.

All arrangements being now ſettled, each went to his new department, and worked till dark, at which time all were ſummoned to the great tent, where Capt. Wilſon read prayers; it being the requeſt of every one to join in paying unitedly their thankſgivings to that ſupreme Being who had not only ſo providentially preſerved them, but whoſe goodneſs now relieved their drooping ſpirits, by ſpreading before them a hope of their being once more reſtored to their country and families. Each bringing with him a mind impreſſed by theſe reflections, never were prayers more devoutly or ardently offered up. After they were over, it was ordered, that public prayers ſhould on no Sunday evening be omitted.

Aug. 25. In the afternoon, four canoes were perceived making into the harbour; by the boatmen ſplaſhing and flouriſhing their paddles, our people conceived the king was on board one of them, but to their great ſatisfaction they ſoon ſaw they were their countrymen returned. They were welcomed with every teſtimony of joy; and it was no ſmall pleaſure to thoſe left on the iſland, to ſee them all come back in health and ſpirits. They reported they had been very kindly treated ever ſince their departure, the natives behaving to them in the moſt friendly unreſerved manner. The king's brother, Raa Kook, came back with them. The canoes brought great quantities of yams and cocoa-nuts, and the king had given to each of the men who went on the expedition a baſket of ſweetmeats, and alſo ſent ſome baſkets to the captain; this ſweetmeat they diſtributed very

liberally amongſt their countrymen, but it was not much reliſhed, being dry and hard, inſomuch that the ſailors gave it the name of choke dog.

The following was the account our people gave of their expedition.

Having departed the 17th, they went to one of the king's iſlands, where they were received with great kindneſs, and treated with much hoſpitality: after remaining there all night, they ſet off the next morning for Pelew, the place of the king's reſidence, which was in an iſland about three or four miles diſtant: here they remained till the 21ſt, the king not being till then able to get together all his canoes; however, by day-light on the 21ſt, they muſtered before the king's houſe with their arms, which conſiſted of bamboo darts from five to eight feet long.

The Engliſh embarked in five different canoes, and went away to the eaſtward about ten or twelve leagues, calling as they went along at ſeveral of the king's villages to refreſh and reinforce; at half an hour paſt two in the forenoon, they got ſight of the enemy. The king had with him now a fleet of one hundred and fifty canoes, on board of which were conſiderably above one thouſand men. Of the enemy's forces our people could form no certainty. Before the action, Raa Kook went in his canoe cloſe to the town, and ſpoke to the enemy for ſome time, having Thomas Dulton in the boat with him, who had directions not to fire till ſuch time as the ſignal agreed on ſhould be given him. What the general ſaid, being received by the enemy with great indifference, Raa Kook threw a ſpear at them, which they almoſt inſtantly returned: this being the ſignal for firing, was immediately obeyed; a man was ſeen to fall directly, and this threw the enemy into great confuſion. Such as were on ſhore ran away, and the greater part of thoſe in the canoes jumped in the water and made for land; a few more muſkets were

fired, which diſperſed the enemy entirely; and our friends ſeemed perfectly ſatisfied with putting them to flight, and in this mark of victory, but made no other uſe of it than to land, ſtrip ſome cocoa-nut trees of their fruit, and carry off ſome yams and other proviſion. After this fight, or more properly this attack, the fleet turned homeward, the king being highly pleaſed with his triumph. They ſtopped at ſeveral places in their way, where the women brought out ſweet liquor for them to drink; and it being too far to get home that night, the fleet diſperſed up ſeveral ſmall creeks, about eight o'clock in the evening, where they ſlept. The next morning feaſts were prepared in all the neighbouring houſes, and at three in the afternoon the people re-embarked, and ſet off for Pelew, where they arrived ſafe at ſeven the ſame evening. Here alſo they found the women ready to receive them, with cocoa-nut ſhells filled with ſweet liquor. On landing, the Engliſh fired a volley, and gave three cheers, with which the king appeared greatly pleaſed. Here our people ſlept, and were told that they muſt ſtay and reſt themſelves the next day and ſet off for their iſland on the day ſucceeding. There was nothing but rejoicing and feſtivity in the town the next morning, and the reſt of the day was paſſed with hilarity, and celebrated with ſongs and dances made on the occaſion.

After breakfaſt, the king went down to the waterſide with the Engliſh, where he parted with them in a very kind manner, ſending two large canoes laden with yams for the reſt of their countrymen; and after a paſſage this morning of five hours, they rejoined their ſhipmates, to the mutual ſatisfaction of all.

Aug. 27. This evening Arra Kooker arrived, and paſſed the night with our people; he brought with him all his ſpirits and gaiety, and entertained them wonderfully with the pleaſant deſcription he gave of

the late engagements, acting, with his accuſtomed humour and geſtures, the panic which ſeized the enemy the inſtant they heard the report of the Engliſh guns.

Aug. 31. The captain having fixed this day for his going to viſit the king of Pelew, as ſoon as all had breakfaſted, he read prayers in the tent; Raa Kook, with ſuch of the natives as were waiting to accompany him, attended divine ſervice, and were exceedingly attentive, following exactly what they ſaw our people do, in kneeling or riſing. After prayers were ended, Captain Wilſon took leave of his people, taking with him Mr. Sharp, Mr. Devis, and his ſon Mr. Henry Wilſon; they left the tents about eight o'clock in the morning. At noon, as they approached the little iſland which lies about three or four miles in the ſea off Pelew, they obſerved Raa Kook's canoe paddling away at a great rate to get a-head of them; he juſt ſtept on ſhore at a little town ſituated on the water edge, and ſoon returned to meet them, directing their courſe to leeward of the iſland, where they were met by another canoe, laden with yams, cocoa nuts, and ſweet-meats, to refreſh them with on their paſſage. This explained immediately the reaſon of the general's quitting them ſo ſuddenly, which they now perceived was merely to indulge his hoſpitable diſpoſition, and from his anxiety leſt our people ſhould be fatigued for want of refreſhment. Every one partook of this entertainment and then proceeded; they reached the iſland of Pelew about one o'clock in the afternoon.

As Pelew came in ſight the jolly-boat hoiſted Engliſh colours, and fired three muſkets; on landing, fired three more, after having hoiſted their colours, and fixed them in the ground oppoſite a houſe cloſe to the water ſide, to which our people were conducted by Raa Kook, to wait the king's coming.

Before the king appeared, ſome of the natives were ſent down with refreſhments; they firſt brought a large tureen made of wood, in the ſhape of a bird, and inlaid with ſhell, this was full of ſweet drink; they alſo brought a painted ſtand, about two feet in height, inlaid in the ſame manner as the tureen, upon which were ſweet-meats garniſhed with oranges, next came a baſket of boiled yams, followed by another of young cocoa nuts; theſe were all placed in a kind of order, preparatory to the king's coming. On his arrival Captain Wilſon roſe, and embraced him, as he had done at the firſt interview. Abbe Thulle ſat down by him, and they were then ſerved with the before mentioned proviſions, by a man who ſeemed to act as butler, and gave to each a portion, by the king's directions. After this entertainment, Capt Wilſon offered him a preſent he had brought, which conſiſted of ſome iron hoops, ſome necklaces made of gold and ſilver lace, tied with ribband at each end; to which he meant to have added a few files, but one of the natives purloined them from the perſon who had them in charge.

After the repaſt was ended, Mr. Devis, who was an excellent draughtſman, being ſtruck with the appearance of a woman then preſent, took out a piece of paper, and was making a ſketch of her figure; which, before he had completed, the lady noticing that he had repeatedly looked her earneſtly in the face, and marked ſomething down, was diſtreſſed at it, and roſe up to go away, in appearance very much agitated; nor could ſhe be perſuaded to ſtay, although ſome of the rupacks preſent laughed heartily at her alarm: which led our people to conceive that ſhe was the wife of one of them. A rupack looking over Mr. Devis's ſhoulder, ſeemed pleaſed at the repreſentation, or likeneſs, and wiſhed to hand it up to the king; who ſo readily entered into a true idea of the art, that he immediately ſent

a meſſenger to order two of his women to come down to the houſe where he was: they arrived very ſoon, and placed themſelves at the window fronting where Mr. Devis was ſeated, at which theſe ladies could ſtand without being ſeen lower than the waiſt. Mr. Devis having finiſhed his ſketches, preſented them to the king, he ſhewed them immediately to his women, who ſeemed pleaſed in viewing on paper a fancied likeneſs of themſelves.

The king then deſired Mr. Devis to lend him a piece of paper, and his pencil, on which he attempted to delineate three or four figures, very rudely, without the leaſt proportion; their heads, inſtead of an oval, being in a pointed form like a ſugar-loaf; I mention this as a proof of his openneſs of temper, in ſhewing he could very imperfectly trace what the artiſt was able more happily to delineate. He approved in the ſtranger thoſe talents he would himſelf have been ambitious to poſſeſs, and his manner of teſtifying his approbation, exhibited in captivating colours that which no pencil could diſplay—the urbanity of a noble mind.

The king now ſignified to his gueſts, that he would conduct them up to the town. They aſcended a bank into a wood, led by the king and Raa Kook, and followed by a great concourſe of people. Having paſſed the wood, they found themſelves on a fine broad cauſeway, or pavement, with rows of trees on each ſide, which led to the town.

Having now reached Pelew, they came into a large, ſquare pavement, round which were ſeveral houſes; our people were conducted to one that ſtood in the centre of one of the ſides. Out of this houſe iſſued a number of women, who were waiting to ſee theſe new beings, the Engliſh, and who they ſoon underſtood were the wives of ſome rupacks, or great officers of ſtate.

The king and his brother Raa Kook, led the gueſts into this houſe, into which the women return-

ed, and received them with much joy, preſenting their company with cocoa-nuts, and ſweet drink, which all ſat down and partook of. The king informed his gueſts, that this houſe was to be their abode as long as they remained at Pelew, and that there they were to ſleep; after which he roſe up, and withdrew, previouſly apologizing to Captain Wilſon, ſaying he was going to bathe. Soon after, a meſſage came to Raa Kook, from the queen, to requeſt ſhe might ſee the Engliſh at her dwelling. As they approached, the queen opened her window, and ſpoke to Raa Kook, to deſire the Engliſh would ſit down on the pavement before her; which being complied with, a number of attendants brought out yams, cocoa-nuts, and ſweet drink; and whilſt they were partaking of theſe the queen aſked Raa Kook many queſtions about our people, and then ſent them one broiled pigeon (which they dreſs without drawing) that every one might taſte it; giving them to underſtand, that this was the greateſt rarity that the country produced. She took very great notice of the Engliſh, and wiſhed ſome of them would come cloſe to the window, and draw up their coat ſleeves, that ſhe might ſee the colour of their ſkin; after ſhe had viewed them attentively, and aſked as many circumſtances reſpecting them as ſhe thought ſhe could with propriety obtrude, ſhe ſignified that ſhe would no longer treſpaſs on their patience by detaining them; ſo they roſe and took leave of her.

The general now told them he wiſhed to conduct them to his own houſe, which was a little diſtant from the firſt ſquare where the king had allotted them their habitation. At the houſe of this chief they were received quite in the family way, without any form: In this domeſtic ſcene Raa Kook appeared in a new and amiable light; it was a ſituation which placed to their view that benevolent heart of his they had themſelves before frequently noticed. Here

he was ſurrounded by ſeveral of his children, two of whom were very young; they were climbing up his knees and careſſing him, whilſt he ſeemed to enjoy great pleaſure in rolling and toſſing them about, handing them to our people, that they might alſo notice and play with them.

Whilſt the attention of Captain Wilſon and his companions had been engaged by this endearing ſcene, the night had crept faſt on them, and it now being quite dark, they requeſted leave to retire: Raa Kook apologized for not waiting on them home, but ordered one of his own people and the Malay to conduct them back.

Being arrived at their allotted dwelling, they learned that the king had ſent them ſome fiſh for ſupper. After ſupper, Raa Kook ſent mats for them to ſleep on, and called himſelf before he went to reſt, to ſee if they were ſupplied with every thing they ſtood in want of, and which it was in his own power to offer.

Sept. 1. Raa Kook called on them very early in the morning: in all his viſits he wore on his countenance ſuch a look of good humour and congratulation as more than told our people he rejoiced to ſee them. The captain and his companions received a meſſage to breakfaſt with the king.

During breakfaſt the king talked much with the Malay, who, after it was over, told Mr. Sharp that Abba Thulle wiſhed he would go a little way into the country with one of his rupacks, without declaring for what purpoſe. Mr. Sharp heſitated, till Mr. Devis offered to accompany him. As they went over the hills, they paſſed ſeveral pleaſant villages, and a valley beautifully cultivated with plantations of cocoa-nuts and yams, forming from the ſummit a rich and delicious proſpect. When they had got nearly five miles from Pelew, they arrived at a plantation, at the end of which ſtood his houſe. He ſolicited them to enter, when various refreſhments

were placed before them. He then introduced his wife and children; and ſhewed Mr. Sharp a child that was afflicted with ſome bad ulcers. Mr. Sharp, who, ſituated as he was, could not undertake to repeat his attendance, thought it beſt to adviſe the rupack to the continuance of the remedy the child had been accuſtomed to; and after remaining there a proper time, he and Mr. Devis intimated a wiſh to return: but the rupack told him that his people were at work for them, and that they muſt not depart till the buſineſs they were about was done. They now perceived that Arra Zook was not confined to the tranſient entertainment he had already ſpread before them. His people preſently appeared, loaded with yams and cocoa-nuts, packed up in large baſkets; and alſo baſkets of ſweet-meats, which they had made freſh for them while they had been in his houſe. The rupack told them that his people ſhould carry all theſe baſkets to the king's town, that they might there be put into a boat to be given to their friends at Oroolong. Charmed with the character of their liberal hoſt, Mr. Sharp and his companions took their leave, teſtifying their thankfulneſs for the kindneſs he had ſhewn them; whilſt the good man ſtood aſſuring them of the joy they had afforded him and his family in coming to his houſe, and how truly they had obliged him by looking at his poor ſick child. As the rupack accompanied them to the door oppoſite to it, on a rail was his rooſt of tame pigeons; not thinking he had ſufficiently gratified his liberal ſpirit, he gave them at parting a look of the warmeſt benevolence, and told them when their ſhip was built, they ſhould have all his pigeons to carry with them.

Theſe gentlemen returned to Pelew, followed by the ſervants of Arra Zook with the preſents of their maſter. Captain Wilſon had in the mean time paid a viſit to Raa Kook, where he was ſhewn three iron travellers, which ſome of the natives had got from

the wreck ; the general ſaid the Engliſh ſhould have them again, and the captain in return promiſed to give him a hatchet.

Sept. 1. This day a great council was held, in the forenoon, in the open air, on the large ſquare pavement, near the houſe allotted the Engliſh. It conſiſted of a number of rupacks, or chiefs, ſeated each on a ſingle ſtone. In the preſent caſe it did not require the knowledge of their language to diſcover the buſineſs they were on ; as the houſe in which the captain and his companions were, looked full on their council ; and their geſtures, as well as the frequent repetition of the words Englees and Artingall, left our people no room to doubt but that they had been the ſubject of their deliberation. After the council broke up, the king, attended by the linguiſt, came to the houſe where the Engliſh were, and requeſted Captain Wilſon would permit ten of his men to go with him to battle, againſt the ſame enemy as before. Captain Wilſon replied to the king nearly as he had done before, " that the Engliſh " were his friends, and would regard thoſe who " were his enemies, as being enemies of their " own." This reply greatly pleaſed the king. The captain deſiring to know the cauſe of the war, Abba Thulle informed him, through the linguiſt, that ſome time back, at a feſtival at Artingall, one of his brothers and two of his chiefs had been killed, and that the two iſlands had been at war ever ſince ; the people of Artingall, ſo far from making any ſatisfaction, had protected the murderers. Captain Wilſon entreated that his people might not be detained at Pelew longer than was neceſſary, as it would greatly retard the building of the veſſel The king anſwered, " That he could not in decency ſend " them back the moment he had their ſervices, but " that he would keep them only two or three days, " that they might be made gay, and rejoice with his " own people after ſubduing his enemies."

In the afternoon, the king took Captain Wilſon and his companions to ſee ſome canoes, which were juſt come in from an expedition they had been ſent on, and from which they had returned victorious, having brought in one canoe of the enemy, though not a ſingle priſoner. The obtaining a canoe, however trifling it may appear to the reader, is equal to the capture of the largeſt ſhip of war in Europe.

In the evening, our people were entertained with a dance of the warriors, who were juſt then returned, which was performed in the following manner: In general, an elderly man amongſt them begins ſomething like a ſong, and when he comes to a pauſe, or what we ſhould call the end of a ſtanza, a chorus is ſtruck up, and the dancers all join in concert. Their dancing does not ſo much conſiſt in capering or agility, as in a particular method they have of balancing themſelves, and this frequently very low ſideways, ſinging together all the while; during which, they will flatten their circles, ſo as to bring themſelves face to face; after this there will be a ſudden pauſe, and an exclamation from every voice, weel! Then a new ſentence or ſtanza is repeated, and danced to as before, and the ſame ceremony continued, till every man who is engaged in the dance has had his repetition and chorus.

During this feſtivity, two large tubs of ſweet drink were brought in, which were ſerved out, firſt to the Engliſh and the principal people preſent, and then the tubs were carried to the warriors. When the dance was ended, the warriors then removed to a houſe, at which a ſupper was prepared for them, where they continued dancing moſt part of the night, but when it grew dark, the Engliſh retired to their own habitation.

Sept. 4. The king and his brother Raa Kook made our people a viſit at day break; the weather after breakfaſt clearing up, they informed the king

they wiſhed to return to Oroolong, to which he aſſented, though wiſhing rather to detain them another day. They found the jolly boat ready loaded for them with every kind of proviſion the iſland afforded, and about two o'clock in the afternoon they left Pelew, highly ſatisfied with the kindneſs of their friends, giving them three cheers, as uſual, at parting, which was returned by the king in perſon; who, in this inſtance, put off his gravity, and laughed very much, joining the men, women, and children in their cheers, ſtanding up, and apart in ſuch a manner as to make himſelf conſpicuous.

Our people arrived ſafe at the tents about nine o'clock, though the wind had been adverſe to them, and had the pleaſure of finding all their companions well.

Sept. 5. Captain Wilſon, on coming back, had the ſatisfaction to ſee that all his people, in his abſence had been going on very aſſiduouſly with the veſſel, and that the moſt perfect harmony had ſubſiſted among them.

Sept. 7. In the afternoon, the king paid our people a viſit, attended by his two brothers, the chief miniſters, and ſeveral of his other chiefs, and brought them ſome fine fiſh that his canoes had caught in nets, which they make very nicely.

The king, who now for the firſt time had ſeen the progreſs made in the new veſſel, appeared perfectly amazed at perceiving how much had been done, nor leſs ſo at the magnitude of the object. He minutely examined every thing with the moſt eager attention, and impatiently called for his tackalbys, or artificers, to notice what had ſo much excited his own aſtoniſhment. The tackalbys, ſeized with ſurprize equal to that of their prince, after deliberately poring over its parts, pointed out to him the very ſingular manner in which every thing was wedged and bolted together; it ſeemed to have engaged their minds as ſomewhat beyond their comprehenſion. The king

croſſed frequently between the ribs of the veſſel, and ſaid he was at a loſs to conceive how they could ever be made ſo as to keep out the water, having no idea that they were to be planked.

The king this day, as well as the general, much noticed the barricade, as alſo the ſix pounder; and after he had talked ſome time with the Malay, he inquired the uſe of the great gun. The captain ſhewed him the balls, and grape-ſhot, and alſo explained to him their force and efficacy; informing him, that if a number of canoes from Artingall, or any other iſland of his enemies, ſhould approach the cove, this machine would blow them off the water, and ſhiver them to atoms. The king was alſo ſhewn the ſwivel guns, which were mounted on trees ſawn down; and it was explained to him, that they could be pointed in any direction which ſhould be moſt deſirable, or convenient, ſo that ſhould any of his enemies come by ſurprize over land, theſe moveable guns would give our people as great advantage and power over them by land, as the ſix pounder would at ſea.

The king's brothers, and the chiefs who were with him, on receiving this intelligence, ſeemed to look at our countrymen with freſh aſtoniſhment; they converſed much among one another, teſtifying by their actions every indication of ſurprize. The noiſe of the forge which our people had ſet up, and which was then at work, ſoon drew their attention that way: it happened that the boatſwain was at that inſtant beating out a piece of hot iron upon a pig of the ſame metal, which he had made his anvil. This was a circumſtance ſo entirely new and intereſting to them, that they all ſtood abſorbed in admiration. They could not be perſwaded to keep at a diſtance, but would get ſo cloſe to the anvil as to receive occaſionally a hot ſpark on their naked bodies; nor did this deter them from catching with their hands the luminous particles that flew from under the ſtroke of

the hammer. It was with ſome difficulty they could be drawn away from a ſcene that was ſo new and intereſting ; however, the noiſe of the neighbouring cooper, who was repairing the water-caſks, was attracting enough to allure them to his hut. The agility with which they ſaw this man work, the whirling of the caſks, the knocking down of the hoops, the ſound from within, and the quickneſs with which they perceived a defective caſk was brought round and perfect, ſeemed altogether to impoſe on their minds a kind of magic influence. They ſtood and ſtared at one another with looks equally expreſſive of aſtoniſhment and pleaſure.

In conſequence of what had been explained relative to the ſwivel guns, the king's imagination had amply worked on the ſubject ; he expreſſed a wiſh to have one of them to take with him on the next expedition ; this the captain endeavoured to convince him would be impoſſible, as they had no boats able to receive it. The king then requeſted to have the ſix-pounder fired. If they were ſurpriſed (as we have already noticed) at the diſcharge of a muſket, it may eaſily be imagined in how great a proportion the report of this piece muſt have affected them. During the time the gunner was loading it, not a circumſtance of the whole proceſs eſcaped their notice ; and when the lighted match was put to the train, they perceived an inſtantaneous blaze, ſucceeded by a moſt violent noiſe ; which ſeemed to ſtun them all, as every one of the natives, for more than a quarter of an hour, kept his fingers in his ears, calling out, Magul! Magul! that is, very bad. Pleaſed and ſurpriſed as they were at the noiſe, it was evidently too violent for their organs ; their hooting and ſhouting, on hearing the exploſion, was hardly to be deſcribed ; and this was increaſed by the accident of ſome of the wad ſetting fire to the dry leaves of a tree which projected acroſs the cove. What they had ſeen, ſtimulated ſtill more their wiſh of having

one of the ſwivels on their expedition, as it would prove not only deſtructive to the perſons, but to the property of their enemies. One very material objection againſt complying with their deſire, was, the great conſumption of powder it would occaſion; beſides which, the neceſſity there would have been of the Gunner's attendance, who was too uſeful a man to be ſpared.

Sept. 15. After a night of wind and rain, thunder and lightning, about ten o'clock in the morning, two canoes came into the harbour. By them our people learnt that the battle was over, their companions all well, and that they would ſoon follow them. Towards evening other canoes arrived. They were received with great joy by their countrymen at Oroolong, and ſtill more ſo, from their bringing back with them the welcome news of the king's ſucceſs. The following account of this expedition is nearly in the words in which I received it from Mr. M. Wilſon, who was himſelf an actor in the whole buſineſs:

"The night we quitted Oroolong we got to Pelew, "and on the evening of the next day we all aſſem- "bled on the cauſeway, and went on board the "canoes ſtationed there to receive us. We were "followed to the ſhore by a number of old men, "women, and children, who appeared to be drawn "together both by curioſity and intereſt. When "the canoes were quiting the land, a conch-ſhell "was loudly ſounded, to notify our departure; and "other canoes diſpatched to different parts of the iſ- "land, to collect various detachments which were "lying off in creeks and remote places, and only "waited the king's ſignal to join him; and thus "reinforced, being upwards of two hundred canoes, "we proceeded, during the night, towards Ar- "tignall, but ſtopped, ſome hours before day-light, "at an iſland ſubject to Abba Thulle, were we went "on ſhore, and ſlept on the ground for near three

" hours, then re-embarked, and arrived off Artingall " a little before day-break ; here they all halted till " the rifing of the ſun, it being a maxim with the " natives of Pelew, never to attack an enemy in the " dark, or take him by ſuppriſe.

" Abba Thulle had previouſly notified to the king " of Artingall, that he intended in a few days to " offer him battle ; ſo the latter was not unprepared " for the event. The king then ordered the conch to " be ſounded, and ſtanding up in his canoe, in the " ſcarlet coat my brother had given him, waved " his chiman-ſtick in the air, as a ſignal for the " different ſquadrons to arrange themſelves for " battle.

" Whilſt this was doing, the enemy aſſembled " their canoes cloſe under the land, and kept blowing " their conch-ſhell, as in defiance of us but did not " ſeem diſpoſed to quit the ſhore and attack us. The " ten Engliſh were divided in ten different canoes ; " the king taking one in his canoe, the general " another, and the reſt going ſingly with one or " other of the rupacks, each Engliſhman having " a muſket, cutlaſs, bayonet, and piſtol. There were " ſeveral light canoes, containing four men each, " every one having a white feather in his hair; theſe " were conſtantly buſied in conveying orders from " the king and general to the other chiefs. They " flew from ſquadron to ſquadron, cutting through " the water with aſtoniſhing velocity ; and were, " for diſtinction ſake, called by the Engliſh, the fri- " gate canoes.

" The king, perceiving a total unwillingneſs in " the enemy to quit their ſtation under the ſhore, " and conceiving he could not attack them in that " ſituation with any advantage, diſpatched ſome of " the frigate canoes to order a ſquadron to conceal " themſelves behind ſome high land. This arrange- " ment being made, they exchanged a few diſtant

" ſpears:—The conch then was ſounded, and the " king of Pelew made a feint to run away, ſhewing " the example in his own canoe.

" This artful manoeuvre of Abda Thulle gave " inſtant courage to the enemy, who induced to think " their antagoniſt had been ſeized with a ſudden " panic, prepared in great haſte to quit the ſhore, " and began to give chaſe to the king, who they " imagined was flying before them, upon ſeeing this, " the detatched ſquadron of canoes, that had " been poſted behind the high land, ruſhed out be- " tween the enemy and the iſland, to cut off their " retreat. When the king found his ſtratagem had " taken effect, he turned, and made a ſignal for " the reſt of his fleet to form themſelves into divi- " ſions, and engage, wereupon a general attack took " place. The ſpears were mutually directed with " much animoſity, and the Engliſh kept up a con- " tinual fire, which not only did great execution, " but puzzled and bewildered the enemy in the ex- " treme, to comprehend how or why their people " dropped, without receiving any apparent blow: " they perceived they had holes in their bodies, yet " ſaw no ſpear ſticking in them, nor could they de- " viſe by what means they had thus in a moment be- " come deprived of motion and life.

" No ſooner therefore did the firing of the muſ- " kets ſpread diſmay among the people of Artingall, " than a different effect was produced in thoſe of " Pelew: the moment the report was made, they " all roſe up in their canoes, and ſet up ſuch a " hallooing and ſhouting, that the whole air was " filled with their noiſe, which greatly added to the " terror of the enemy, who, finding themſelves " unequal to ſo powerful an attack, betook them- " ſelves to flight. Six canoes only were taken, and " nine priſoners, which they accounted a large num- " ber, it being ſeldom that they captured their ene-

" mies, as the vanquiſhed always endeavour to carry " away their killed and wounded, that the victors may " not have their bodies to expoſe.

" Our fleet now rode triumphant along the coaſt " of Artingall, ſounding the conch in defiance of " their adverſary, and firing among them when " any appeared near enough to be reached by the " muſkets. The engagement from beginning to end " did not exceed three hours; and, after parading " along their ſhore, and in vain provoking a freſh " combat, Abba Thulle ordered the canoes to make " a diſpoſition to return, which was ſoon done, and " we ſet forward towards Pelew.

" All the nine priſoners had received wounds in " battle; and, in ſpite of whatever we could urge " againſt the cruelty of putting them to death, yet " they would hear nothing in their behalf, and ſoon " exterminated them. In juſtification of a proceed- " ing which ſo ſtrongly contradicted the general " humanity of the natives of Pelew, they alledged " the neceſſity of doing it for their own ſecurity, " aſſuring us that they had formerly only detained " them priſoners, and kept them as menial ſervants, " but that they always found means to get back " to their own country, and having, by living " amongſt the Pelew people, become well acquaint- " ed with the channels and creeks of the iſland, " they had afterwards made uſe of that knowledge " to land frequently by ſtealth, and commit great " depredations; and on this conſideration, that ſtep " which we ſo much condemned, had become neceſ- " ſary to them.

" Among the priſoners was a rupack, who had a " bone on his wriſt; the Pelew people, after he was " captured, ſtrove all in their power to take from " him this mark of dignity, the chief defended it " with ſingular courage, and loſt his life in endea- " vouring to ſave his order. When brought to Pelew,

" his head was cut off, and ſtuck on a bamboo, fix-
" ed up before the king's houſe.

" Abba Thulle in his return to Pelew ſtoped, and
" went on ſhore in ſeveral ſmall iſlands, expoſing
" publicly the dead bodies of his priſoners; and the
" people at all theſe places ſeemed to rejoice much
" at his victory, bringing out ſweet drink, and other
" refreſhments.—We could not learn what num-
" ber the enemy loſt, but were confident it muſt
" be conſiderable. Not a ſingle perſon of the
" king's party was killed, though there were a few
" wounded.

" It was dark before we reached Pelew; on com-
" ing near it, the conch was ſounded to notify the
" king's approach. When we landed at the wharf
" from whence we had departed, a vaſt concourſe of
" people were ready to receive us, bringing with
" them a quantity of refreſhments. Here we ſtop-
" ped till all were landed and got together, and
" then went up to Pelew, where there was ſinging
" and dancing moſt part of the night; the natives
" attributing the ſucceſs of the day to us, and often
" in their ſongs repeating the word Englees."

Octo. 14. The cook having been very negligent in his buſineſs, often ſpoiling the rice; and being ſuſpected, in concert with one of the Chinamen, his aſſiſtant, of appropriating to themſelves part of the very ſmall quantity of meat they could afford to boil with it; he was ordered to be puniſhed with a cobbing.

Raa Kook, ſeeing theſe poor fellows tied up, appeared concerned, and applied to Captain Wilſon to beg them off; but the ſafety of this little community abſolutely required that regularity and obedience ſhould be preſerved; and this was fully explained to the general; as an apology for his requeſt not being complied with.

Oct. 16. A canoe came into the harbour with fiſh, and a turtle of about two hundred pounds weight.

Raa Kook ſent the turtle to the king, but gave our people moſt of the fiſh. In the afternoon a canoe came from Pelew, to notify to the general the arrival of the chief miniſter of Artingall at that place, who had brought with him offers of peace. Notice of it was ſent to Captain Wilſon.

Raa Kook appeared much pleaſed with the news, and told the captain that he ſuppoſed this was the reaſon why his brother Abba Thulle was not come up before, but that he would be at Oroolong the next day. A canoe came in the next morning, and brought ſome fiſh. The general gave our people three, which ſerved every one for dinner, and was the ſaving of two hams; the king arrived about ten o'clock in the harbour, attended by nine canoes. With him came his youngeſt daughter, Erre Beſs, and eight or nine women, who, except the ſingle woman juſt before mentined were the firſt who had viſited Oroolong, the king ordered a preſent of yams, cocoa-nuts, and ſweatmeats, to be given to our people; after which he landed. He led his daughter by the hand on ſhore, who ſeemed to be about nine years of age; and of whom he ſeemed to be immoderately fond. The general took care of all the other females, and ſhewed them about the cove. The king, after apologiſing to Captain Wilſon for not having been able to come to Oroolong ſooner to thank him for his ſervices, ſeemed impatient to view the works carrying on. He took the tackalbys, or artificers, who came with him to ſee the veſſel, and appeared much delighted to obſerve the form it had taken ſince he had laſt been on the iſland, and was quite aſtoniſhed at the conveniences he found it had.

After they had amuſed themſelves in ſeeing every thing that was going forward, a canvaſs was ſpread in the cove for the king, the general, and the ladies; the Captain entertained them with fiſh,

and boiled rice mixed with molaſſes, which never having taſted before, they ſeemed to reliſh very much.

The king, in converſing with the captain, wanted to know where he kept his powder, and how much he had? He anſwered, that the gunner, who had the care of it, was abſent; but when he came home in the evening he would inquire. Abbe Thulle, ſeeming to recollect that there might be ſome impropriety in the queſtion, changed the diſcourſe inſtantly, nor reſumed it any more.

Abba Thulle informed the captain that he was now at peace with moſt of his neighbours, but that he believed he was indebted for this peace to their muſkets; he therefore hoped the Engliſh would give him ſome when they went away? To this the captain replied, that he ſhould certainly have five. At this he ſeemed well pleaſed.

In the afternoon, he took his canoes and people to the watering-place. This amiable prince was perpetually giving new proofs of his attention to the Engliſh: as he commonly came with a conſiderable retinue, he obſerved that when he arrived, our people left off working, and thence conceived it was for fear the natives ſhould pilfer their tools, which he knew they ſometimes could not refrain from; therefore, as ſoon as he had dined, he made them all retire with him to the back of the iſland, that he might leſs impede that buſineſs, which he ſaw our countrymen had ſo much at heart.

He had not been at the watering-place long before he ſent for Captain Wilſon to come over to him. His canoes had juſt come in from fiſhing, a large quantity which they had caught lay on the ground, near where the king was ſitting, divided into two parcels; and the reaſon why the captain had been ſent for, was to give him one of the portions, which

conſiſted of ten large fiſh. Three of the Artingall people being with the king, they were pointed out to Captain Wilſon, who gave them an invitation to breakfaſt.

Oct. 19. The general, accompanied by the Artingall people, came, as invited, to breakfaſt with the Engliſh. They ſhewed them their tents, and the work that was going forward, with which they ſeemed aſtoniſhed, and particularly with the ſwivel and ſix-pounder. When they were ſhewn the ſmall-arms, they by forcible geſtures ſeemed to deſcribe that thoſe were the inſtruments which had killed ſo many of their countrymen at Artingall. They did not appear to entertain the ſlighteſt animoſity, but ſhook hands with the Engliſh in much amity, and received the civilities offered them with great thankfulneſs.

When the fiſhing canoes came in, a large portion of what they had taken, was given to the Engliſh. Whilſt they were ſitting with the king, a flying fox ſettled on a tree near where they were; Captain Wilſon's ſervant, who had been ſhooting pigeons in that part of the iſland, juſt then coming up, and having his piece loaded, ſhot it. The Artingall people who were preſent, ſeeing the animal drop from the top of a lofty tree, without any thing apparently paſſing to it, one of them ran to take it up, and on examining it, perceived the holes which the ſhot had pierced, and remarked, that ſuch of their own countrymen as loſt their lives in the late battles, fell down with holes in their bodies juſt like this animal, and died.

Whilſt theſe men teſtified their natural ſurpriſe, Abba Thulle and the general, who were now become maſters of the power and effect of the muſket, could not forbear ſmiling at finding their Artingall viſitors had at laſt diſcovered what had ſo completely defeated their force, as well as overpowered their comprehenſion.

In the converſation Captain Wilſon had with the king this day, he appeared extremely anxious that our people would not leave his country without making him previouſly acquainted of the time they intended going, ſaying he would ſend two men with them to England, and promiſed to give them colours to paint their veſſel.

Nov. 3. The weather being now fair and ſettled, with freſh gales of wind from the north-eaſt, the carpenters were employed in making the rudder, and Albert Pierſon the quarter-maſter, in making the maſts out of ſome of the ſmall ſpars ſaved from the wreck; ſome buſied in caulking the deck, and others in painting the ſides, which, in addition to the coat that the king's people intended to give her, would be ſufficient to keep out the weather. In the evening, they held a conſultation about the method of launching their veſſel, which they had now nearly completed, when it was agreed to lay ways, though it had been propoſed by ſome to do it by large rollers, as they ſometimes launch cutters. This was a matter of ſerious moment, for had any accident happened to the veſſel during this operation, their tools being nearly worn out, and their former reſources from the wreck at an end, their deſtiny muſt, in all human probability, have been to have paſſed the remainder of their days, exiled from the reſt of the world, in theſe remote iſlands.

Nov. 4. This morning, two canoes being ſeen near the harbour, and neither of them coming in, contributed not a little to increaſe the ſuſpicions entertained by our people, that the natives intended to prevent their departure. At dark, they went to a quarter-watch, loaded the ſwivels and ſix pounder with grape ſhot, and kept a good look out to prevent ſurprize. The alarm our people felt, was, that being near leaving the iſlands, the natives (who had experienced the great utility the Engliſh were of to

them) might endeavour to detain them, by attempting to ſeize their arms, and poſſeſs themſelves of their veſſel. It was in vain that Captain Wilſon ſtrove to remove theſe apprehenſions, by recalling to their memory the generoſity the king and all his people had ſhewn them, on every occaſion, ſince they had been thrown upon his territories; that his behaviour had been always to them humane, unreſerved and unſuſpicious; that therefore there could be no room now to doubt the ſincerity of a people who had, in all the time they had been under their protection, never gave them any real cauſe for miſtruſt; that it materially behoved them, in their preſent ſituation, not to let the natives ſee they entertained any; that by doing otherwiſe, they might put ideas into their minds, which, but for their own indiſcretion, might never have occurred. Nor did he fail to ſet before them, the little avail of all the force of the Engliſh, if the natives were reſolved upon any ſuch enterprize as they ſuſpected; he repreſented to them, that their ammunition muſt be ſoon expended, in caſe of hoſtilities; that the natives could hinder their embarking, even if their veſſel was launched; that it was in their power, without coming to extremities, to make them ſubmit to any terms, by depriving them of the ſpring of freſh water, ſhould they chuſe to come to the iſland in any number.

All theſe arguments were unable to ſubdue the general apprehenſion, not more than two or three uniting in ſentiment with the captain; it was therefore concluded, after a long conſultation on the matter, that every one ſhould be ſtrictly on his guard, that the ſwivels and ſix-pounder ſhould continue to be kept loaded with grape ſhot, the ſmall-arms ready charged with ball, and the cartouch boxes filled with loaded cartridges; but that every one ſhould carefully avoid all appearance of ſuſpicion; and, as their numbers were inadequate to reſiſt ſuch

a multitude as might attack them, that they muſt then uſe their abilities in ſingling out the chiefs, and by ſuch a meaſure throw confuſion and diſmay among the reſt.

As the faithful hiſtorian of theſe tranſactions, it is my duty to record every material occurrence; though, I muſt confeſs that my hand ſhrinks from the paper, whilſt, impreſſed with horror and pity, I am compelled to relate, that the lives firſt intended to be devoted, were thoſe of the humane, liberal king, the manly and benevolent general, and the facetious and inoffenſive Arra Kooker. But, however this reſolution may ſhock the reader, yet he will candidly aſcribe this daring conception, not to a want of generoſity, nor to a forgetfulneſs of the bonds of hoſpitality, but to its real cauſe, the weakneſs of human nature, operating on two conflicting paſſions—the hope of immediate delivery, and the dread of perpetual detention: the agitated mind ſaw no alternative, and in its perturbation threw down the barrier of every nice ſentiment.

After the deſperate reſolution juſt recorded to have been taken, it is with particular ſatisfaction that I inform the reader, that this frenzy of the Engliſh, ſuggeſted by anxiety and deſpair, was but of ſhort duration; the cool reflections of the night weakened their apprehenſions, by convincing them ſo fully of the force of the captain's arguments, that with the morning, their wonted good will towards the natives returned, inſomuch, that after breakfaſt he found no difficulty in getting the pinnace manned to go to Pelew with all the iron and tools they could ſpare, having made the king ſuch a promiſe, whenever their veſſel ſhould be completed. Mr. Sharp and Mr. M. Wilſon went down in the boat, with orders to inform the king, that the Engliſh would be ready to ſail in ſix or ſeven days; and that they wiſhed to ſee the king and his chiefs before their departure, that they might make them their perſonal acknow-

ledgements, for the kind ſervices and protection they had received from them.

While Mr. Sharp and Mr. M. Wilſon were receiving the above inſtructions, Madan Blanchard, one of the ſeamen, came into the tent for ſome tools that he wanted, and hearing the captain giving theſe orders to Tom Roſe, deſired him alſo to tell the king, that when his countrymen went away, he intended to ſtay behind, and remain with him at Pelew, Captain Wilſon deſired him not to ſend any ſuch idle meſſage, and to go about his buſineſs, and forbad Tom Roſe to deliver it: upon which, Blanchard very ſeriouſly deſired it might be delivered, aſſuring the captain, that it was his ſettled determination to remain at Pelew, if the king would permit him. Finding he had taken up ſuch a ſtrange reſolution, the captain endeavoured all in his power to diſſuade him from it; but perceiving all his arguments ineffectual, deſired his men to try to divert him from ſo ſingular an intention; in which if he ſtill preſiſted, the captain might know how to act when the king ſhould come next to Oroolong. Soon after the pinnace ſailed. In the evening, after the people had left off work, ſome of them acquainted the captain that they had endeavoured, though in vain, to perſuade Blanchard to alter his reſolution; as he was determined to ſpeak to the king himſelf, the firſt opportunity, about it, finding his meſſage had not been ſent: therefore, to avoide any diſpute with him, or miſunderſtanding with the king, it was judged beſt to let him follow his own inclination; and, in order to engage the natives as much as poſſible in his intereſt, as well as to make a merit of what could not be avoided, it was determined to make it appear as a favour to the king, letting one of the Engliſh remain behind with him. There was ſomething in theſe people, or the manners of the country which had ſo forcibly worked on Blanchard's imagination, the firſt time he went with them to fight

againſt Artingall, that on his return, while in the canoes, he declared to his companions that he would moſt willingly partake of all their labour, would lend them every aſſiſtance in his power towards building and fitting out their new veſſel ; but that when they departed he would remain behind, and end his days among the natives of Pelew. This was at the time looked on as a jeſt ; but he never varied from theſe ſentiments, and now proved his reſolution was unalterable.

Blanchard having come over with the king in the morning, gave an account to his comrades of his treatment after the captain and his companions had left him ; the king, he ſaid, was very much pleaſed in the thought of his being to remain at Pelew, and with his readineſs to ſtay with them, and had promiſed to make him a rupack, and to give him two wives, together with a houſe and plantations : aſſuring him, that he would do every thing to make him happy and contented, and that he ſhould always be with himſelf or Raa Kook.

Madan Blanchard was a man of a ſingular character, about twenty years of age, of rather a grave turn of mind, at the ſame time poſſeſſing a conſiderable degree of dry humour, and what rendered the circumſtance of his determination the more remarkable is, that it was well known he had formed no particular attachment on the iſland. His good-tempered, inoffenſive behaviour during the voyage, had gained him the regard of all his ſhip-mates ; and, ſeeing the extraordinary reſolution he had taken of remaining behind, every one was anxious to intereſt the natives in his favour, As he perſevered in his reſolution to the laſt, every reader will naturally feel a wiſh to learn ſome what of the ſubſequent fortune of a man, voluntarily cutting himſelf off from the reſt of the world, doubtful as the event may be, whether this knowledge may hereafter ever reach our ears. It is by no means improbable, if he has

conducted himself well, that by this time he may have become a character of considerable consequence, courage he possessed in an eminent degree, a virtue held in high estimation by the natives. Unfortunately, his situation in life having denied him any advantage of education, he was unable either to write or read, otherwise, his memoirs, since the year 1783, well digested, might, to all the investigators of simple nature, be infinitely more interesting than those of half the ministers and statesmen of Europe, who have only bequeathed to posterity a remembrance of all those dark counsels, secret devices, and profligate intrigues, which disturbed the tranquility of the age they lived in.

Nov. 9. The night proving fine, every hand had sufficient employment in preparing things for launching the vessel. At day light they began to try their work, to see if their preparations would answer their wishes, and sent to the king, who, with all his attendants, came over to be present at the launch. About seven o'clock, our people happily got their vessel afloat. They gave three huzzas at her going off, in which they were joined by the natives, whose friendly hearts seemed on this occasion to feel a satisfaction little inferior to that of our people, which may be supposed to have been great indeed. The English shook hands with each other, with a cordiality but seldom experienced ; and the mutual look of congratulation, exchanged from eye to eye, conveyed to each other's feelings, with energy and ardour, those sentiments of transport which words could not with equal force have communicated. The long-wished for moment of deliverance was now almost arrived ; every one saw again, in imagination those objects of his affection, from whom, but a few weeks past, he thought he had been separated for ever. And the part the inhabitants of Pelew appeared to take in the comfort of the day, extinguished for the present every alarm that had been un-

juſtly entertained. Indeed the conduct of the latter now exhibited in lovelieſt colours, the triumph of native benevolence. They ſaw thoſe ſtrangers ready to depart, from whoſe aid they had benefited, and from whoſe talent and art they had received a knowledge and information which had never hitherto reached them; they ſaw them exhilerated with the proſpect of returning once more (after all their dangers) to their own country, whither they were bearing back thoſe envied faculties which they might never witneſs again. And yet we behold theſe virtuous natives, glowing with the ſpirit of true philantropy, in the general tranſport forgetting themſelves and "rejoicing with thoſe that rejoiced!"

The veſſel was immediately hauled into a dock that had been dug for her, and ſafely moored, when all went to breakfaſt—the king and the rupacks with the captain, the attendants with the people: this was indeed the happieſt and moſt comfortable meal they had eaten ſince the loſs of the Antelope. When breakfaſt was over, they got up ſhears, and took in the maſts, the water caſks, and the two ſix-pounders. In the morning, the king ſent a meſſage to captain Wilſon, deſiring him to come to him at the watering place; and on his arrival acquainted him, that it was his intention to inveſt him with the Order of the Bone, and make him in form a rupack of the firſt rank. The captain expreſſed his acknowledgements for the honour he purpoſed to confer on him, and the pleaſure he felt at being admitted a chief of Pelew. The king and all the rupacks then went and ſat down under the ſhade of ſome large trees, and Captain Wilſon was deſired to ſit at a little diſtance; when Raa Kook receiving the bone, preſented it, as from his brother Abbe Thulle, and all the rupacks proceeded to the inveſtment, in the following manner:

The general made a ſtring faſt to each of the fingers of the captain's left hand, and then lubri-

cating the hand with oil, paſſed the different ſtrings through the bone, and giving them to another rupack, they endeavoured to draw his hand through; Raa Kook, at the ſame time, with his own hand, compreſſing that of the captain into the ſmalleſt compaſs he poſſibly could, ſo that the bone might paſs over the joints. During this profound ſilence was preſerved. The point being at laſt obtained, and the hand fairly paſſed through, the whole aſſembly expreſſed great joy. Abba Thulle then addreſſing Captain Wilſon, told him, that the bone ſhould be rubbed bright every day, and preſerved as a teſtimony of the rank he held amongſt them; that this mark of dignity muſt, on every occaſion, be defended valaintly, nor ſuffered to be torn from his arm but with the loſs of his life.

The ceremony ended, all the rupacks congratulated Captain Wilſon on his being one of their order; and the inferior natives flocked round to look at the bone, and appeared highly pleaſed to ſee his arm adorned with it, calling him Englees Rupack.

Thoſe who have been witneſſes of the conferring the more ſplendid orders of diſtinction, beſtowed by ſovereigns of powerful and poliſhed kingdoms, where the Gothic hall is decorated with banners—where mitred prelates aſſiſt the ceremony—where the pomp of regal ſtate impoſes on the ſenſe—and the blaze of ſuperb ornaments, beaming from female beauty, gracing the ceremony, overpowers the ſpectator with a vaſt diſplay of magnificence—ſuch may, with a ſmile of contumely, read the conceptions of theſe children of nature, or be diſpoſed to ridicule the ſimplicity with which the unadorned natives of Pelew hold a chapter of their higheſt Order of the Bone. But it will be recollected, that the object and the end are every where the ſame.—This mark of diſtinction is given and received in thoſe regions as a reward of valor and fidelity, and held out as the prize of merit. In this light ſuch public ho-

nours were originally conſidered, and ſtill ought to be ſo, in every ſtate from Pelew to Britain. And while they continue to be thus regarded, they will operate on the human paſſions, excite emulation, inſpire courage, promote virtue, and challenge reſpect. The decoration indeed derives all its ſplendor from the combined ideas of the mind whilſt viewing it; and the imagination is equally impreſſed with the ſame ſentiment, whether the badge of honour be a ſtripe of velvet tied round the knee, a tuft of riband and croſs dangling at the button-hole, a ſtar embroidered on the coat, or a bone upon the arm.

Nov. 10. In the evening, when all the ſtores were on board, and the ſails bent, the captain invited Abba Thulle to accompany him in their round to the watering-place, which he declined, and went with his attendants over land; the invitation was however, accepted by the general and Arra Kooker, who were highly delighted at every manœuvre; their canoes, with many others, full of the natives, attended them, ſhouting, hallowing, and rejoicing, Raa Kook calling out continually to his people to obſerve every motion and action of the Engliſh in conducting their veſſel. Some canoes, as uſual, had been out a fiſhing, and caught a great quantity, of which they had made no diſtribution, waiting for the Engliſh to come and ſhare with them.

Abba Thulle had already, as will be recollected, hinted an intention of ſending two of his people to England, whenever the veſſel was ready to depart; and this evening, after ſupper, reverting to what he had formerly mentioned, he explained himſelf more fully on the ſubject; he told the captain, that though his ſubjects looked up to him with reſpect and regarded him as not only ſuperior in rank, but in knowledge; yet, that after being with the Engliſh and contemplating their ingenuity, he had often felt his own inſignificance, in ſeeing the loweſt man whom the captain had under his command, exerciſe talents

that he had ever been a ſtranger to; he had therefore reſolved to intruſt his ſecond ſon, whoſe name was Lee Boo, to Captain Wilſon's care, that he might have the advantage of improving by accompanying the Engliſh, and of learning many things, that might at his return greatly benefit his own country.

Capt. Wilſon replied, that he was exceeding obliged and honoured by this ſingular mark of his confidence and eſteem; that he wiſhed to aſſure him, that he ſhould endeavour to merit the high truſt repoſed in him, by treating the young prince with the ſame tenderneſs and affection as his own ſon. This anſwer gave viſible ſatisfaction.

Nov. 11. At day-light, every body was buſied in filling water, bending the ſails, completing the fire place and getting the veſſel ready for ſea.

The captain intimated to Abba Thulle, that the veſſel being completed they would ſail the next day; this circumſtance ſeemed to give great concern; he ſaid he had ſent word to the rupacks of the different iſlands in friendſhip with him, that the day after the day that the captain now mentioned, would be the time of departure, they all wiſhing to bring the Engliſh ſome preſents for their voyage, as memorials of their regard; and would in conſequence come up the evening of the next day, in full hope of ſeeing them before they quitted Oroolong, a ſatisfaction they would now be deprived of. The diſappointment the chiefs would feel, ſenſibly affected the king. The captain was alſo much hurt at finding the uneaſineſs this circumſtance had occaſioned, and the more ſo, when he perceived that the generoſity of the king's mind ſoon overcame it; for he almoſt directly told him, that, as it muſt be the laſt day, he requeſted himſelf and his officers would dine with him on ſhore; which they all accordingly did. The true cauſe which induced the Engliſh to think of going a day earlier than they had given out, was to avoid the vaſt concourſe of ſtrangers who they

knew were coming, and who, they feared, would impede their oportunity by the number of their canoes, and their curiosity to examine the veſſel. After dinner, Arra Kooker, who had, from the firſt day of his ſeeing the Newfoundland Dog, ſet his heart on the animal, and had often expreſſed a longing deſire to poſſeſs it when our people went away, now renewed his ſolicitations; from the earneſtneſs with which he begged it, and the care he aſſured them he would take of it, they were induced to make him happy, and relinquiſh all right in poor Sailor.

Before our people quitted the cove, they left an Engliſh pendant hoiſted on a large tree, which grew cloſe to where their tents had ſtood; and cut upon a plate of copper, the following inſcription, which, after being nailed to a thick board, was affixed to a tree near the ſpot where they had built their little veſſel:

The honourable
Engliſh Eaſt India Company's Ship,
The ANTELOPE,
HENERY WILSON, Commander,
Was loſt upon the reef, North of this Iſland,
In the night between the 9th and 10th of AUGUST,
Who here built a Veſſel,
And ſailed from hence,
The 12th of NOVEMBER, 1783.

The meaning of this inſcription was explained to the king, and that it was put up as a memorial of the Engliſh having been there—He was pleaſed with the idea, and explained it himſelf to his own people, promiſing that it ſhould never be taken down.

The diſcourſe of the day turned much on the ſubject of their departure; whilſt they ſat together, Abba Thulle, addreſſing Captain Wilſon, ſaid, "You

" are going; and when gone, I fear the inhabitants " of Artingall will come down in great numbers " and moleſt me, as they have done frequently before; " and, having loſt the aid of the Engliſh I ſhall " be unable to reſiſt them, unleſs you will leave me " a few of your muſkets, which you have already " taught me to hope you would."—Capt. Wilſon ſpoke to his officers on the propriety of doing this inſtantly; they ſeemed ſomewhat unwilling to put the arms they actually meant to give them, into their hands till the laſt moment; that miſtruſt which had poſſeſſed their minds, ſtill kept its hold, and appeared too ſtrongly impreſſed on their countenances to eſcape the quick diſcernment of the king; who, willing perhaps that they ſhould know he had noticed their apprehenſions, with that calm, reflecting temper which marked his character, aſked if they were afraid to truſt him with a few arms? " What is " there (ſaid he) can make you, harbour doubts of " me? I never teſtified any fear of you, but endea- " voured to convince you that I wiſhed your friend- " ſhip. Had I been diſpoſed to have harmed you, I " might have done it long ago; I have at all times " had you in my power—but only exerciſed that " power in making it uſeful to you, and can you not " confide in me at the laſt?"

Under what ſun was ever tempered the ſteel that could cut ſuch a paſſage to the heart as this juſt reproach of the king's? Every individual felt its force, and its truth; every individual alſo felt how much his mind had injured the virtues of this excellent man.—Nor was the wound of this reproach rendered leſs acute by the conſciouſneſs each man had, of having been ſo lately induced, by his unjuſt fears, to join in ſuch deſtructive council againſt him and his family.

But the eye of philoſophy will candidly view and diſcriminate between the two parties; the people of Pelew, tutored in the ſchool of nature, acted from

her impulſe alone, they were open and undiſguiſed; unconſcious of deceit themſelves, they neither feared nor looked for it in others.—Our countrymen, born and brought up in a civilized nation, where art aſſumes every form and colouring of life, and is even perfectioned into a ſcience, were faſhioned by education to ſuſpicion and diſtruſt, and awake to all their buſy ſuggeſtions.—Such is the fatal knowledge the world teaches mankind, fencing too often the human heart againſt the inlets of its own happineſs, by weakening confidence, the moſt valuable bond of ſociety!

The king's rebuke was too powerful for our people to reſiſt; they inſtantly deſired the captain to aſſure him, that whatever had been promiſed ſhould be faithfully fulfilled, and, to convince him they could have no ſuſpicions, the arms ſhould be immediately given to him; they accordingly ſent on board for the quantity of arms they could with convenience ſpare; and on the boat's return, preſented him with five muſkets, five cutlaſſes, near a barrel of gunpowder, with gun-flints, and ball in proportion. Captain Wilſon alſo made him a preſent of his fowling-piece, with which he ſeemed to be particularly pleaſed, having often ſeen its effect on the fowls and other birds at Pelew.

And now the gentle ſpirit of the king appeared to forget the trace of all that had happened; but the ſcene enabled every one preſent to tranſmit to poſterity a moſt captivating picture of the forcible, yet mild triumph of virtue!

Nov. 11. In the evening, arrived the king's ſecond ſon, Lee Boo. His father introduced him to Capt. Wilſon, and then to the officers who were on ſhore; he approached them all in ſo eaſy and ſo affable a manner, and had ſo much good humour, and ſenſibility in his countenance, that every one was immediately impreſſed in his favour, and felt that intereſt for him which his amiable manners daily

increaſed. The king now (having Lee Boo cloſe at his ſide) diſcourſed much with him, giving him inſtructions how to behave himſelf; telling him he was henceforward to look upon Capt. Wilſon as another father, and win his affection by obſerving his advice. —Then, addreſſing the Captain, ſaid, "When Lee "Boo got to England, he would have ſuch fine "things to ſee, that he might chance to ſlip away "from him, to run after novelty; but that he hoped "the Captain would keep him as much as he could "under his eye, and endeavour to moderate the ea-"gerneſs of his youth. I would wiſh you to inform "Lee Boo of all things which he ought to know, "and make him an Engliſhman.—The ſubject of "parting with my ſon I have requently revolved; "I am well aware that the diſtant countries he muſt "go through, differing much from his own, may "expoſe him to dangers, as well as to diſeaſes that "are unknown to us here, in conſequence of which "he may die. I have prepared my mind to this. I "know that death is to all men inevitable, and "whether my ſon meets this event at Pelew or elſe-"where, is immaterial; and ſhould that happen, "which your utmoſt care cannot prevent, let it not "hinder you, or your brother, or your ſon, or any "of your countrymen, returning here. I ſhall re-"ceive you, or any of your people, in friendſhip, "and rejoice to ſee you again."

Captain Wilſon repeated his aſſurance, that he would have the ſame care for Lee Boo as for his own child, and that nothing ſhould be wanting on his part to teſtify, in his attention to the ſon, the gratitude and regard he ſhould ever feel for the father.

In the morning, at day-light, an Engliſh jack was hoiſted at the maſt head of the veſſel, and one of the ſwivels fired, as a ſignal for ſailing; this being explained to the king, he ordered boats immediately to take on board yams, cocoa-nuts, ſweet meats, and other things provided for the voyage; beſide

which, many canoes of the natives, loaded with a profuſion of proviſion, lay alongſide the Oroolong—(the name given by the captain to the new ſchooner.)

As ſoon as the veſſel was loaded with every thing they could take on board, and ready for ſea, the boat was ſent on ſhore for the captain; who acquainting the king therewith, he ſignified that he and his ſon would come on board preſently in his canoe. Captain Wilſon then took Blanchard, as alſo the five men who had come on ſhore for him, into a temporary houſe, and once more requeſted Blanchard to impreſs on his memory all that advice which he had before given him, and particularly to be obſervant of his duty, that the people of Pelew might thereby ſee that he retained that faith and ſenſe of religion in which he had been trained. He then made the ſeamen preſent kneel down with him, and unite in thankſgiving to that Supreme Being, who had not only ſupported their ſpirits in the midſt of ſevere toils and dangers, but had now opened to them the means of deliverance. During this act of devotion, the king and his chiefs remained near the entrance of the houſe, obſerved and well knew what our people were about, and preſerved a profound ſilence.

It muſt alſo be noticed, that when Lee Boo came up, a baſket, with ſome dozens of a fruit reſembling an apple, was brought from Pelew; they ſpoke of them as a fruit that was very rare, and ſaid they were juſt coming in ſeaſon. The captain gave one to each of his officers, being a fruit they had not ſeen before; and the reſt he carefully reſerved for his young paſſenger, to treat him with during his voyage.

About eight o'clock in the morning, the captain went on board in his boat; the king, with his ſon Lee Boo, and his rupacks, followed him very ſoon in their canoes. The Oroolong now proceeded towards

the reef; and, loaded as ſhe had been by Abba Thulle's bounty, even to ſuperfluity, with whatever he conceived might be uſeful or pleaſant to his departing friends, yet on either ſide of her were a multitude of canoes, filled with the common natives, who had all brought our people preſents from themſelves, entreating they might be accepted. It was in vain they were told that the veſſel was ſo full there was no room to receive any thing more; each held up a little ſomething, "Only this from me"—"Only this from me," was the general cry; the repetition of which was urged with ſuch ſupplicating countenances, and watry eyes, that this bewitching teſtimony of affection and generoſity almoſt overcame every one on board. From ſome of thoſe who were neareſt, a few yams or cocoa-nuts were accepted; and the poor creatures whoſe entreaties could not be attended to, unable to bear the diſappointment, paddled a-head, and threw the little preſents they had brought, into the pinnace, totally ignorant that ſhe was to return with Blanchard.

The king accompanied the Engliſh in their veſſel, almoſt to the reef, before he made a ſignal for his canoe to come along-ſide; he gave Lee Boo his bleſſing, wiſhing him happy and proſperous, which his ſon received with great reſpect.—Seeing Captain Wilſon buſied in giving directions to his people, he waited till he found him quite at liberty, and then went up and embraced him with great tenderneſs, ſhewing, by his looks and voice, how much he was diſtreſſed to bid him farewel; he ſhook all the officers by the hand, in a moſt cordial manner; ſaying, "You are happy becauſe you are going home; I "am happy to find you are happy—but ſtill very "unhappy myſelf to ſee you going away." Then, aſſuring our people of his affectionate wiſhes for their ſucceſsful voyage, he went over the ſide of the veſſel into his canoe. As the canoes drew cloſe and ſurrounded that of the king, the natives all looked

up eagerly, as to take leave, whilſt their countenances expreſſed all their benevolent hearts felt, in looks more expreſſive than language. Our countrymen might with truth ſay, they left a whole people in tears; and ſo ſenſibly were they impreſſed themſelves by this intereſting ſcene, that when Abba Thulle and his train turned back to Oroolong, they were hardly able to give them three cheers, and their eyes purſued them to catch the lateſt look.

Having now bid adieu to this good and amiable prince, it may not be improper to give an outline of his general character.—It is more than probable, that the curtain is for ever dropped between him and the world! He is entered into his own unnoticed domains, where he and his anceſtry have paſſed a long ſucceſſion of ages in oblivious ſilence, unknowing and unknown to their cotemporaries inhabiting the reſt of the globe. An accident wholly unexpected, hath given us at laſt a tranſient ſight of theſe people; nor is it likely that they will again be ſought or looked after, as they poſſeſs nothing but good ſenſe and virtue, and live in a country which ſupplies no materials that may tempt the avarice of mankind to diſturb their tranquility. If they have not, nor yet know the comforts of civilized nations, the advantages of arts, or the blandiſhments of luxury—they have, in counterpoiſe, been ignorant of the anxieties they awaken, the paſſions which they inflame, and the crimes they give birth to!—Even in their ſtate of native ſimplicity, as pictured in the foregoing pages, there is, I ſhould conceive, ſufficient matter to intereſt, and ſtill far more to admire. With regard to the excellent man, who ruled over theſe ſons of Nature, he certainly, in every part of his conduct, ſhewed himſelf firm, noble, and benevolent; there was a dignity in all his deportment, a gentleneſs in all his manners, and a warmth and ſenſibility about his heart, that won the love of all who approached him.—Nature had beſtowed on him

a contemplative mind, which he had improved by thoſe reflections that good ſenſe dictated, and obſervation confirmed. His remarks on the affair of the muſkets were as pointed, and at the ſame time as delicate a reproof as perhaps were ever thrown out. His converſation with Captain Wilſon, reſpecting his ſon, whilſt it ſhewed an unbounded confidence on the part of the king, marked alſo the force of great ſentiment and reaſoning.

The happineſs of his people ſeemed to be always in Abba Thulle's thoughts. In order more effectually to ſtimulate them to uſeful labour, he had himſelf learnt all the few arts they poſſeſſed, and was looked on, in ſome of them, to be the beſt workman in his dominions. In ſhort, had his lot been thrown to rule over a great nation, connected with mankind, one is at liberty to conjecture, that his talents and natural diſpoſition might have made him the Peter of the ſouthern world!

Placed as he was by providence in its obſcurer ſcenes, he lived beloved by his chiefs, and revered by his people; over whom, whilſt he preſerved a dignity that diſtinguiſhed his ſuperior ſtation, he reigned more as the father than a ſovereign. The eyes of his ſubjects beheld their naked prince with as much awe and reſpect, as thoſe are viewed with, who govern poliſhed nations, and are decorated with all the dazzling parade and ornaments of royalty; nor was the purple robe, or the ſplendid diadem neceſſary to point out a character, which the maſterly hand of Nature had rendered ſo perfect!

Having paſſed the reef, and being clear of preſent danger, every one would have been in great ſpirits, had not the pain of quitting theſe friendly people overſhadowed their joy. Raa Kook remained very penſive, and ſuffered the veſſel to proceed a conſiderable way from the reef before he recollected himſelf, and ſummoned his canoes to return. As this chief had been their firſt and truly valuable friend, they

preſented him with a brace of piſtols, and a cartouch-box loaded with proper cartridges. The pinnace being now at the ſide of the veſſel, the captain and officers were prepared to take leave of the general; but, when the moment of ſeparation arrived, he was ſo affected, that he was at firſt unable to ſpeak; he took them cordially by the hand, and pointing with the other to his heart, ſaid, it was there he felt the pain of bidding them farewel; nor were there any on board who ſaw his departure without ſharing nearly the ſame diſtreſs. He addreſſed Lee Boo by his name, and ſpoke a few words to him; but, being unable to proceed, he went into the boat, when, immediately quitting the rope, he gave our people a laſt affectionate look, then dropped aſtern.

This excellent man had a great expreſſion of ſenſibility in his countenance, tempered with abundant good nature. His character was firm and determined, yet full of humanity; in whatever he undertook he was ſteady and perſevering; he delivered his orders to the people with the utmoſt lenity, but would be obeyed; and they, on every occaſion, ſeemed to ſerve him with ardor and alacrity, as if mingling affection with duty. His mind was ſtrong and active, his behaviour manly and courteous, and accompanied with ſo nice a ſenſe of honour, that he felt it wounded whenever any of the natives had, by their thefts, violated the laws of hoſpitality, which he held moſt ſacred, and always diſcovered an impatience till he could make them reſtore what they had taken away. This he carried ſo far as even to ſhew his diſpleaſure at the chief miniſter, for requeſting a cutlaſs of captain Wilſon, (at the firſt interview) thinking it a breach of this virtue, to ſolicit a favour of thoſe who were ſo ſituated, as not to be at liberty to refuſe the requeſt, though the granting it might be inconvenient. To all theſe circumſtances I muſt add, that the concern he diſcovered in taking leave of his nephew, and our countrymen, evidently proved there

was no ſmall portion of ſenſibility lodged about his heart.

Whilſt I am cloſing this remark on the character of Raa Kook, I cannot avoid making a general obſervation on the people of Pelew, who, though they appeared to be philoſophers in adverſity, Stoics in pain, and heroes in death; yet, in many of the more delicate feelings of the human breaſt, they poſſeſſed all the amiable tenderneſs of a woman!

Nov. 12. The two firſt days after leaving the Pelew iſlands, our people had tolerable weather. The motion of the veſſel at firſt made Lee Boo very ſick, and obliged him frequently to lie down; this ſickneſs abating, he had one of the apples given him which had been brought from Pelew; he expreſſed a doubt about eating it; but, being told it was the captain's deſire, and that Abba Thulle had ſent them for him, he obſerved, that he was much indulged, none but a few great people having his father's permiſſion to eat of this fruit. The captain had prayers this forenoon read upon deck; all our people having, in this happy deliverance, too ſtrong a recollection of the mercies of providence not to offer them pulickly, with hearts full of grattiude.

Nov. 17. The weather continuing fair, they kept on their courſe, with variable winds and weather, till,

Nov. 26. About nine o'clock, they ſaw land upon their quarter, bearing from N. E. one half N. to Eaſt N. E. being part of the iſland of Formoſa.

Nov. 30. Captain Wilſon procured a pilot to conduct their veſſel between the iſlands to Macoa; and when they came in ſight of it, an Engliſh jack was hoiſted at the maſt-head, which being ſeen by the officers of the Portugueſe ſhips at anchor in the Typa, they immediately ſent their boats to meet our people, bringing with them fruit and proviſions, as alſo men to aſſiſt them, judging, from the ſize of

their little veſſel, that they muſt be part of ſome Engliſh ſhip's crew that had been wrecked; and one of the officers was ſo obliging, as to wait with his boat to take the captain on ſhore to the governor.

Before captain Wilſon went on ſhore, Lee Boo, on ſeeing the large Portugueſe ſhips at anchor in the Typa, appeared to be greatly aſtoniſhed, exclaiming, as he looked at them, Clow, clow, mue clow! that is, large, large, very large! He gave our people an early opportunity of ſeeing the naturally benevolence of his mind; for ſome of the Chineſe boats, that are rowed by poor Tartar women, with their little children tied to their backs (and who live in families on the water) ſurrounded the veſſel, to petition for fragments of victuals, the young prince gave them oranges, and ſuch other things as he had, being particularly attentive to offer them thoſe things which he liked beſt himſelf.

Dec. 1. The Portugueſe gentleman, who paid Captain Wilſon this viſit, expreſſed much pleaſure in ſeeing the Pelew prince, and on going on ſhore, requeſted that the New Man (as he called Lee Boo) might be permitted to viſit his family. This being the firſt houſe our young traveller had ever ſeen, he was apparently loſt in ſilent admiration; what ſtruck moſt his imagination at firſt, was the upright walls and the flat ceilings of the rooms; he ſeemed as if puzzling himſelf to comprehend how they could be formed. When he was introduced to the ladies of the family, his deportment was ſo eaſy and polite, that it was exceeded only by his abundant good-nature; ſo far from being embarraſſed, he permitted the company to examine his hands, which were tattooed, and appeared pleaſed with the attention ſhewn him. When he retired with Captain Wilſon, his behaviour left on the mind of every one preſent the impreſſion, that however great the ſurpiſe might be, which the ſcenes of a new world had awakened in him,

it could hardly be exceeded by that which his own amiable manners and native poliſh would excite in others.

Macoa being the firſt land our people had ſet foot on ſince they left the Pelew iſlands, they congratulated one another very cordially, Lee Boo ſeeming to join in the congratulation as warmly as any one. Mr. M'Intyre conducted them to his own houſe, where they were introduced into a large hall lighted up, with a table in the middle, covered for ſupper, and a ſideboard handſomely decorated. Here a new ſcene burſt at once on Lee Boo's mind, he was all eye, all admiration. It was in truth to him a ſcene of magic. Amongſt the things that ſolicited his notice, was a large mirror at the upper end of the hall, which reflected almoſt his whole perſon. Here Lee Boo ſtood in perfect amazement at ſeeing himſelf; he laughed—he drew back, and returned to look again, quite abſorbed in wonder. He made an effort to look behind as if conceiving ſomebody was there, but found the glaſs fixed cloſe to the wall.

Soon after our people came on ſhore, ſome of them went to purchaſe things they were in want of, in doing which they did not forget Lee Boo, who was a favourite with them all; they brought him ſome little trinkets, ſuch as they thought would from their novelty pleaſe him. Amongſt them was a ſtring of large glaſs beads, the firſt ſight of which almoſt threw him into an extaſy; he hugged them with a tranſport that could not be exceeded by the intereſted poſſeſſor of a ſtring of pearls of equal magnitude. His imagination told him, he had in his hands all the wealth the world could afford him. He ran with eagerneſs to Captain Wilſon, to ſhew him his riches; and, enraptured with the idea that his family ſhould ſhare them with him, he, in the utmoſt agitation, entreated Captain Wilſon, would immediately get him a Chineſe veſſel, to carry his treaſures to Pelew, and deliver them to the king, that he might diſtribute them as he thought

beſt, and thereby ſee what a country the Engliſh had conveyed him to; adding, that the people who carried them ſhould tell the king, that Lee Boo would ſoon ſend him other preſents. He alſo told Captain Wilſon, that if the people faithfully executed their charge, he would (independant of what Abba Thulle would give them) preſent them at their return with one or two beads, as a reward for their fidelity. Happy ſtate of ſimplicity and innocence, whoſe pleaſures can be purchaſed on ſuch eaſy terms, and whoſe felicity ariſes from an ignorance of thoſe objects which diſquiet the human race, and agitate their paſſions! But one grieves to think this ſentiment cannot be indulged, without reflecting how ſoon a knowledge of the world deſtroys the illuſion of this enviable enchantment.

In a few days Captain Wilſon received letters from the ſupercargoes, expreſſing their concern for his misfortunes, and the ſatisfaction they received in his ſafe return, with his ſhip's company, after ſo many perils. Mr. M'Intyre alſo received letters, deſiring him to furniſh them with money, and every thing elſe they might be in want of; and theſe were accompanied by other letters from the commanders of ſeveral of the company's ſhips, kindly offering to accommodate them with a paſſage to England.

Whilſt Lee Boo remained at Macoa, he had frequent opportunities of ſeeing people of different nations; and among the reſt was ſhewn three Engliſh ladies; to whom the New Man, as he was called, gave the preference to any other of the fair ſex he had ſeen.

Having no quadrupeds at Pelew, the two dogs left there were the only kind he had ſeen; therefore the ſheep, goats, and other cattle which he met with whilſt at Macoa, were viewed with wonder. The Newfoundland dog, which had been given to his uncle Arra Kooker, being called Sailor, he applied the word ſailor to every animal that had four legs.

Seeing ſome horſes in a ſtable, he called them Clow Sailor, that is, Great Sailor; but the next day ſeeing a man paſs the houſe on horſeback, he was ſo wonderfully aſtoniſhed, that he wanted every one to go and ſee the ſtrange ſight. He went afterwards to the ſtables where the horſes were; he felt, he ſtroked them, and was inquiſitive to know what their food was, having found, by offering them ſome oranges he had in his pocket, that they would not eat them He was eaſily perſuaded to get on one of their backs; and when he was informed what a noble docile, and uſeful animal it was, he with much earneſtneſs beſought the captain to get one ſent to his uncle Raa Kook, to whom, he ſaid, he was ſure it would be of great ſervice.

They were now waiting for a permit and boats to take them to Canton, when Captain Churchill, of the Walpole, was ſo obliging as to accommodate them with a paſſage to Whampoa. During this paſſage, Lee Boo had ſufficient matter to keep all his faculties awake; the furniture, tables, chairs, lamps, and the upright bulk-heads, with the deck over head, were all ſurpriſing; after his eye had in ſilence run over theſe objects, he whiſpered to Captain Wilſon, that "clow ſhip was houſe." Being at the company's table, at the factory, the veſſels of glaſs, of various ſhapes and ſizes, particularly the glaſs chandeliers, attracted his notice. When, on looking round, he ſurveyed the number of attendants ſtanding behind the gentlemen's chairs, he obſerved to Captain Wilſon, that the king, his father, lived in a manner very different, having only a little fiſh, a yam, or a cocoa-nut, which he eat from off a leaf, and drank out of the ſhell of the nut; and when his meal was finiſhed, wiped his mouth and fingers with a bit of a cocoa-nut huſk; whereas the company preſent eat a bit of one thing, and then a bit of another, the ſervants always ſupplying them with a different plate, and different ſorts of veſſels to drink out of. He

ſeemed from the firſt to reliſh tea; coffee he diſliked the ſmell of, and therefore refuſed it, at the ſame time telling Captain Wilſon, "He would drink it "if he ordered him." On their arrival at Macoa, one of the ſeamen being much intoxicated, Lee Boo expreſſed great concern thinking him very ill, and applied to Mr. Sharp, the ſurgeon, to go and ſee him, being told nothing material ailed him, that it was only the effect of liquor, that common people were apt to indulge in, and that he would ſoon be well, he appeared ſatisfied; but would never after even taſte ſpirits, if any were offered him, ſaying, "It was not drink fit for gentlemen." As to his eating and drinking, he was in both temperate to a degree.

After they had been about five or ſix days at Canton, Mr. Benger, and the men who remained with him at Macoa, accompanied by Mr. M'Intyre, came up in one of the country boats to Canton. The window where Lee Boo was then at breakfaſt, looked towards the water; the moment he got a diſtant view of them, without ſaying a word to the captain, or other perſon, he ſprang from his ſeat, and was at the edge of the river before the boat reached the ſhore; he received them with ſuch expreſſions of affection, as won their warmeſt regard; he ſeemed impatient till he could get them into the houſe, fearing that by ſtaying behind, they had not fared ſo well as himſelf.

Whilſt at Canton, ſeveral gentlemen, who had been at Madagaſcar, and other places, where the throwing of the ſpear is practiſed, and who themſelves were in ſome degree ſkilled in the art, expreſſed a wiſh to ſee Lee Boo perform this exerciſe; propoſing to aim at ſome particular point, they fixed this point to be a gauze cage which hung up in the hall, and had a bird painted in the middle; Lee Boo took up his ſpear with great apparent indifference, and, levelling at the little bird, ſtruck it

through the head, aſtoniſhing all his competitors, who, at the great diſtance from whence they flung, with much difficulty even hit the cage.

Being at the houſe of Mr. Freeman, one of the ſupercargoes, amongſt the things brought in for tea, was a ſugar diſh of blue glaſs, which much ſtruck Lee Boo's fancy. The joy with which he viewed it, induced that gentleman, after tea, to take him into another room, where there were two barrels of the ſame kind of blue glaſs (which held about two quarts each) placed on brackets; his eye was again caught by the ſame alluring colour, he looked at them eagerly, then went away, and returned to them with new delight: the gentleman obſerving the pleaſure they gave him, told him he would make him a preſent of them, and that he ſhould carry them to Pelew. This threw him into ſuch a tranſport of joy, he could ſcarcely contain himſelf; he declared them to be a great treaſure, and that when he returned, his father Abba Thulle, ſhould have them: he wiſhed his relations at Pelew could but ſee them, as he was ſure they would be loſt in aſtoniſhment.

Lee Boo embarked with Captain Wilſon in the Morſe, Captain Joſeph Elliot, who, in the moſt friendly manner accommodated them to England. And, as we have now diſpoſed of, and diſperſed all thoſe who formerly compoſed the complement of the Antelope, I ſhall, for the preſent, leave their reſpected commander purſuing, with our young prince, his voyage to England. Being inclined to hope that the character and conduct of theſe hitherto unknown people, whom I have introduced in the foregoing narrative, have intereſted the reader, I ſhall now give ſome account of the government, cuſtoms, manners, and arts, of the natives of Pelew, as far as I have been able to collect them, from the different reports of the captain, and ſuch of his

officers who have favoured me with their communications.

The Palos, or Pelew Iſlands, are a chain of ſmall iſlands, ſituated between the 5th and 9th degrees of North Latitude, and between 130 and 136 degrees of Eaſt Longitude, from Greenwhich, and lie in a N. E. and S. W. direction

The reader will bear in mind, that the Antelope was not a ſhip particularly ſent out to explore undiſcovered regions, or prepared to inveſtigate the manners of mankind; it had not on board any philoſophers, botaniſts, draughtſmen, or gentlemen experienced in ſuch ſcientific purſuits as might enable them to examine with judgement, objects which preſented themſelves, or trace nature through all her labyrinths. Diſtreſs threw them on theſe iſlands; where, forlorn and melancholy as their lot at firſt appeared, the gloom it caſt over them was ſoon diſpelled, by finding themſelves amongſt an human race of men, who were ſuperior to the wiſh of taking any advantage of their diſtreſs; who had hearts to feel for what our people ſuffered; benevolence to relieve their wants; and generoſity to co-perate with them in every effort to work out their deliverence. The Engliſh poſſeſſed what was, in their eſtimation, of the higheſt value—iron and arms. The Malay wreck had, for the firſt time, thrown in their way a few pieces of the former; the uſe and power of the latter, had only been diſcovered to them by the ill-fortune of our countrymen. Theſe objects, ſo deſirable to them, they might unqueſtionably have poſſeſſed themſelves of, the number of our people, capable of bearing arms, being only twenty-ſeven, the captain and ſurgeon included; but their notions of moral rectitude lay as a barrier againſt the intruſion of ſuch a thought;—renouncing every advantage of power, they approached them only with the ſmiles of benevolence.

As theſe people had but little property to create diſſenſion, and no lawyers to foment animoſity, it is probable that the immutable boundaries of right and wrong were perfectly underſtood, and ſeldom violated; whenever they were, the offending party received the king's cenſure, which expoſed them to general ſhame; a ſentence to uncorrupted minds, far more ſevere than any penal inſtitution. They could not recur to the dubious conſtruction of five hundred laws, vaguely conceived, and worſe underſtood; under the obſcurity of which, in civilized countries, the artful villain too often takes ſhelter, and the injured ſit down more oppreſſed. Happy for them, they were ignorant of that caſuiſtry and refinement which can argue vice into virtue! nor were they acquainted with the laudanum of rhetoric, whoſe property will occaſionally benumb and lay dormant the power of common underſtandings! They had no conception that there exiſted poliſhed nations, where it was infinitely more expenſive to ſue for juſtice, than to ſubmit to fraud and oppreſſion! nations, where men's oaths only, not men's words, were credited! and where there were found wretches who dared attack the properties and lives of their fellow-citizens, by aſſertions of falſehood, whilſt they ſolemnly and impiouſly invoked the God of Heaven to atteſt their truth!—Born the children of nature, and ſecluded from the corruption of the world, her laws were their general guide. Their real wants were few, and they ſaw nothing to excite artificial ones. Every one ſeemed to be occupied with their own humble purſuits; and, as far as our people, in a ſtay of three months with the natives, could decide, appeared to conduct themſelves towards each other with great civility and benevolence; for they never obſerved any wrangling or open paſſion. Even when children were diſputing or fighting, they ſtrongly marked their diſpleaſure, by ſtifling with rebuke their little impetuoſities.

Every part of the iſland of Pelew ſeemed to bear the marks of induſtry and good cultivation. All the iſlands which our people ſaw were well covered with trees of various kinds and ſizes; they had alſo the cabbage tree, and a tree whoſe fruit nearly reſembled an almond.—Yams and cocoa nuts being the chief article of ſuſtenance, were attended to with the utmoſt care; the latter were in large plantations, affording both food and ſhade.—They poſſeſſed plantains and bananas, Seville oranges and lemons; neither of theſe were in any conſiderable quantity; therefore only produced on viſits, or occaſions of more than common ceremony. None of the iſlands the Engliſh viſited had any kind of grain; nor any quadruped whatever, except ſome browniſh grey rats.—This might excite them to admire ſo much the two dogs our people left with them, which unluckily were both males. As to birds, they had plenty of common cocks and hens, which, though not domeſticated, but ran about the woods, yet loved to get near their houſes and plantations; and what will appear ſingular, (conſidering their little variety of food) they had never made any uſe of them, till our people ſaw them, and told the natives they were excellent to eat. Pigeons they had alſo in the woods; when breeding, they took the young from the neſt, and brought them up near their houſes, keeping them on a perch tied by one leg, and feeding them on yams——this bird was accounted a great dainty, and none but thoſe of a certain dignity, permitted to eat thereof. Our people left them two geeſe the only remains of their live ſtock.

They had a variety of fiſh, of very beautiful colours and a variety of ſhapes, particularly one to which the Engliſh gave the name of the unicorn, from a horn growing out of its forehead; alſo ſeveral kinds of ſhell-fiſh, ſuch as the ſea cray fiſh, of the ſame ſort, as in the Mediterranean and other European

coaſts; beſides turtle which the natives boiled, and ſeemed to admire. They poſſeſſed oyſters, muſcles, and a variety of cockles, particularly the Kima cockle, which is deſcribed by Linnæus: this they frequently got by diving, at which the natives were amazingly expert; they would ſometimes dive in ſix or ſeven fathom water, and if the ſhell was very large, two of them would contrive to bring it up between them.—This fiſh they commonly eat raw.

The iſland of Pelew, when viewed from the ſea, exhibited high, rugged land, well covered with wood.—The interior part was in many places mountainous, but the valleys were extenſive and beautiful, ſpreading before the eye many delicious proſpects. The ſoil was in general rich; they had a great deal of graſs, which, having no cattle whatever, to eat down, grew high, but was ſcorched and burnt up by the heat of the ſun. Our people ſaw no river at Pelew; their ſupplies of freſh water being from ſmall ſtreams and ponds, of which there were many.

From the foregoing account of the ſcanty produce of theſe iſlands, it muſt be evident that no luxury reigned in them. To their uſual mode of living, on particular occaſions they added ſome ſweetmeats, which they obtained by the aid of a ſyrup extracted either from the palm-tree, or the ſugar-cane, (which grows ſpontaneous) and with which alſo they made their ſweet drink.

They had no ſalt, nor did they make uſe of ſauce or ſeaſoning in any thing they eat. Their drink was as ſimple as their diet: at their meals, the milk of the cocoa nut was their uſual beverage; they very ſeldom drank water, and indeed ſo very little of any thing, that it was a matter of ſurpriſe to our people, who conſtantly obſerved it; yet on viſits, or occaſional rejoicings, they appeared to reliſh their

ſweet drink, and ſherbet, which latter had only the addition of ſome juice of orange.

They had no method, that was obſerved, of meaſuring time, but by the height of the ſun: they had ſome knowledge of the ſtars, having names for ſeveral of them, which they pointed out to our people.

Every part of the Pelew Iſlands, that the Engliſh viſited, appeared populous, though to what extent of population they could never aſcertain; but probable conjecture might be formed, from Abba Thulle and his allies having ſent out, in the laſt expedition againſt Pelelew, near 4000 men.

Their knives were formed of a piece of the large mother of pearl oyſter-ſhell, ground narrow, and the outward ſide a little poliſhed: the ſort moſt uſed was made of a piece of ſome muſcle-ſhell, or of a ſplit bamboo, which they ſharpen to an edge, and render exceedingly ſerviceable.

Their combs were formed of the orange-tree; the handle and teeth faſhioned from the ſolid wood, and not in ſeparate pieces cloſely connected together, like thoſe brought from moſt of the late diſcovered iſlands.

Their fiſhing-hooks were of tortoiſe ſhell; their twines, their cords, and all their fiſhing nets, were well manufactured, and made from the huſks of the cocoa-nut. Their hatchets were made of the ſtrongeſt part of the large Kima cockle, ground to a ſharp edge; yet, uncouth as they might appear to our people, it was a matter of ſurprize, to obſerve in how little time the natives were able to fell a tree with them, though not without breaking ſeveral.

The things which I have ſpoken of were ſuch as their natural wants required; when thoſe had been provided againſt, ingenuity thereto ſuperadded a few articles, which might in theſe iſlands be deemed

luxuries. The ſhell of the tortoiſe was there remarkably beautiful, and the natives of Pelew had diſcovered the art of moulding it into little trays or diſhes, and into ſpoons, with which, on particular occaſions, they eat their fiſh and yams. Some of the great ladies had alſo bracelets of the ſame manufacture, and ear-rings inlaid with ſhells.

The principal weapons uſed in their battles, were ſpears; they were commonly about twelve feet long formed of the bamboo, with the pointed end made of ſome wood exceedingly hard; they were barbed ſo that, having once entered the body, it was difficult to draw them out without lacerating the fleſh, and widening to a great degree the wound.

Another war weapon was the dart and ſling: The ſling was a piece of wood about two feet in length, with a notch made in it, wherein the head of the dart was fixed. The dart was of bamboo, pointed with an extreme hard and heavy kind of wood, till the elaſticity of the bamboo had formed ſuch a curve as experience told them would reach the object aimed at: it is inconceivable with what adroitneſs they directed this weapon, or the diſtance at which it would prove mortal. They had other ſpears about eighteen feet long, which were only uſed when they came to cloſe quarters with the enemy.

Marriages among them were regarded as ſacred and inviolable. One of our people, endeavouring to make himſelf agreeable to a lady belonging to one of the rupacks, by what we ſhould term a marked aſſiduity; Arra Kooker with the greateſt civility, gave him to underſtand it was not right to do ſo.

Their funerals are ſad offices left to the tenderneſs of the weaker ſex: the men only aſſemble round the body, before it is carried to the grave, where they preſerve a ſolemn ſilence; their minds, from principles of fortitude or philoſophy, being armed to meet the events of mortality with manly ſub-

miſſion, diveſted from the external teſtimony of human weakneſs.

They had places appointed to ſepulchre. Their graves were made as ours are in country churchyards; having the mould raiſed up in a ridge, over where the body was depoſited. Some had ſtones raiſed above them, with a flat one laid horizontally over and ſurrounded by a kind of hurdle-work, to prevent any one from treding over them.

As to religion, there are few people, I believe, among the race of men, whom navigation hath brought to our knowledge, who have not ſhewn, in ſome inſtance or other, a ſenſe of, however mixed with idolatry or ſuperſtition; and yet our people, during their continuance with the natives of Pelew, never ſaw any particular ceremonies, or obſerved any thing that had the appearance of public worſhip. Independant of external ceremony, there may be ſuch a thing as the religion of the heart, by which the mind may, in awful ſilence, be turned to contemplate the GOD OF NATURE; and though unbleſſed by thoſe lights which have pointed to the Chriſtian world an unerring path to happineſs and peace, yet they might, from the light of reaſon only, have diſcovered the efficacy of virtue, and the temporal advantages ariſing from moral rectitude. The reader will by this time, have met with ſufficient occurrences to convince him, that the inhabitants of theſe new diſcovered regions had a fixed and rooted ſenſe of the great moral duties.

As Raa Kook, and others of the natives, were two or three times preſent when Captain Wilſon, on a Sunday evening, aſſembled his people to read prayers to them, they expreſſed no ſurpriſe at what was doing, but appeared clearly to underſtand that it was the mode in which the Engliſh addreſſed that inviſible God whom they looked up to for protection; and, however different their notions might be, they

attended the Engliſh on theſe occaſions with great reſpect, ſeeming deſirous to join it, and conſtantly preſerving the moſt profound ſilence; the General never allowing the natives to ſpeak a ſingle word, and refuſing even to receive a meſſage from the king, which arrived at the tents during divine ſervice. The king alſo, when he took leave of his ſon, ſaid a few words, which, by the ſolemnity they were delivered, and the reſpectful manner in which Lee Boo received them induced all our countrymen to conceive it was a kind of bleſſing.

I muſt, in this place, add a circumſtance that paſſed in converſation with Captain Wilſon and Lee Boo, after he had been ſome time in England; the former telling him, that ſaying prayers at church was to make men good, that when they died, and were buried, they might live again above (pointing to the ſky;) Lee Boo, with great earneſtneſs, replied All ſame Pelew—Bad men ſtay in earth—good men go into ſky—become very beautiful, (holding his hand in the air, and giving a fluttering motion to his fingers.) This ſurely conveyed a ſtrong idea, that they believed the ſpirit exiſted when the body was no more.

After combining all theſe facts, and uniting them with the moral characters of the people, the reader is left in a ſituation to judge for himſelf (independent of Lee Boo's declaration) whether it is probable that their lives could be conducted with that decency we have ſeen, and their minds trained to ſo ſtrong a ſenſe of juſtice, propriety, and delicacy, without having ſome guiding principle of religion. The conduct of theſe people towards the Engliſh was, from firſt to laſt, uniformly courteous and attentive, accompanied with a politeneſs that ſurpriſed thoſe on whom it was beſtowed. Their liberality to the Engliſh at their departure, when individuals poured in all the beſt they had to give, and that of articles too of which they had far from plenty themſelves, ſtrong-

ly demonſtrated that theſe teſtimonies of friendſhip were the effuſion of hearts that glowed with the flame of philanthropy ; and when our countrymen, from want of ſtowage, were compelled to refuſe the further marks of kindneſs which were offered them, the entreating eyes and ſupplicating geſtures with which they ſolicited their acceptance of what they had brought, moſt forcibly expreſſed how much their minds were wounded, to think they had not arrived early enough to have their little tributes of affection received.

Our people had alſo many occaſions to obſerve, this ſpirit of urbanity operated in all the intercourſe the natives had among themſelves. The attention and tenderneſs ſhewn to the women was remarkable, and the deportment of the men to each other, mild and affable ; inſomuch that, in various ſcenes of which they were ſpectators during their ſtay on theſe iſlands, the Engliſh never ſaw any thing that had the appearance of conteſt or paſſion, every one ſeemed to attend to his own concerns, without interfering with the buſineſs of their neighbour. Every man, by his labour, gained his daily ſuſtenance ; neceſſity impoſing this exertion, no idle or indolent people were ſeen, not even among thoſe whom ſuperior rank might have exempted ; on the contrary, theſe excited their inferiors to toil and activity by their own examples. The king himſelf was the beſt maker of hatchets in the iſland, and was uſually at work whenever diſengaged from matters of importance. Even the women ſhared in the common toil ; they laboured in the plantations of yams, and they manufactured the mats and baſkets, as well as attended to their domeſtic concerns. In ſuch ſcenes of patient induſtry, the years of fleeting life paſſed on ; and the cheerful diſpoſition of the natives fully authoriſed our people to ſuppoſe, that there were few hours of it either irkſome or oppreſſive. They were ſtrangers to thoſe paſſions which ambition ex-

cites—to thoſe cares which affluence awakens. Their exiſtence appeared to glide along like a ſmooth, undiſturbed ſtream; and when the natural occurences of life ruffled the ſurface, they poſſeſſed a ſufficient portion of fortitude to recover ſoon its wonted calm. Their happineſs ſeemed to be ſecured to them on the firmeſt baſis; for the little which providence ſpread before them, they enjoyed with a contented cheerfulneſs; nor were their boſoms habituated to cheriſh wiſhes which they had not the power of gratifying. And it will not ſurely be denied, that, in civilized nations, the error of a contrary conduct exhibits, among the inactive, many melancholy, repining countenances, which prompts more daring and uncontroled ſpirits to aim at compaſſing their views by injuſtice, or rapine, and to break down the ſacred barrier of ſociety.

I am well aware, that in the expedition againſt Pelelew, the deſtroying the houſes and plantations of the little iſland belonging to it, which the natives through fear, had abandoned, as well as the killing thoſe whom they captured in battle, are both of them circumſtances which will appear to militate againſt that humanity which, throughout this work, I have attributed to the people of Pelew. As to their putting their priſoners to death, Raa Kook, on being cenſured for it by Captain Wilſon, ſaid, "It had not been always ſo;" and, in aſſigning the reaſons for being compelled to do it, ſeemed to ſhelter the proceeding under the plea of——political neceſſity.

It may poſſibly be ſaid, they were addicted to pilfering, when opportunity offered; a cenſure which many, I believe, have thought has been too ſeverely paſſed on the poor inhabitants of the Southern Ocean; but in the Pelew Iſlands, it was never done but by thoſe of the loweſt claſs. Whenever complaint was made of any thing being taken clandeſtinely away, the king, as well as his chiefs, con-

ſidered it as a breach of hoſpitality, nor could their indignant ſpirits reſt, till the article purloined was ſearched for, found, and reſtored.

In the name of humanity, then, let us judge with leſs rigour our fellow-creatures; and, ſhould any one be diſpoſed, for ſuch failings, to cenſure the benevolent inhabitants of Pelew, that cenſure I truſt, for the ſake of juſtice, will never be paſſed on them, by thoſe who live in civilized and enlightened nations—for ſuch muſt be too well convinced of the inefficacy of the beſt digeſted laws, and the inability of their own internal police, to reſtrain the vices of mankind, by obſerving, that all which prudence can revolve, wiſdom plan, or power enforce, is frequently unable to protect their property by night, or their perſons, at all times, even under meridian ſuns.—They will reflect, that every bolt and bar is a ſatire on ſociety; and painfully recollect, that it is not the daring plunderer alone they have to guard againſt; they are aſſailable under the ſmile of diſſembled friendſhip, by which the generous and the confiding are too often betrayed into a ſituation beyond the ſhelter of any protecting law; a wound which, perhaps, more than any other, hath tortured the feelings of ſenſibility!

Waiting, therefore, that long expected æra, when a general and lively ſenſe of religion ſhall bring us to a more confirmed practice of real virtue, it becomes us to view with charity thoſe errors in others, which we have not yet been able to correct in ourſelves.

If the enlightened ſons of Europe, enjoying the full blaze of advantages unknown in leſs favoured regions, have hitherto made ſo ſlow an advance towards moral perfection, they are ſurely paſſing the ſevereſt cenſure on themſelves, if they expect to find it, in a happier manner, approached by the dark and unfriendly children of the Southern World!

I ſhall cloſe this work with ſuch anecdotes of Prince Lee Boo, as I have received from ſome of my particular friends who often ſaw him, added to thoſe I have myſelf been witneſs of:—inſignificant as the amount of the whole may be, yet I think them worth recording. In the ſlight acquaintance made with him at Macoa and Canton, he hath, I truſt, intereſted the reader by that ingenious openneſs, which was the reſult of native ſimplicity; he is there ſeen in the character of a new born creature, juſt entering a world he was quite a ſtranger to, darting his bewildered eyes on every ſide, and ſolicited by ſuch a variety of novelty, that he knew not where to fix his attention. However beautiful, however ſtupendous the objects may be which ſurround us, when they have been within our view through all the progreſſive advance of early years, they inſenſibly ceaſe to engage our notice.—The peaſant, bred at the foot of Ætna or the Andes, ſees with indifference, thoſe wonderful works of God, which ſeduce ſo frequently from diſtant countries the inquiſitive traveller.——The caſe of Lee Boo was directly otherwiſe; if I may be allowed the expreſſion, he was born at the ſtate of manhood, with his mind in full vigour, and inſtantly found himſelf encompaſſed by ſcenes not only totally new, but totally beyond his conceptions—ſcenes which to him were ſo bordering on enchantment, they were ſufficient to have half overſet the inexperienced faculties of our young traveller, had he not conſtantly had his Mentor at his elbow to clear up all his difficulties, point his judgment properly, and give him a juſt explanation of whatever became an object of his notice and ſurpriſe.

We left them together, as the reader will recollect, on board the Morſe Indiaman, purſuing their paſſage to Europe; he was treated with much kindneſs and attention by the commander, Captain Elliot, and Lee Boo was ſo courteous and pleaſant during the

whole voyage, that every one was ready to render him all the ſervice in their power. He was extremely deſirous of knowing the name and country of every ſhip they met at ſea, and would repeat what he was told, over and over, till he had fixed it well in his memory; and, as each inquiry was gratified he made a knot on his line; theſe knots he was obliged to repeat over every day to refreſh his memory. When the officers in the Morſe, with whom only he aſſociated, ſaw him thus buſied, they uſed to ſay he was reading his journal. He frequently aſked after all the people of the Oroolong, who had gone aboard different ſhips at China, particularly after the captain's ſon, and Mr. Sharp.

On arriving at St. Helena, he was taken to ſee a ſchool, and expreſſed a wiſh that he could learn as the boys did, feeling his own deficiency in knowledge.

He deſired to ride on horſeback into the country, which he was gratified in; he ſat well, and galloped, ſhewed no fear of falling, and appeared highly pleaſed with the novelty and pleaſure of the exerciſe.

Viſiting the company's garden, he noticed ſome ſhady walks formed with bamboos arching over-head on lattice-work. He was ſtruck with the refreſhing coolneſs they afforded, and obſerved, that his own countrymen were ignorant of the advantages they might enjoy, ſaying, that on this iſland they had but little wood, yet applied it to a good purpoſe; that at Pelew they had great abundance, and knew not how to uſe it.——Such were the dawnings of a mind that felt its own darkneſs, and had the good ſenſe to catch at every ray of light that might lead him forward to information and improvement!

When the Morſe arrived at the Iſle of Wight, Captain Wilſon, his brother, the prince, with ſeveral other paſſengers, quitted her, and coming in a boat

between the Needles, arrived ſafe at Portſmouth, the 14th of July, 1784. The officer charged with the diſpatches, ſet off immediately for London; and Capt. Wilſon, impatient to ſee his family, accompanied him, leaving his young traveller in the care of his brother, to follow him by a coach, which was to ſet off in the evening.

Though part of his journey had paſſed during the night, yet, with returning day, his eyes had full employment on every ſide. He deſcribed all the circumſtances of his journey; ſaid it was very pleaſant—that he had been put into a little houſe, which was run away with by horſes—that he ſlept, but ſtill was going on; and whilſt he went one way, the fields, houſes and trees all went another—every thing from the quickneſs of travelling, appearing to him to be in motion.

At the hour of reſt, he was ſhewn by Mr. M. Wilſon up to his chamber, where, for the firſt time, he ſaw a four-poſt bed; he could ſcarce conceive what it meant; he jumped in and jumped out again; felt, and pulled aſide the curtains got into bed, and then got out a ſecond time, to admire its exterior for At length, becoming acquainted with its uſe and convenience, he laid himſelf down to ſleep, ſaying, that in England there was a houſe for every thing.

It was not, I believe, more than a week after his arrival, when I was invited, by my late valued friend Robert Roſhleigh, Eſq. to dinner, where Captain Wilſon, and his young charge, were expected. Lee Boo then poſſeſſed but very little Engliſh, yet, between words and actions, made himſelf tolerably underſtood, and ſeemed to comprehend the greater part of what was ſaid to him, eſpecially, having the captain by him to explain whatever he did not clearly comprehend. He was dreſt as an Engliſhman, excepting that he wore his hair in the faſhion of his country; appeared to be between nineteen and twenty years of age, was of a middling ſtature, and had

a countenance ſo ſtrongly marked with ſenſibility and good-humour, that it inſtantly prejudiced every one in his favour; and this countenance was enlivened by eyes ſo quick and intelligent, that they might really be ſaid to announce his thoughts and conceptions without the aid of language.

I went to Rotherhithe, a few days after, to ſee Captain Wilſon; Lee Boo was reading at a window, he recollected me inſtantly, and flew with eagerneſs to the door to meet me, looked on me as a friend, appearing to be happy whenever we met together. In this viſit I had a good deal of converſation with him; he ſeemed to be pleaſed with every thing about him. All fine country, fine ſtreet, fine coach, and houſe upon houſe up to ſky, putting alternately one hand above another.

After he had been a while ſettled, and a little habituated to the Engliſh manners, he was ſent every day to an academy at Rotherhithe, to be inſtructed in reading and writing, which he was himſelf eager to attain, and moſt aſſiduous in learning; his whole deportment, whilſt there, was ſo engaging, that it not only gained him the eſteem of the gentlemen under whoſe tuition he was placed, but alſo the affection of his young companions. When he returned to the Captain's houſe, he amuſed the whole family by his vivacity; ſometimes ſaying, he would have a ſchool of his own when he returned to Pelew, and ſhould be thought very wiſe when he taught the people their letters.

He always addreſſed Mr. Wilſon by the appellation of Captain; but never would call Mrs. Wilſon (to whom he behaved with the warmeſt affection) by any other name than that of Mother, looking on that as a mark of the greateſt reſpect. Being often told he ſhould ſay Mrs. Wilſon, his conſtant reply was, No, no—Mother, Mother.

Captain Wilſon, when invited to dine with his friends, was generally accompanied by Lee Boo; on

which occaſions, there was as much eaſe and politeneſs in his behaviour, as if he had been always accuſtomed to genteel company. He adapted himſelf very readily to whatever he ſaw were the habits of the country, and fully confirmed me in an opinion which I have ever entertained, that natural good manners, are the natural reſult of natural good ſenſe.

Lee Boo's temper was very mild and compaſſionate, diſcovering, in various inſtances, that he had brought from his father's territories that ſpirit of philanthropy, which we have ſeen reigning there; yet he at all times governed it by diſcretion and judgment. If he ſaw the young aſk relief, he would rebuke them, by ſaying, it was a ſhame to beg when they were able to work, but the entreaties of old age he could never withſtand, ſaying, muſt give poor old man—old man not able to work.

Indeed, there was ſo much gentleneſs, and ſo much gratitude lodged at Lee Boo's heart, that not only the captain, but every part of his family, viewed him with the warmeſt ſentiments of diſintereſted affection. Mr. H. Wilſon, the captain's ſon, who was but a few years younger than Lee Boo, had, during the voyage to, and ſtay in China, become mutually attached to each other; and now meeting under the father's roof, their friendſhip was ſtill more cemented. The young prince looked on him as a brother, and, in his leiſure hours from the academy, was happy to find in him a companion to converſe with, to exerciſe the throwing of the ſpear, or partake in any innocent recreation.

Captain Wilſon being often incommoded by ſevere head-aches, which were ſometimes relieved by lying on the bed; on theſe occaſions the feelings of Lee Boo were ever alarmed. He appeared always unhappy, would creep up ſoftly to his protector's chamber, and ſit ſilent by his bedſide for a long time together, without moving, peeping gently from time to

time between the curtains, to ſee if he ſlept, or lay eaſy.

As the anecdotes of this ſingular youth are but ſcanty, being all unfortunately limited to a very ſhort period, I would unwillingly in this place withhold one, where his own heart deſcribed itſelf. The captain, having been all the morning in London, after dinner, aſked his ſon if he had been at a particular place, which he had charged him to call at, on urgent buſineſs. The fact was, the two young friends had been amuſing themſelves with throwing the ſpear, and the captain's buſineſs totally forgot. Captain Wilſon was hurt at the neglect, and told his ſon it was very idle and careleſs; this being ſpoken in an impatient tone, which Lee Boo conceiving to be a mark of anger, ſlipped unobſerved out of the parlour. The matter was inſtantly forgot, and ſomething elſe talked of, when Lee Boo was miſſed, and H. Wilſon was ſent to look after him: who found him in a back room quite dejected, and deſired him to return to the family. Lee Boo took his young friend by the hand, and, on entering the parlour, went up to the captain, laid hold of his hand, and joined it with that of his ſon, preſſing them together, he dropped over both, thoſe tears of ſenſibility, which his affectionate heart could not on the occaſion ſuppreſs.

Captain Wilſon and the young prince dining with me early after his arrival, I was aſking how he was affected by painting? On mentioning the ſubject, Dr. Carmichael Smyth, whom I had requeſted to meet this ſtranger, wiſhed me to bring a miniature of myſelf, that we might all thereby obſerve if it ſtruck him; he took it in his hand, and inſtantly darting his eyes towards me, called out, Miſſer Keate—very nice, very good. The captain then aſked him, if he underſtood what it ſignified? He replied, Lee Boo underſtand well—that Miſſer Keate die—this Miſſer Keate live. A whole volume on the utility

and intent of portrait-painting could not have better defined the art than this little ſentence.

Mrs. Wilſon deſiring Lee Boo, who was on the oppoſite ſide of the table, to ſend her ſome cherries, perceiving that he was going to take them up with his fingers, jocoſely noticed it to him, he inſtantly reſorted to a ſpoon; but, ſenſible that he had diſcovered a little unpoliteneſs, his countenance was in a moment ſuffuſed with a bluſh, that viſibly forced itſelf through his dark complection.

A lady, who was of the party, being incommoded by the violent heat of the day, was nearly fainting, and obliged to leave the room; Lee Boo ſeemed much diſtreſſed at the accident, and ſeeing her appear again when ſummoned to tea, his inquiries and particular attention to her, ſtrongly marked his tenderneſs as it did his good-breeding.

He was fond of riding in a coach beyond any other conveyance, becauſe, he ſaid, people could be carried where they wanted to go, and at the ſame time ſit and converſe together. He ſeemed particularly pleaſed at going to church, and, though he could not comprehend the ſervice, yet he perfectly underſtood the intent of it, and always behaved there with remarkable propriety and attention.

I went to ſee him the morning after Lunardi's firſt aſcent in the balloon, not doubting but that I ſhould have found him to the greateſt degree aſtoniſhed at an exhibition which had excited ſo much curioſity even among ourſelves; but to my great ſurpriſe, it did not appear to have engaged him in the leaſt. He ſaid, "He thought it a very fooliſh thing to ride in the air like a bird, when a man could travel ſo much more pleaſantly on horſeback or in a coach".

Whenever he had opportunities of ſeeing gardens, he was an attentive obſerver of the plants and fruit-trees, would aſk many queſtions about them, and ſay, when he returned home, he would take ſeeds of ſuch as would live and flouriſh in Pelew; and appeared in

viewing moſt objects to conſider how far they might be rendered uſeful to his own country.

He was now proceeding with haſty ſtrides in gaining the Engliſh language, and advancing ſo rapidly with his pen, that he would probably in a ſhort time have written a very fine hand, when he was overtaken by that very diſeaſe, which ſo much caution had been uſed to guard againſt—the ſmall-pox. On the 16th of December he felt himſelf much indiſpoſed, and in a day or two after, an eruption appeared all over him. Captain Wilſon called to inform me of his uneaſineſs, and was then going to Dr. Carmichael Smyth, to requeſt he would come and ſee him, apprehending that he might be dangerouſly ill.

Dr. Smyth told the family that there was not a doubt with reſpect to the diſeaſe, and was ſorry to add, that the appearances were ſuch as almoſt totally precluded the hope of a favorable termination; but that he had ordered whatever the preſent moment required.

When I went the ſecond day, I found Mr. Sharp there, (a gentleman often mentioned in the foregoing narrative) who, hearing of his young friend's illneſs, had come to aſſiſt Captain Wilſon, nor ever ſtirred from the houſe, till poor Lee Boo had yielded to his fate.

The captain having never had the ſmall-pox, was now precluded going into Lee Boo's room, who, informed of the cauſe, acquieſced in being deprived of ſeeing him ſtill continuing to be full of inquiries after his health, fearing he might catch the diſeaſe; but though Captain Wilſon complied with the requeſt of his family in not going into the chamber, yet he never abſented himſelf from the houſe; and Mr. Sharp conſtantly took care that every direction was duly attended to, and from him I received the account of our unfortunate young ſtranger during his illneſs, which he bore with great firmneſs of mind, never

refuſing to take any thing that was ordered for him, when told that Dr. Smyth, to whoſe opinion he paid the greateſt deference, deſired it.—Mrs. Wilſon happening to have ſome indiſpoſition at this time, which confined her to her bed, Lee Boo, on hearing of it, became impatient, ſaying, What, Mother ill! Lee Boo get up to ſee her; which he did, and would go to her apartment, to be ſatisfied how ſhe really was.

On the Thurſday before his death, walking acroſs the room, he looked at himſelf in the glaſs, (his face being then much ſwelled and disfigured) he ſhook his head, and turned away, as if diſguſted at his own appearance, and told Mr. Sharp, that his father and mother much grieve, for they knew he was very ſick; this he repeated ſeveral times. At night, growing worſe, he appeared to think himſelf in danger; he took Mr. Sharp by the hand, and, fixing his eyes ſtedfaſtly on him, with earneſtneſs ſaid, good friend, when you go to Pelew, tell Abba Thulle that Lee Boo take much drink to make ſmall-pox go away, but he die;—that captain and mother (meaning Mrs. Wilſon) very kind—all Engliſh very good men; —was much ſorry he could not ſpeak to the king the number of fine things the Engliſh had got. Then he reckoned what had been given him as preſents, which he wiſhed Mr. Sharp would diſtribute, when he went back, among the chiefs; and requeſted that particular care might be taken of the blue glaſs barrels on pedeſtals, which he directed ſhould be given to the king.

Whatever he felt, his ſpirit was above complaining; and Mrs. Wilſon's chamber being adjoining to his own, he often called out to enquire if ſhe was better, always adding, leſt ſhe might ſuffer any inquietude on his account, Lee Boo do well mother. The ſmall-pox, which had been out eight or nine days, not riſing, he began to feel himſelf ſink, and told Mr. Sharp, He was going away. His mind, however, remained perfectly clear and calm to the

laſt, though what he ſuffered in the latter part of his exiſtence, was ſevere indeed; the ſtrength of his conſtitution ſtruggled long and hard againſt the venom of his diſtemper, till exhauſted nature yielded in the conteſt.

I cannot give an account of this melancholy event ſo well as by tranſcribing Dr. Smyth's letter, by which it was conveyed to me:

"Monday, Dec. 27. 1784.

"Dear Sir,

"It is an unpleaſant taſk for me to be the herald of bad news; yet, according to my promiſe, I muſt inform you of the fate of poor Lee Boo, who died this morning without a groan, the vigour of his mind and body reſiſting to the very laſt. He expreſſed all his feelings to me, in the moſt forcible and pathetic manner, put my hand upon his heart, leaned his head on my arm, and explained his uneaſineſs in breathing; but when I was gone, he complained no more; ſhewing that he complained with a view to be relieved, not to be pitied. In ſhort, living or dying, he has given me a leſſon which I ſhall never forget; and ſurely, for patience and fortitude, he was an example worthy the imitation of a Stoic!"

"When I called this morning, the maid-ſervant was in tears, and every perſon in the family wore the face of grief; poor Lee Boo's affectionate temper made every one look upon him as a brother or a child.—Compliments to the ladies, and to Mr. Watſon; who, I make no doubt, will all join in regretting the unexpected end of our poor prince. From you, my friend, ſomething more will be expected; and though you cannot bring him back to life, you are called upon, from his very particular attachment to you, not to let the memory of ſo much virtue paſs away unrecorded.

"But I am interrupted in these melancholy reflections, and have only time to assure you of—what will never pass away but with myself—the sincere friendship of,

Your affectionate, &c.

JAMES CARMICH. SMYTH."

Among the little property which he left behind, beside what he had particularly requested Mr. Sharp to convey to his father and friends, there were found the stones or seeds of most of the fruits he had tasted in England, carefully and separately put up. And when one considers that his stay with us was but five months and twelve days, we find, that in the midst of the wild field of novelty that encompassed him, he had not been neglectful of that which, before his departure from Pelew, had been probably pointed out to him as a principal matter of attention.

From these trifling anecdotes of this amiable youth, cut off in the moment that his character began to blossom, what hopes might not have been entertained of the future fruit such a plant would have produced! He had both ardour and talents for improvement, and every gentle quality of the heart to make him be loved; so that, as far as the dim sight of mortals is permitted to penetrate, he might, had his days been lengthened, have carried back to his own country, not the vices of a new world, but those solid advantages which his own good sense would have suggested, as likely to become most useful to it.

The evening before the Oroolong sailed, the king asked Captain Wilson how long it might be before his return to Pelew? And being told, that it would probably be about thirty moons, or might chance to extend to six more, Abba Thulle drew from his basket a piece of line; and, after making thirty knots on it, a little distance from each other, left a long

ſpace, and then adding ſix others, carefully put it up.

As the ſlow but ſure ſteps of time have been moving onward, the reader's imagination will figure the anxious parent reſorting to this cheriſhed remembrancer, and with joy untying the earlier records of each elapſing period; as he ſees him advancing on his line, he will conceive that joy redoubled; and, when nearly approaching to the thirtieth knot, almoſt accuſing the planet of the night for paſſing ſo tardily away.

When verging towards the termination of his lateſt reckoning, he will then picture his mind glowing with paternal affection, occaſionally alarmed by doubt, yet ſtill buoyed up by hope; he will fancy him pacing inquiſitively the ſea-ſhore, and often commanding his people to aſcend every rocky height, and glance their eyes along the level line of the horizon which bounds the ſurrounding ocean, to ſee if haply it might not in ſome part be broken by the diſtant appearance of a returning ſail.

Laſtly, he will view the good Abba Thulle, wearied out by that expectation, which ſo many returning moons, ſince his reckoning ceaſed, have by this time taught him he had nouriſhed in vain. But the reader will bring him back to his remembrance, as armed with that unſhaken fortitude that was equal to the trials of varying life. He will not in him, as in leſs manly ſpirits, ſee the paſſions ruſhing into oppoſite extremes—hope turned to deſpair—affection converted to hatred.—No,—after ſome allowance for their natural fermention, he will ſuppoſe them all ſubſiding into the calm of reſignation!

END OF VOLUME VII.

PRINTED BY JOHN THOMPSON.

CONTENTS OF VOLUME VII.

	Page
Miſſon's Travels through Germany and Italy,	1
Addiſon's Travels through Italy and Swiſſerland,	159
Stevens's Travels through France,	254
Travels through the moſt Northern Parts of Europe,	276
Travels of Monſieur Maupertuis,	341
A Deſcription of Spain and Portugal,	359
A Deſcription of Sweden,	388
An Account of the Pelew Iſlands.	403

Page

The Doge's Palace at Venice, - - - 50

Trajan's Pillar and Titus's amphitheatre at Verona, - - - - - - - - - - 103

Virgil's Tomb, - - - - - - - - - - 196

View of Paris from the Pont Neuf, - - - 259

Manner of travelling in Sledges. - - - - 294

View of the Escurial. - - - - - - - - 364